The Apostolic Fathers: I. Clement. II. Clement. Ignatius. ...

Clement I (Pope.), Saint Ignatius (Bishop of ...)
THE
WEBSTER COLLECTION
OF
SOCIAL
ANTHROPOLOGY

Homo sum, humani nihil a me alienum puto

ESTABLISHED BY

HUTTON WEBSTER
CLASS OF 1896

WINIFRED FRY WEBSTER
CLASS OF 1898
THE LOEB CLASSICAL LIBRARY

EDITED BY

THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

I
First published September 1912
Reprinted July 1914 and December 1919
## CONTENTS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Title</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>I CLEMENT</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II CLEMENT</td>
<td>123</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IGNATIUS</td>
<td>165</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>POLYCARP</td>
<td>279</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DIDACHE</td>
<td>303</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BARNABAS</td>
<td>335</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
INTRODUCTION

The name of "Apostolic Fathers" is so firmly established by usage that it will certainly never be abandoned; but it is not altogether a satisfactory title for the collection of writings to which it is given. It means that the writers in question may be supposed to have had personal knowledge of some of the Apostles, but not actually to have belonged to their number. Thus, for instance, Clement and Hermas are reckoned as disciples of St. Paul, and Polycarp as a disciple of St. John. It is not, however, always possible to maintain this view: Barnabas, to whom one of these writings is ascribed, was not merely a disciple of the Apostles, but belonged to their actual number, and the Didache claims in its title to belong to the circle of "the Twelve." It should also be noted that the title does not represent any ancient tradition: there are no traces of any early collection of "Apostolic Fathers," and each of them has a separate literary history.

There is very little important difference in the text of any of the more recent editions; but various
INTRODUCTION

discoveries of new MSS. and versions enable the text to be improved in detail from time to time. This is especially the case with I. Clement and Hermas.

For the purposes of the present publication the text has been revised, but it has not been possible to give critical notes unless the evidence was so balanced that more than one reading was capable of defence.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

THE FIRST EPISTLE OF CLEMENT
TO THE CORINTHIANS
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

THE FIRST EPISTLE OF CLEMENT TO THE CORINTHIANS

The writing which has always been known by this name is clearly, from internal evidence, a letter sent by the church of Rome to the church of Corinth in consequence of trouble in the latter community which had led to the deposition of certain Presbyters. The church of Rome writes protesting against this deposition, and the partizanship which has caused it.

The actual name of the writer is not mentioned in the letter itself: indeed, it clearly claims to be not the letter of a single person but of a church. Tradition, however, has always ascribed it to Clement, who was, according to the early episcopal lists,\(^{1}\) the third or fourth bishop of Rome during the last decades of the first century. There is no reason for rejecting this tradition, for though it is not supported by any corroborative evidence in its favour there is nothing whatever against it.

Nothing certain is known of Clement; but from the amount of pseudepigraphic literature attributed to him it is probable that he was a famous man in his own time. Tradition has naturally identified him with the Clement who is mentioned in Philippians iv. 3.

\(^{1}\) See Harnack, *Chronologie*, i. pp. 70–230.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

A Clement is also mentioned in the Shepherd of Hermas, Vis. ii. 4, 3, in which it is stated that it was his duty to write to other churches. This certainly points to a Clement in Rome exercising the same functions as the writer of I. Clement; but Hermas is probably somewhat later than I. Clement, and the reference may be merely a literary device based on knowledge of the earlier book.

More complicated and more interesting are suggestions that Clement may be identified or at least connected with Titus Flavius Clemens, a distinguished Roman of the imperial Flavian family. This Titus Flavius Clemens was in 95 A.D. accused of treason or impiety (ἀθεότης) by Domitian, his cousin, owing, according to Dio Cassius, to his Jewish proclivities. He was put to death and his wife, Domitilla, was banished. There is no proof that he was really a Christian, but one of the oldest catacombs in Rome is supposed to have belonged to Domitilla, and certainly was connected with this family. It is not probable that T. Flavius Clemens was the writer of I. Clement, but it is an attractive and not improbable hypothesis that a slave or freedman of the Flavian family had the name of Clemens, and held a high position in the Christian community at Rome.

The date of I. Clement is fixed by the following considerations. It appears from chapter 5 to be later than the persecution in the time of Nero, and from chapters 42–44 it is clear that the age of the apostles is regarded as past. It can therefore scarcely be older than 75–80 A.D. On the other hand chapter 44 speaks of presbyters who were appointed by the apostles and were still alive, and there is no trace of any of the controversies or persecutions of the second
I. CLEMENT

century. It is therefore probably not much later than 100 A.D. If it be assumed that chapter 1, which speaks of trouble and perhaps of persecution, refers to the time of Domitian, it can probably be dated as c. 96 A.D.; but we know very little about the alleged persecution in the time of Domitian, and it would not be prudent to decide that the epistle cannot be another ten or fifteen years later. It is safest to say that it must be dated between 75 and 110 A.D.; but within these limits there is a general agreement among critics to regard as most probable the last decade of the first century.

The evidence for the text of the epistle is as follows:—

The *Codex Alexandrinus*, a Greek uncial of the fifth century in the British Museum, contains the whole text with the exception of one page. It can be consulted in the photographic edition of the whole codex published by the Trustees of the British Museum.

The *Codex Constantinopolitanus*, a Greek minuscule written by Leo the Notary in 1056 A.D. and discovered by Bryennius in Constantinople in 1875; it also contains the second epistle of Clement, the epistle of Barnabas, the Didache, and the interpolated text (see pp. 167 ff.) of the epistles of Ignatius. A photographic edition of the text is given in Lightfoot's edition of Clement.

The Syriac version, extant in only one MS. written in 1169 A.D. and now in the Library of Cambridge University (MS. add. 1700); the date of this version is unknown, but it is probably not early, and may perhaps best be placed in the eighth century. A collation is given in Lightfoot's edition, and the text
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

has been published in full by R. H. Kennett (who took up the material of the late Prof. Bensley) in *The Epistles of St. Clement to the Corinthians in Syriac*, London, 1899.

The Latin version, also extant in only one MS which formerly belonged to the Monastery of Florennes, and is now in the Seminary at Namur. The MS. was probably written in the eleventh century, but the version which it represents is extremely ancient. It seems to have been used by Lactantius, and may perhaps be best regarded as a translation of the late second or early third century made in Rome. The text was published in 1894 by Dom Morin in *Anecdota Maredsolana* vol. 2 as *S. Clementis Romani ad Corinthios versio latina antiquissima*.

The Coptic version is extant in two MSS., neither complete, in the Akhmimic dialect. The older and better preserved is MS. orient, fol. 3065 in the Königliche Bibliothek in Berlin. This is a beautiful Papyrus of the fourth century from the famous ‘White monastery’ of Shenute. It was published in 1908 by C. Schmidt in *Texte und Untersuchungen*, xxxii. 1 as *Der erste Clemensbrief in altkoptischer Übersetzung*. The later and more fragmentary MS. is in Strassburg and was published in 1910 by F. Rösch as *Bruchstücke des I. Clemensbriefes*; it probably was written in the seventh century.

Besides these MSS. and Versions exceptionally valuable evidence is given by numerous quotations in the Stromateis of Clement of Alexandria (flor. c. 200 A.D.). It is noteworthy that I. Clement appears to be treated by Clement of Alexandria as Scripture, and this, especially in connection with its position in the codex Alexandrinus and in the Strassburg
I. CLEMENT

Coptic MS., where it is directly joined on to the canonical books, suggests that at an early period in Alexandria and Egypt I. Clement was regarded as part of the New Testament.

The relations subsisting between these authorities for the text have not been finally established, but it appears clear that none of them can be regarded as undoubtedly superior to the others, so that any critical text is necessarily eclectic. At the same time there is very little range of variation, and the readings which are in serious doubt are few, and, as a rule, unimportant.

The symbols employed in quoting the textual evidence are as follows:—

A = Codex Alexandrinus.
C = Codex Constantinopolitanus.
L = Latin Version.
S = Syriac Version.
K = Coptic Version (Kb = the Berlin MS., Ks = the Strassburg MS.).
Clem = Clement of Alexandria.
ΚΛΗΜΕΝΤΟΣ
ΠΡΟΣ ΚΟΡΙΝΘΙΟΥΣ Α

Ἡ ἐκκλησία τοῦ θεοῦ ἡ παροικοῦσα Ῥώμην τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ τοῦ θεοῦ τῇ παροικούσῃ Κόρινθον, κλητοῖς ἡγιασμένοις ἐν θελήματι θεοῦ διὰ τοῦ κυρίου ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ. χάρις ὑμῖν καὶ εἰρήνη ἀπὸ παντοκράτορος θεοῦ διὰ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ πληθυνθείῃ.

I

1. Διὰ τὰς αἰφνιδίους καὶ ἐπαλλήλους γενομένας ὑμῖν συμφορὰς καὶ περιπτώσεις,1 βράδιον νυμίζομεν ἐπιστροφὴν πεποίησθαι περὶ τῶν ἐπιζητουμένων παρ' ὑμῖν πραγμάτων, ἀγαπητοί, τῆς τε ἀλλοτρίας καὶ ξένης τοῖς ἐκλεκτοῖς τοῦ θεοῦ, μιαρᾶς καὶ ἀνοσίους στάσεως δὴν ὅλην πρόσωπα προπετῆ καὶ αὐθάδῃ ὑπάρχοντα εἰς τοσούτον ἀπονοίας ἐξέκασται, ὥστε τὸ σεμμῦν καὶ περιβόητον καὶ πάσην ἀνθρώποις ἀξιαγάπητον ὄνομα ὑμῶν μεγάλως βλασφημηθῆναι. 2. τῆς γὰρ παρεποδημήσας πρὸς ὑμᾶς τὴν πανάρετον καὶ βεβαιαν ὑμῶν πίστιν οὐκ ἐδοκίμασεν; τὴν τε σώφρονα καὶ ἐπιεικὴ ἐν Χριστῶ εὐσέβειαν οὐκ ἔθαύμασεν; καὶ τὸ μεγαλοπρεπὲς τῆς φιλοξενίας ὑμῶν ἥθος οὐκ ἐκήρυξεν; καὶ τὴν τελείαν καὶ ἀσφαλῆ γνώσιν

1 C reads περιπτάσεις which L perhaps represents by impedimenta, and Knopf accepts this.
THE FIRST EPISTLE OF CLEMENT
TO THE CORINTHIANS

The Church of God which sojourns in Rome to the Church of God which sojourns in Corinth, to those who are called and sanctified by the will of God through our Lord Jesus Christ. Grace and peace from God Almighty be multiplied to you through Jesus Christ.

1

1. Owing to the sudden and repeated misfortunes and calamities\(^1\) which have befallen us, we consider that our attention has been somewhat delayed in turning to the questions disputed among you, beloved, and especially the abominable and unholy sedition, alien and foreign to the elect of God, which a few rash and self-willed persons have made blaze up to such a frenzy that your name, venerable and famous, and worthy as it is of all men's love, has been much slandered.

2. For who has stayed with you without making proof of the virtue and stedfastness of your faith? Who has not admired the sobriety and Christian gentleness of your piety? Who has not reported your character so magnificent in its hospitality? And who has not blessed your perfect and secure

\(^1\) Or, with Knopf's text "critical circumstances."
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

οὐκ ἐμακάρισεν; 3. ἀπροσωπολήμπτως γὰρ πάντα ἐποιεῖτε καὶ ἐν τοῖς νομίμοις τοῦ θεοῦ ἐπορεύεσθε, ὑποτασσόμενοι τοῖς ἁγιομένοις ὕμων, καὶ τιμήν τὴν καθήκουσαν ἀπονέμοντες τοῖς παρ' ὑμῖν πρεσβυτέροις. νέοις τε μέτρα καὶ σεμνά νοεῖν ἐπετρέπτετε· γυναιξίν τε ἐν ἀμώμῳ καὶ σεμνῇ καὶ ἀγνῇ συνειδήσει πάντα ἐπιτελεῖν παραγγέλλετε, στεργοῦσας καθηκόντως τοὺς ἀνδρας ἑαυτῶν· ἐν τῷ κανόνι τῆς ὑποταγῆς ὑπαρχοῦσας τὰ κατὰ τῶν ὦκον σεμνῶς οἰκουργεῖν ἐδιδάσκετε, πάνυ σω-φρονοῦσας.

II

1. Πάντες τε ἐταπεινοφρονεῖτε μηδὲν ἀλάζονευόμενοι, ὑποτασσόμενοι μᾶλλον ἡ ὑποτάσσοντες, ἡδιον διδόντες ἡ λαμβάνοντες. τοῖς ἐφοδίοις τοῦ Χριστοῦ ἀρκοῦμενοι, καὶ προσέχοντες τοὺς λόγους αὐτοῦ ἐπιμελῶς ἐνεστερισμένοι ἤτε τοῖς σπλάγχνοις, καὶ τὰ παθήματα αὐτοῦ ἢν πρὸ ὁθαλμῶν ὑμῶν. 2. οὕτως εἰρήνη βαθεία καὶ λυπαρά ἐδέδωκα πᾶσιν καὶ ἀκόρεστος πόθος εἰς ἀγαθοτοιχιν, καὶ πλήρης πνεύματος ἁγίου ἐκχυσίς ἐπὶ πάντας ἐγίνετο. 3. μεστῷ τα ὀσίας βουλῆς, εἰς ἀγαθὴ προθυμία μετ' εὐσεβείς πεποιηθέσεως ἐξετείνετε τὰς χεῖρας ὑμῶν πρὸς τὸν παντοκράτορα θεόν, ἐκείνους αὐτὸν ἰδέων ἡγεμόνα, εἰς τα ἀκούστε ἡμὰρτετε. 4. ἁγίον ἢν ὑμῖν ἠμέρας τε καὶ νυκτὸς ὑπὲρ πάσης τῆς ἀδελφότητος, εἰς τὸ σώζεσθαι μετ'

1 Θεοὶ “of God” is read by A.
2 Ἰλεων C.
knowledge? 3. For you did all things without respect of persons, and walked in the laws of God, obedient to your rulers, and paying all fitting honour to the older among you. On the young, too, you enjoined temperate and seemly thoughts, and to the women you gave instruction that they should do all things with a blameless and seemly and pure conscience, yielding a dutiful affection to their husbands. And you taught them to remain in the rule of obedience and to manage their households with seemliness, in all circumspection.

II

1. And you were all humble-minded and in no wise arrogant, yielding subjection rather than demanding it, "giving more gladly than receiving," satisfied with the provision of Christ, and paying attention to his words you stored them up carefully in your hearts, and kept his sufferings before your eyes. 2. Thus a profound and rich peace was given to all, you had an insatiable desire to do good, and the Holy Spirit was poured out in abundance on you all. 3. You were full of holy plans, and with pious confidence you stretched out your hands to Almighty God in a passion of goodness, beseeching him to be merciful towards any unwilling sin. 4. Day and night you strove on behalf of the whole brotherhood
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

δέουσας τοῦ ἁριθµᾶν τῶν ἐκλεκτῶν αὐτοῦ. 5. εἰλικρινείς καὶ ἁκέραιοι ἦτε καὶ ἀµνηστικοὶ εἰς ἀλλήλους. 6. πᾶσα στάσις καὶ πάν σχίσµα βδελυκτῶν ἤν ὕµῖν. ἐπὶ τοῖς παραπτώµασιν τῶν πλησίον ἐπενθείτε τὰ ὑστερήµατα αὐτῶν ἵδα εἶρινετε. 7. ἀµεταµέλητοι ἦτε ἐπὶ πάσῃ ἀγαθοποιίᾳ, ἔτοιµοι εἰς πᾶν ἔργον ἀγαθὸν. 8. τῷ παναρέτῳ καὶ σεβασµῷ πολυτείᾳ κεκοσµηµένοι πάντα ἐν τῷ φόβῳ αὐτοῦ ἐπετελείτε τὰ προστάγµατα καὶ τὰ δικαιώµατα τοῦ κυρίου ἐπὶ τὰ πλάτη τῆς καρδίας ὕµῖν ἐγέγραπτο.

Ⅲ

Deut. 22, 15 1. Πᾶσα δόξα καὶ πλατυσµὸς ἐδόθη ὕµῖν, καὶ ἐπετελέσθη τὸ γεγραµµένον. Ἐφαγεν καὶ ἔπινεν, καὶ ἐπλατύνθη, καὶ ἐπαχύνθη, καὶ ἀπελάκτισεν ὁ ἡγαπηµένος. 2. ἐκ τούτου ζήλος καὶ φόνος, καὶ ἔρις, καὶ στάσις, διωγµὸς καὶ ἀκαταστασία, πόλεµος καὶ αἰχµαλωσία. 3. οὕτως ἐπηγέρθησαν οἱ ἅτιµοι ἐπὶ τοὺς ἕντιµους, οἱ ἄδοξοι ἐπὶ τοὺς ἕνδοξους, οἱ ἄφρονες ἐπὶ τοὺς φρονίµους, οἱ νέοι ἐπὶ τοὺς πρεσβυτέρους. 4. διὰ τοῦτο πόρρω ἀπεστίν ἡ δικαιοσύνη καὶ εἰρήνη, ἐν τῷ ἀπολυτείῳ ἐκαστον τοῦ φόβου τοῦ θεοῦ καὶ ἐν τῇ πίστει αὐτοῦ ἀµβλυωπῆσαι, μηδὲ ἐν τοῖς νοµίµοις τῶν

1 δέουσας C.
2 This must be corrupt: συναισθήσεως is perhaps the best emendation.
that the number of his elect should be saved with mercy and compassion. 1
5. You were sincere and innocent, and bore no malice to one another.
6. All sedition and all schism was abominable to you. You mourned over the transgressions of your neighbours; you judged their shortcomings as your own.
7. You were without regret in every act of kindness, "ready unto every good work." 8. You were adorned by your virtuous and honourable citizenship and did all things in the fear of God. 2 The commandments and ordinances of the Lord were "written on the tables of your heart."

III

1. All glory and enlargement was given to you, and that which was written was fulfilled, "My Beloved ate and drank, and he was enlarged and waxed fat and kicked." 2 From this arose jealousy and envy, strife and sedition, persecution and disorder, war and captivity. 3. Thus "the worthless" rose up "against those who were in honour," those of no reputation against the renowned, the foolish against the prudent, the "young against the old."
4. For this cause righteousness and peace are far removed, while each deserts the fear of God and the eye of faith in him has grown dim, and men walk neither in the ordinances of his commandments nor

1 The MS. reading means "conscience," which gives no sense. There is also a variant in the previous word: the inferior MS. (C) reads "fear" instead of "mercy."
2 "God" is found only in L; the other authorities have "his fear," but the meaning is plain.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

προσταγμάτων αὐτοῦ πορεύεσθαι, μηδὲ πολυτεύθεσθαι κατὰ τὸ καθήκον τῷ Χριστῷ, ἀλλὰ ἐκαστον βαδίζειν κατὰ τὰς ἐπιθυμίας τῆς καρδίας αὐτοῦ τῆς πονηρᾶς, ζηλῶν ἁδικον καὶ ἁσεβῆ ἀνειληφότας, δὶ οὖ καὶ θάνατος εἰσῆλθεν εἰς τὸν κόσμον.

Wisd. 2, 24

IV

Gen. 4, 3-8
1. Γέγραπται γὰρ οὕτως· Καὶ ἐγένετο μεθ’ ἡμέρας, ἤνεγκεν Καίων ἀπὸ τῶν καρπῶν τῆς γῆς θυσίαν τῷ θεῷ, καὶ Ἀβελ ἤνεγκεν καὶ αὐτὸς ἀπὸ τῶν πρωτοτοκῶν τῶν προβάτων καὶ ἀπὸ τῶν στεάτων αὐτῶν. 2. καὶ ἐπείδευ τὸ θεὸς ἐπὶ Ἀβελ καὶ ἐπὶ τοῖς δώροις αὐτοῦ, ἐπὶ δὲ Καίων καὶ ἐπὶ ταῖς θυσίαις αὐτοῦ οὐ προσέσχεν. 3. καὶ ἐλυπηθη Καίων λίαν καὶ συνέπεσεν τῷ προσώπῳ αὐτοῦ. 4. καὶ εἶπεν ὁ θεὸς πρὸς Καίων· 'Ινατί περίλυπος ἐγένεσθαι οὐδεὶς, καὶ ίνατι συνέπεσεν τῷ πρόσωπῷ τοῦ; οὐκ ἦν ὁρθὸς προσενεγκχεις, ὁρθῶς δὲ μὴ διέλθοις, ἡμαρτες; 5. ἡσύχασον πρὸς σε ᾗ ἄποστροφή αὐτοῦ, καὶ σὺ ἄρξῃς αὐτοῦ. 6. καὶ εἶπεν Καίων πρὸς Ἀβελ τῶν ἀδελφῶν αὐτοῦ· Διέλθωμεν εἰς τὸ πεδίον, καὶ ἐγένετο ἐν τῷ εἶναι αὐτοῖς ἐν τῷ πεδίῳ, ἀνέστη Καίων ἐπὶ Ἀβελ τῶν ἀδελφῶν αὐτοῦ καὶ ἀπέκτεινεν αὐτοῦ. 7. ὁ ὅρατε, ἀδελφοί, ζῆλος καὶ φθόνος ἀδελφοκτονίαν κατειργάσατο. 8. διὰ ζῆλος ὁ πατὴρ ἦμῶν Ἰακώβ ἀπέδρα ἀπὸ προσώπου Ἰσαάκ τοῦ ἀδελφοῦ αὐτοῦ. 9. ζῆλος ἐποίησεν Ἰωσήφ μέχρι θανάτου διωχθῆναι καὶ μέχρι δουλείας εἰσελθεῖν. 10. ζῆλος φυγεῖν ἡμᾶς καὶ Μωυσῆν ἀπὸ προσώπου Φαραώ βασιλέως Ἀιγύπτου ἐν τῷ ἀκούσαι αὐτῶν ἀπὸ τοῦ ὁμοφθολοῦ.
I. CLEMENT, iii. 4–iv. 10

use their citizenship worthily of Christ, but each goes according to the lusts of his wicked heart, and has revived the unrighteousness and impious envy, by which also "death came into the world."

IV

1. For it is written thus:—"And it came to pass after certain days that Cain offered to God a sacrifice of the fruits of the earth, and Abel himself also offered of the first-born of the sheep and of their fat. 2. And God looked on Abel and his gifts, but he had no respect to Cain and his sacrifices. 3. And Cain was greatly grieved and his countenance fell. 4. And God said to Cain, Why art thou grieved, and why is thy countenance fallen? If thou offeredst rightly, but didst not divide rightly, didst thou not sin? 5. Be still: he shall turn to thee, and thou shalt rule over him. 6. And Cain said to Abel his brother, Let us go unto the plain. And it came to pass that, while they were in the plain, Cain rose up against Abel his brother and slew him." 7. You see, brethren,—jealousy and envy wrought fratricide.
8. Through jealousy our father Jacob ran from the face of Esau his brother. 9. Jealousy made Joseph to be persecuted to the death, and come into slavery. 10. Jealousy forced Moses to fly from the face of Pharaoh, King of Egypt, when his fellow countryman

1 This is unintelligible, and does not agree with the Hebrew, which is also unintelligible. It is dealt with at length in all commentaries on Genesis.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

Exod. 2, 14 Ἡ τις σε κατέστησεν κριτήν ἢ δικαστὴν ἐφ᾽ ἡμῶν; μὴ ἀνέλειν με σὺ θέλεις, διό τρόπων ἀνελείς ἔκθές τὸν Αἰγύπτιον; 11. διὰ ζῆλος Ἄραρῶν καὶ Μαριάμ ἔξω τῆς παρεμβολῆς ηὐλίσθησαν. 12. ζῆλος Δαθὼν καὶ Ἀβειρῶν ζῶντας κατήγαγεν εἰς ἄδοι διὰ τὸ στασίασαι αὐτοὺς πρὸς τὸν θεράποντα τοῦ θεοῦ Μωϋσῆν. 13. διὰ ζῆλος Δαυείδ φθόνον ἔσχεν οὐ μόνον ὑπὸ τῶν ἀλλοφύλων, ἀλλὰ καὶ ὑπὸ Σαούλ βασιλέως Ἰσραήλ ἐδιώκθη.

V

1. Ἀλλ᾽ ἵνα τῶν ἀρχαίων ὑποδειγμάτων πανσώμεθα, ἐλθὼς μετὰ τοῦς ἐγχύστας γενομένους ἀθλητὰς, λάβωμεν τῆς γενεᾶς ἡμῶν τὰ γενναία ὑποδείγματα. 2. διὰ ζῆλου καὶ φθόνου οἱ μέγι- στοι καὶ δικαίωτατοι στύλαι ἐδιώκθησαν καὶ ἔσω θανάτου ἠθλησαν. 3. λάβωμεν πρὸ φθαρμῶν ἡμῶν τούς ἁγαθοὺς ἀποστόλους. 4. Πέτρου, διὰ διὰ ζῆλου ἄδικον οὐχ ἕνα οὐδὲ δύο, ἀλλὰ πλείωνας ὑπῆρχεν πόνου καὶ οὕτως μαρτυρήσας ἐπορεύθη εἰς τὸν ὄφειλόμενον τὸν τῆς δόξης. 5. διὰ ζῆλου καὶ ἔριν Πάυλος ὑπομονής βραβείον ὑπέδειξεν, ἐπιτάκις δεσμὰ φορέσας, φυγαδευθεὶς, λιθα- σθείς, κήρυξ γενόμενος ἐν τῇ ἁνατολῇ καὶ ἐν τῇ δυσί, τὸ γενναῖον τῆς πίστεως αὐτοῦ κλέος ἔλα- βεν, 7. δικαιοσύνην διδάσκας ὅλον τὸν κόσμον, καὶ ἐπὶ τὸ τέρμα τῆς δύσεως ἐλθὼς καὶ μαρτυρήσας ἐπὶ τῶν ἡγουμένων, ὑπὸ τοῦ αἰτηλάγη τοῦ κόσμου καὶ εἰς τὸν ἄγιον τὸν ἀνελίφθη,1 ὑπομονής γενό- μενος μέγιστος ὑπογραμμός.

1 So SLK, ἐπορεύθη AC probably from v. 4.
said to him, "Who made thee a judge or a ruler over us? Wouldst thou slay me as thou didst slay the Egyptian yesterday?" 11. Through jealousy Aaron and Miriam were lodged outside the camp. 12. Jealousy brought down Dathan and Abiram alive into Hades, because they rebelled against Moses the servant of God. 13. Through jealousy David incurred envy not only from David strangers, but suffered persecution even from Saul, King of Israel.

V

1. But, to cease from the examples of old time, let us come to those who contended in the days nearest to us; let us take the noble examples of our own generation. 2. Through jealousy and envy the greatest and most righteous pillars of the Church were persecuted and contended unto death. 3. Let us set before our eyes the good apostles: 4. Peter, who because of unrighteous jealousy suffered not one or two but many trials, and having thus given his testimony went to the glorious place which was his due. 5. Through jealousy and strife Paul showed the way to the prize of endurance; 6. seven times he was in bonds, he was exiled, he was stoned, he was a herald both in the East and in the West, he gained the noble fame of his faith, 7. he taught righteousness to all the world, and when he had reached the limits of the West he gave his testimony before the rulers, and thus passed from the world and was taken up into the Holy Place,—the greatest example of endurance.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

VI

1. Τούτοις τοῖς ἄνδράσιν ὅσίως πολιτευσαμένοις συνηθροίσθη πολὺ πλήθος ἐκλεκτῶν, οἵτινες πολλαῖς αἰκίαις καὶ βασάνοις1 διὰ ξῆλος παθόντες ὑπόδειγμα κάλλιστον ἐγένοντο ἐν ἡμῖν. 2. διὰ ξῆλος διωχθεῖσαι γυναῖκες Δαναίδες καὶ Δόρκαι,2 αἰκίσματα δεινὰ καὶ ἀνόσια παθοῦσαι, ἐπὶ τὸν τῆς πίστεως βέβαιον δρόμον κατήγησαν καὶ ἐλαβον γέρας γενναίον αἱ ἄσθενεῖς τῷ σώματι. 3. ξῆλος ἀπηλλατρώσεσε γαμετὰς ἄνδρῶν καὶ ἠλλοῦσεν τὸ ῥῆθεν ὑπὸ τοῦ πατρὸς ἡμῶν Ἀδάμ. Τούτῳ νῦν ὅστιν ἐκ τῶν ὀστέων μου καὶ σάρξ ἐκ τῆς σαρκὸς μου. 4. ξῆλος καὶ ἔρις πόλεις μεγάλας κατέστρεψεν καὶ ἔθνη μεγάλα ἐξερίζωσεν.

VII

1. Ταῦτα, ἀγαπητοῖ, οὗ μόνῳ ὑμᾶς νοσθετοῦντες ἐπιστέλλομεν, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἐαυτοὺς ὑπομυνήσκοντες· ἐν γὰρ τῷ αὐτῷ ἐσμὲν σκάμματι, καὶ ο ἀυτὸς ἡμῖν ἀγὼν ἐπίκειται. 2. διὰ ἀπολύσωμεν τὰς κενὰς καὶ ματάλας φροντίδας, καὶ ἔλθωμεν ἐπὶ τὸν εὐκλεὴ καὶ σεμνὸν τῆς παραδόσεως ἡμῶν κανόνα. 3. καὶ ἱδώμεν, τὶ καλὸν καὶ τὶ τερπνὸν καὶ τὶ προσδεκτὸν ἐνώπιον τοῦ ποιήσαντος ἡμᾶς. 4. ἀπενώθωμεν εἰς τὸ αἷμα τοῦ Χριστοῦ καὶ γνῶμεν, ὡς ἔστιν

1 LK perhaps imply πολλὰς αἰκίας καὶ βασάνους.
2 This is perhaps corrupt: but no satisfactory emendation is known.

18
VI

1. To these men with their holy lives was gathered a great multitude of the chosen, who were the victims of jealousy and offered among us the fairest example in their endurance under many indignities and tortures. 2. Through jealousy women were persecuted as Danaids and Dircae,¹ suffering terrible and unholy indignities; they stedfastly finished the course of faith, and received a noble reward, weak in the body though they were. 3. Jealousy has estranged wives from husbands, and made of no effect the saying of our father Adam, "This is now bone of my bone and flesh of my flesh." 4. Jealousy and strife have overthrown great cities, and rooted up mighty nations.

VII

1. We are not only writing these things to you, beloved, for your admonition, but also to remind ourselves; for we are in the same arena, and the same struggle is before us. 2. Wherefore let us put aside empty and vain cares, and let us come to the glorious and venerable rule of our tradition, 3. and let us see what is good and pleasing and acceptable in the sight of our Maker. 4. Let us fix our gaze on the Blood of Christ, and let us

¹ No satisfactory interpretation has ever been given of this phrase: either it refers to theatrical representations by condemned Christians, or the text is hopelessly corrupt.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

τίμον τῷ πατρὶ αὐτοῦ, ὁτι διὰ τὴν ἡμετέραν σωτηρίαν ἐκχυθὲν παντὶ τῷ κόσμῳ μετανοίας χάριν ὕψηλεν. 5. διέλθωμεν εἰς τὰς γενεὰς πάσας, καὶ καταμάθωμεν ὅτι ἐν γενεᾷ καὶ γενεᾷ μετανοίας τόπον ἐδώκεν ὁ δεσπότης τοῖς βουλομένοις ἐπιστραφῆναι ἐπ᾽ αὐτὸν. 6. Ἡδὲ ἐκήρυξεν μετάνοιαν, καὶ οἱ ὑπακούσαντες ἐσώθησαν. 7. Ἰωνάς Νινεύτας καταστροφὴν ἐκήρυξεν· οἱ δὲ μετανοήσαντες ἐπὶ τοὺς ἀμαρτήμασιν αὐτῶν ἐξιλάσαντο τὸν θεὸν ἤκετεύσαντες καὶ ἔλαβον σωτηρίαν, καὶ περ ἄλλοτριοι τοῦ θεοῦ ὄντες.

VIII

1. Οἱ λειτουργοὶ τῆς χάριτος τοῦ θεοῦ διὰ πνεύματος ἁγίου περὶ μετανοίας ἐλάλησαν, 2. καὶ αὐτὸς δὲ ὁ δεσπότης τῶν ἄπαντων περὶ μετανοίας ἐλάλησεν μετὰ ὅρκου· Ζῶ γὰρ ἐγώ, λέγει κύριος, οὐ βούλομαι τὸν θάνατον τοῦ ἀμαρτωλοῦ ὡς τὴν μετάνοιαν, προστίθεις καὶ γνώμην ἁγαθήν. 3. Μετανοήσατε, οἶκος Ἰσραήλ, ἀπὸ τῆς ἀνομίας ὑμῶν· εἰπὸν τοῖς νῦις τοῦ λαοῦ μου. Ἐὰν ὡσιν αἰ ἀμαρτίαι ὑμῶν ὀπὸ τῆς γῆς ἔως τοῦ οὐρανοῦ καὶ ἐὰν ὡσιν πυρρότεραι κόκκου καὶ μελανώτεραι σάκκου, καὶ ἐπιστράφητε πρὸς με ἐξ ὀλής τῆς καρδίας καὶ εἰπήτε· Πάτερ· ἐπακούσομαι ὑμῶν ὡς λαοῦ ἁγίου. 4. καὶ ἐν ἑτέρῳ τόπῳ λέγει ὅτως:

1 τῷ θεῷ καὶ πατρὶ αὐτοῦ Α, τῷ πατρὶ αὐτοῦ τῷ θεῷ C. The text is found in SLK.

20
1. CLEMENT, vii. 4–viii. 4

know that it is precious to his Father,¹ because it was poured out for our salvation, and brought the grace of repentance to all the world. 5. Let us review all the generations, and let us learn that in generation after generation the Master has given a place of repentance to those who will turn to him. 6. Noah preached repentance and those who obeyed Noah were saved. 7. Jonah foretold destruction to the men of Nineveh, but when they repented they received forgiveness of their sins from God in answer to their prayer, and gained salvation, though they were aliens to God.

VIII

1. The ministers of the grace of God spoke through the Holy Spirit concerning repentance, 2. and even the Master of the universe himself spoke with an oath concerning repentance; “For as I live, said the Lord, I do not desire the death of the sinner so much as his repentance,” and he added a gracious declaration, 3. “Repent, O house of Israel, from your iniquity: Say to the sons of my people, If your sins reach from the earth to Heaven, and if they be redder than scarlet, and blacker than sackcloth, and ye turn to me with all your hearts and say ‘Father,’ I will listen to you as a holy people.”² 4. And in another place he speaks thus, “Wash

¹ The Greek MSS. insert “his God,” but in different places, and the evidence of the versions confirms Lightfoot’s view that the words are interpolated.
² The origin of this quotation is obscure; possibly Clement’s text of Ezekiel was different from ours and really contained it.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

I. 

1. Ἰδίῳ ὑπακούσωμεν τῇ μεγαλοπρεπεί καὶ ἐνδόξῳ

IX

1. Ἰδίῳ ὑπακούσωμεν τῇ μεγαλοπρεπεί καὶ ἐνδόξῳ

βουλήσει αὐτοῦ, καὶ ἱκέται γενόμενοι τοῦ ἔλεους καὶ τῆς χρηστότητος αὐτοῦ προσπέσωμεν καὶ ἐπιστρέψωμεν ἐπί τοὺς οἰκτιρμοὺς αὐτοῦ, ἀπολυτίκους τὴν ματαιοποίησιν τῆς τε ἐριν καὶ τὸ εἰς τάνατον ἄχον ἔρις. 2. Ἀτενίσωμεν εἰς τοὺς τελείους λειτουργήσαντας τῇ μεγαλοπρεπεὶ δόξῃ αὐτοῦ.

3. λάβωμεν Ἑμῶν, ὅσον ὑπακοῇ δίκαιος εὐρέθεις μετετέθη, καὶ οὐχ εὑρέθη αὐτοῦ τάνατος. 4. Νῦν πιστῶσω εὐρεθεῖς διὰ τῆς λειτουργίας αὐτοῦ παλιγγενεσίαν κόσμῳ ἐκήρυξεν, καὶ διέσωσεν δἰ αὐτοῦ ὁ δεσπότης τὰ εἰσελθόντα ἐν ὑμοίῳ καὶ εἰς τὴν κυβερνήσειν.
you, and make you clean, put away your wickedness from your souls before my eyes, cease from your wickedness, learn to do good, seek out judgment, rescue the wronged, give judgment for the orphan, do justice to the widow, and come and let us reason together, saith the Lord; and if your sins be as crimson, I will make them white as snow, and if they be as scarlet, I will make them white as wool, and if ye be willing and hearken to me, ye shall eat the good things of the land, but if ye be not willing, and hearken not to me, a sword shall devour you, for the mouth of the Lord has spoken these things." 5. Thus desiring to give to all his beloved a share in repentance, he established it by his Almighty will.

IX

1. Wherefore let us obey his excellent and glorious will; let us fall before him as suppliants of his mercy and goodness; let us turn to his pity, and abandon the vain toil and strife and jealousy which leads to death. 2. Let us fix our gaze on those who have rendered perfect service to his excellent glory. 3. Let us take Enoch, who was Enoch found righteous in obedience, and was translated, and death did not befall him. 4. Noah was found Noah faithful in his service, in foretelling a new beginning to the world, and through him the Master saved the living creatures which entered in concord into the Ark.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

X

1. Ἀβραάμ, ὁ φίλος προσαγορευθεὶς, πιστὸς εὐφρέθη ἐν τῷ αὐτοῦ ὑπήκοου γενέσθαι τοῖς ρήμασιν τοῦ θεοῦ. 2. οὕτως δὲ ὑπακοής ἔξηλθεν ἐκ τῆς γῆς αὐτοῦ καὶ ἐκ τῆς συγγενείας αὐτοῦ καὶ ἐκ τοῦ οἴκου τοῦ πατρὸς αὐτοῦ, ὡπός γῆν ὀλίγην καὶ συγγενείαν ἀσθενή καὶ οἶκον μικρὸν καταλύτων κληρονομήσῃ τὰς ἐπαγγελίας τοῦ θεοῦ. λέγει γὰρ αὐτῷ:

3. Ἀπελθε ἐκ τῆς γῆς σου καὶ ἐκ τῆς συγγενείας σου καὶ ἐκ τοῦ οἴκου τοῦ πατρός σου ἐν τῇ γῆν ἣν ἂν σοι δείξῃ καὶ ποιήσῃ σε εἰς ἐθνὸς μέγα καὶ εὐλογήσω σε καὶ μεγαλυτίῳ τὸ ὄνομά σου, καὶ ἔσῃ εὐλογημένος καὶ εὐλογήσω τοὺς εὐλογοῦντάς σε καὶ καταράσσωμαι τοὺς καταρωμένους σε, καὶ εὐλογηθήσονται ἐν σοὶ πᾶσαι αἱ φυλαὶ τῆς γῆς. 4. καὶ πάλιν ἐν τῷ διαχωρισθῆναι αὐτοῦ ἀπὸ Δωτ ἔπεν αὐτῷ ὁ θεὸς. Ἀναβλέψας τοῖς ὀφθαλμοῖς σου ἵδε ἀπὸ τοῦ τόπου, οὐ νῦν σὺ εἰ, πρὸς βορρᾶν καὶ νότα καὶ ἀνατολάς καὶ βόρας, ὅτι πᾶσαι τὴν γῆν, ἢν σὺ ὀρέστη, σοὶ δῶσω αὐτὴν καὶ τῷ σπέρματί σου ἕως αἰῶνος. 5. καὶ ποιήσω τὸ σπέρμα σου ὥς τὴν ἅμμον τῆς γῆς ἐὰν δύναται τὰς ἐξαριθμήσαι τὴν ἅμμον τῆς γῆς, καὶ τὸ σπέρμα σου ἐξαριθμηθήσεται. 6. καὶ πάλιν λέγει: Ἐξῆγαγεν ὁ θεὸς τὸν Ἀβραὰμ καὶ ἔπειτα αὐτῷ: Ἀναβλέψων εἰς τὸν οὐρανόν καὶ ἀφικησοῦν τοὺς ἀστέρας, εἰ δυνήσῃ ἐξαιρισθῆσαι αὐτοὺς: οὕτως έσται τὸ σπέρμα σου. ἑπίστευσεν δὲ Ἀβραὰμ τῷ θεῷ, καὶ ἐλογίσθη αὐτῷ εἰς δικαιοσύνην. 7. διὰ πίστιν καὶ φιλοξενίαν ἐδόθη
1. Abraham, who was called "the Friend," was found faithful in his obedience to the words of God.  
2. He in obedience went forth from his country and from his kindred and from his father's house, that by leaving behind a little country and a feeble kindred and a small house he might inherit the promises of God. For God says to him, 3. "Depart from thy land and from thy kindred and from thy father's house to the land which I shall show thee, and I will make thee a great nation, and I will bless thee, and I will magnify thy name, and thou shalt be blessed; and I will bless those that bless thee, and I will curse those that curse thee, and all the tribes of the earth shall be blessed in thee." 4. And again, when he was separated from Lot, God said to him, "Lift up thine eyes and look from the place where thou art now, to the North and to the South and to the East and to the West; for all the land which thou seest, to thee will I give it and to thy seed for ever. 5. And I will make thy seed as the dust of the earth. If a man can number the dust of the earth thy seed shall also be numbered." 6. And again he says, "God led forth Abraham, and said to him, 'Look up to the Heaven and number the stars, if thou canst number them; so shall thy seed be.' And Abraham believed God, and it was counted unto him for righteousness." 7. Because of his faith and hospitality a son was given him in
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

Gen. 22; Heb. 11, 17
αὐτῷ νῦν ἐν γῆρα, καὶ δὶ ὑπακοὴς προσήνεγκεν
αὐτὸν θυσίαν τῷ θεῷ πρὸς τὸ ὀρος ὃ τε ἔδειξεν
αὐτῷ.

XI

Gen. 19; II Pct. 2, 6, 7
1. Διὰ φιλοξενίαν καὶ εὐσέβειαν Δωτ ἐσώθη ἐκ
Σοδόμων, τῆς περιχώρου πάσης κρυθείσης διὰ
πυρὸς καὶ θείου, πρόδηλου ποιήτας ὁ δεσπότης,
ὅτι τοὺς ἐλπίζοντας ἐπ’ αὐτοῦ οὐκ ἐγκαταλείπεις,
tους δὲ ἐτεροκλινεῖς ὑπάρχοντας εἰς κόλασιν καὶ
αἰκισμὸν τίθησιν. 2. συνεξελθοῦσας γὰρ αὐτῷ
τῆς γυναικὸς ἐκτητοῦντος ὑπαρχοῦσας καὶ οὐκ
ἐν ὁμοιοίᾳ, εἰς τοῦτο σμηνεῖον ἔτεθη, ὥστε γενέσθαι
αὐτὴν στήλην ἀλὸς ἐως τῆς ἡμέρας ταύτης, εἰς
tὸ γαστρὸν εἶναι πάσιν, ὅτι οἱ δίψυχοι καὶ οἱ
dιστάζοντες περὶ τῆς τοῦ θεοῦ δυνάμεως εἰς κρίμα
καὶ εἰς σμηνείωσιν πάσας ταῖς γενεαῖς γίνονται.

XII

Josh. 2; James 2, 25; Heb. 11, 31
1. Διὰ πίστιν καὶ φιλοξενίαν ἐσώθη Ἡραβὶ ἡ
πόρνη. 2. εἰκεχείρθην τὸν Ἰσραὴλ τοῦ τοῦ
Ναζανία κατασκόπων εἰς τὴν Ἰεριχώ, ἔγνω ὁ
βασιλεὺς τῆς γῆς, ὅτι ἕκασιν κατασκοπεύσαι τὴν
χώραν αὐτῶν, καὶ ἔξεπεσεν ἀνδρὰς τῶν
συλλημψαντές αὐτοῦς, ὅπως συλλημψάντες
θανατωθῶσιν. 3. ἡ οὖν φιλοξενοῦν Ἡραβὶ εἰς ἐξαπολύσειν αὐτοὺς ἔκρυψεν εἰς τὸ ὑπερῆφαν ὑπὸ τὴν

1 So L; ACSK conform to the LXX and read ἐν τῶν ὀρέων.
2 ἡ ἐπιλεγομένη πόρνη CLSK, perhaps from Hebr. 11, 31,
The text is found in A Clement.

26
I. CLEMENT, x. 7–xii. 4

his old age, and in his obedience he offered him as a sacrifice to God on the mountain ¹ which he showed him.

XI

1. For his hospitality and piety Lot was saved out Lot of Sodom when the whole countryside was judged by fire and brimstone, and the Master made clear that he does not forsake those who hope in him, but delivers to punishment and torture those who turn aside to others. 2. For of this a sign was given Lot's wife when his wife went with him, but changed her mind and did not remain in agreement with him, so that she became a pillar of salt unto this day, to make known to all, that those who are double-minded, and have doubts concerning the power of God, incur judgment and become a warning to all generations.

XII

1. For her faith and hospitality Rahab the harlot² Rahab was saved. 2. For when the spies were sent to Jericho by Joshua the son of Nun, the King of the land knew that they had come to spy out his country, and sent men to take them, that they might be captured and put to death. 3. So the hospitable Rahab took them in, and hid them in the upper room under the stalks of flax. 4. And when the

¹ Or possibly, with the other reading, "on one of the mountains."
² Or possibly "who was called a harlot."
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

Josh. 2, 3

λυνοκαλάμην. 4. ἔπισταθέντων δὲ τῶν παρὰ τοῦ βασιλέως καὶ λεγόντων: Πρὸς σὲ εἰσήλθον οἱ κατάσκοποι τῆς γῆς ἡμῶν· ἐξάγαγε αὐτούς, ὥσ τῶν παρά τοῦ βασιλείους οὖσα κελεύει, ἤδε ἀπεκρίθη: Εἰσῆλθον μὲν οἱ ἄνδρες, οὐς ἦσθε, πρὸς με, ἀλλ' εὐθέως ἀπῆλθον καὶ πορεύονται τῇ ὁδῷ· ὑποδεικνύοντα αὐτοὺς ἐναλλάξει. 5. καὶ εἶπεν πρὸς τοὺς ἄνδρας·

Josh. 2, 9–18

Γινώσκουσα γινώσκοι ἐγώ, ὅτι κύριος ὁ θεὸς παραδιδόσα τίς τήν γῆν ταύτην· ὁ γὰρ φόβος καὶ ὁ τρόμος ἡμῶν ἐπέπεσεν τοῖς κατοικοῦσιν αὐτήν ὡς εὰν οὖν γένηται λαβεῖν αὐτὴν ἡμᾶς, διασώσατε με καὶ τὸν οἶκον τοῦ πατρὸς μου. 6. καὶ εἶπαν αὐτῇ: Ἐσται οὖν, ὡς ἐλάλησας ἡμῖν. ὡς εὰν οὖν γνῶς παραγινομένους ἡμᾶς, συνάξεις πάντας τοὺς σου ὑπὸ τὸ στέγος σου, καὶ διασωθήσονται· ὅσοι γὰρ εὰν εὑρεθῶσιν ἥξω τῆς οἰκίας, ἀπολούνται. 7. καὶ προσέθεντο αὐτῇ δοῦναι σημεῖον, ὅτις ἐκκρεμάσῃ ἐκ τοῦ οἴκου αὐτῆς κόκκινον, πρόδηλον ποιούντες, ὅτι διὰ τοῦ αἵματος τοῦ κυρίου λύτρωσις ἔσται πᾶσιν τοῖς πιστεύουσιν καὶ ἐλπίζουσιν ἐπὶ τὸν θεόν. 8. ὁ ὀρατός, ἀγαπητοί, ότι οὐ μόνον πίστις, ἀλλὰ καὶ προφητεία ἐν τῇ γυναικί γέγονεν.

XIII

1. Ταπεινοφρονήσωμεν οὖν, ἀδελφοί, ἀποθεμένοι πᾶσαν ἀλαζονείαν καὶ τύφος καὶ ἀφροσύνην καὶ ὀργάς, καὶ ποιήσωμεν τὸ γεγραμμένον, λέγει γὰρ τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἄγιον. Μὴ καυχάσθω ὁ σοφὸς ἐν τῇ σοφίᾳ αὐτοῦ μηδὲ ὁ ἱσχυρὸς ἐν τῇ ἱσχύ̣ι αὐτοῦ μηδὲ οἱ πλούσιοι ἐν τῷ πλούτῳ αὐτοῦ, ἀλλ' ἢ οἱ
1. CLEMENT, xii. 4—xiii. 1

king's men came and said, "The spies of our land came in to thee, bring them out, for the king orders thus," she answered "The men whom ye seek did indeed come to me, but they went away forthwith, and are proceeding on their journey," and pointed in the wrong direction. 5. And she said to the men, "I know assuredly that the Lord God is delivering to you this land; for the fear and dread of you has fallen on those who dwell in it. When therefore it shall come to pass, that ye take it, save me and my father's house." 6. And they said to her, "It shall be as thou hast spoken to us; when therefore thou knowest that we are at hand, thou shalt gather all thy folk under thy roof, and they shall be safe; for as many as shall be found outside the house shall perish." 7. And they proceeded to give her a sign, that she should hang out a scarlet thread from her house, foreshowing that all who believe and hope on God shall have redemption through the blood of the Lord. 8. You see, beloved, that the woman is an instance not only of faith but also of prophecy.

XIII

1. Let us, therefore, be humble-minded, brethren, putting aside all arrogance and conceit and foolishness and wrath, and let us do that which is written (for the Holy Spirit says, "Let not the wise man boast himself in his wisdom, nor the strong man in his strength, nor the rich man in his riches, but he
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

καυχώμενος ἐν κυρίῳ καυχάσθω, τοῦ ἐκζητεῖν αὐτὸν καὶ ποιεῖν κρίμα καὶ δικαιοσύνην μᾶλλον μεμνημένοι τῶν λόγων τοῦ κυρίου Ἰησοῦ, οὐς ἐλάλησεν διδάσκοντο εἰπεῖκειαν καὶ μακροθυμίαι.

2. οὕτως γὰρ εἶπεν: ἔλεητε, ἵνα ἔλεηθητε· ἀφίετε, ἵνα ἀφέθη ὑμῖν· ὡς ποιεῖτε, οὕτω ποιηθήσεται ὑμῖν· ὡς δίδοτε, οὕτως δοθήσεται ὑμῖν· ὡς κρίνετε, οὕτως κριθήσεσθε· ὡς χρηστεύεσθε, οὕτως χρηστευθήσεται ὑμῖν· ὡς μέτρῳ μετρεῖτε, ἐν αὐτῷ μετρηθήσεται ὑμῖν.

3. ταύτῃ τῇ ἐντολῇ καὶ τοῖς παραγγέλμασιν τούτοις στηρίζωμεν ἐαυτούς εἰς τὸ πορεύομαι ὑπηκόους ὅντας τοῖς ἀγιοπρεπέσι λόγοις αὐτοῦ, ταπεινοφρονούντες· φησὶν γὰρ ὁ ἅγιος λόγος.

4. Ἐπὶ τίνα ἐπιβλέψῳ, ἀλλ' ἢ ἐπὶ τὸν πραΰν καὶ ἱσύχιον καὶ τρέμοντα μου τὰ λόγια.

XIV

1. Δίκαιον οὖν καὶ δόσιν, ἄνδρες ἀδελφοί, ὑπηκόους ἡμᾶς μᾶλλον γενέσθαι τῷ θεῷ ή τοῖς ἐν ἁλαζονείᾳ καὶ ἀκαταστασίᾳ μυστεροῦ ξῆλος ἀρχηγοῖς ἐξακολουθεῖν. 2. Βλάβην γὰρ οὐ τὴν τυχοῦσαν, μᾶλλον δὲ κίνδυνον ὑποίσουμεν μέγαν, εὰν ριψοκινδύνως ἐπιδώμεν ἐαυτούς τοῖς θελήμασιν τῶν ἀνθρώπων, οὗτες ἐξακοντίζουσιν εἰς ἐρην καὶ στάσεις, εἰς τὸ ἀπαλλοτριώσαι ἡμᾶς τοῦ καλῶς ἔχοντος. 3. χρηστευσώμεθα ἐαυτούς κατὰ τὴν εὐσπλαγχνίαν καὶ γλυκύτητα τοῦ ποιήσαντος ἡμᾶς. 4. γέγραπται γὰρ: Χρηστοὶ ἔσονται οἰκήτορες γῆς, ἄκακοι δὲ ὑπολειφόμενοι ἐπ' αὐτῆς· οἱ δὲ παρανομοῦντες ἐξαιλθευθήσονται ἀπ' αὐτῆς.
I. CLEMENT, xiii. i–xiv. 5

that boasteth let him boast in the Lord, to seek him out and to do judgment and righteousness”), especially remembering the words of the Lord Jesus which he spoke when he was teaching gentleness and longsuffering. 2. For he spoke thus: “Be merciful, that ye may obtain mercy. Forgive, that ye may be forgiven. As ye do, so shall it be done unto you. As ye give, so shall it be given unto you. As ye judge, so shall ye be judged. As ye are kind, so shall kindness be shewn you. With what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you.” 3. With this commandment and with these injunctions let us strengthen ourselves to walk in obedience to his hallowed words and let us be humble-minded, for the holy word says, 4. “On whom shall I look, but on the meek and gentle and him who trembles at my oracles.”

XIV

1. Therefore it is right and holy, my brethren, for us to obey God rather than to follow those who in pride and unruliness are the instigators of an abominable jealousy. 2. For we shall incur no common harm, but great danger, if we rashly yield ourselves to the purposes of men who rush into strife and sedition, to estrange us from what is right. 3. Let us be kind to one another, according to the compassion and sweetness of our Maker. 4. For it is written, “The kind shall inhabit the land, and the guiltless shall be left on it, but they who transgress shall be destroyed from off it.”
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

Ps. 87, 85-87 5. καὶ πάλιν λέγει· Εἴδον ἀσεβή ὑπερψούμενον καὶ ἐπαιρόμενον ὡς τὰς κέδρους τοῦ Δεσώνου· καὶ παρῆλθον, καὶ ίδον οὐκ ἦν, καὶ έξεξήτησα τὸν τόπον αὐτοῦ, καὶ οὐχ εὗρον. Φύλασσε ἄκακίαν καὶ ίδε εὐθύτητα, ὅτι ἐστὶν ἑγκατάλειμμα ἀνθρώπων εἱρήνηκῳ.

XV

1. Τοίνυν κολληθῶμεν τοῖς μετ’ εὐσεβείας εἱρήνευσιν, καὶ μὴ τοῖς μεθ’ ὑποκρίσεως βουλομένοις εἰρήνην. 2. Λέγει γὰρ πον. Ἐνθος ὁ λαὸς τοῖς χείλεσιν με τιμᾶ, ἢ δὲ καρδία αὐτῶν πόρρω ἀπεστιν ἀπ’ ἐμοῦ. 3. καὶ πάλιν. Τῷ στοματὶ αὐτῶν εὐλογοῦσιν, τῇ δὲ καρδίᾳ αὐτῶν κατηρώντο.

Ps. 77, 86, 87 4. καὶ πάλιν λέγει· Ἡγάπησαν αὐτὸν τῷ στοματὶ αὐτῶν καὶ τῇ γλώσσῃ αὐτῶν ἐψεύσαντο αὐτῶν, ἢ δὲ καρδία αὐτῶν οὐκ εὐθείᾳ μετ’ αὐτοῦ, οὐδὲ ἐπιστάθησαν ἐν τῇ διαθήκῃ αὐτοῦ: 5. διὰ τούτῳ ἀλαλὰ γεννηθήτω τὰ χείλη τὰ δόλια τὰ λαλοῦντα κατὰ τοῦ δικαίου ἀνομίαν. καὶ πάλιν.

Ps. 12, 8-5 'Εξολεθρεύσα πύρως πάντα τὰ χείλη τὰ δόλια, γλώσσαν μεγαλορήμονα, τοὺς ἑπόντας. Τὴν γλώσσαν ἡμῶν μεγαλυνοῦμεν, τὰ χείλη ἡμῶν παρ’ ἡμῖν ἐστίν· τὶς ἡμῶν κύριος ἐστίν; 6. ἀπὸ τῆς ταλαιπωρίας τῶν πτωχῶν καὶ τοῦ στεναγοῦ τῶν πενήτων νῦν ἀναστήσομαι, λέγει κύριος: θέσομαι ἐν σωτηρίῳ. 7. παρρησιάσομαι ἐν αὐτῷ.

1 δόλια . . . δόλια are omitted by all the textual authorities (including Clem.) except S. It is probable that this is a primitive corruption in the text, and that the reading of S is a correct emendation, which, it may be observed, was independently made by Lightfoot before the discovery of S.
I. CLEMENT, xiv. 5–xv. 7

5. And again he says: "I saw the ungodly lifted high, and exalted as the cedars of Lebanon. And I went by, and behold he was not; and I sought his place, and I found it not. Keep innocence, and look on uprightness; for there is a remnant for a peaceable man."

XV

1. Moreover let us cleave to those whose peacefulness is based on piety and not to those whose wish for peace is hypocrisy. 2. For it says in one place: "This people honoureth me with their lips, but their heart is far from me." 3. And again, "They blessed with their mouth, but cursed in their hearts." 4. And again it says "they loved him with their mouth, and they lied unto him with their tongue, and their heart was not right with him, nor were they faithful in his covenant." 5. Therefore "let the deceitful lips be dumb which speak iniquity against the righteous." And again, "May the Lord destroy all the deceitful lips, a tongue that speaketh great things, those who say, Let us magnify our tongue, our lips are our own, who is lord over us? 6. For the misery of the poor and groaning of the needy, now will I arise, saith the Lord, I will place him in safety. 7. I will deal boldly with him."
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

XVI

1. Ταπεινοφρονοῦντων γάρ ἦστιν ὁ Χριστός, οὐκ ἐπαιρομένων ἐπὶ τὸ ποίμνιον αὐτοῦ. 2. τὸ σκῆπτρον τῆς μεγαλωσύνης τοῦ θεοῦ, ὁ κύριος Ἰησοῦς Χριστός, οὐκ ἦλθεν ἐν κόμπῳ ἀλαζονείας οὐδὲ ὑπερηφανίας, καῖτερ δυνάμενος, ἀλλὰ ταπεινοφρονῶν, καθὼς τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἁγιον περὶ αὐτοῦ ἐλάλησεν φησὶν γάρ. 3. Κύριε, τὸς ἐπιστευσεν τῇ ἁκοῇ ἡμῶν; καὶ ὁ βραχίων κυρίου τίνι ἀπεκαλύφθη; ἀνηγγελάμεν ἐναντίον αὐτοῦ, ὡς παιδίου, ὡς βίζα ἐν ἔρημῳ διψῷ; οὐκ ἦστιν αὐτῷ εἴδος οὐδὲ δόξα, καὶ εἶδομεν αὐτόν, καὶ οὐκ εἶχεν εἴδος οὐδὲ κάλλος, ἀλλὰ τὸ εἴδος αὐτοῦ ἄτιμον, ἐκείπον παρὰ τὸ εἴδος τῶν ἀνθρώπων ἀνθρωπος ἐν πληγῇ ὥστε καὶ πόνῳ καὶ εἰδῶς φέρει μαλακίαν, ὅτι ἀπέστρεψε τὸ πρόσωπον αὐτοῦ, ἡτιμάσθη καὶ οὐκ ἑλογίσθη. 4. οὗτος τὰς ἁμαρτίας ἡμῶν φέρει καὶ περὶ ἡμῶν ὅδυνᾶται, καὶ ἡμεῖς ἑλογισάμεθα αὐτὸν εἰναι ἐν πόνῳ καὶ ἐν πληγῇ καὶ ἐν κακώσει: 5. αὐτὸς δὲ ἐτραυματίσθη διὰ τὰς ἁμαρτίας ἡμῶν καὶ μεμαλακίσται διὰ τὰς ἁμομίας ἡμῶν. παιδεία εἰρήνης ἡμῶν ἐπ' αὐτόν: τῷ μῶλωπι αὐτοῦ ἡμεῖς ἵθημεν. 6. πάντες ὡς πρόβατα ἐπλανήθημεν, ἀνθρωπος τῇ ὅδῳ αὐτοῦ ἐπλανήθη: 7. καὶ κύριος παρέδωκεν αὐτὸν ὑπὲρ τῶν ἁμαρτίων ἡμῶν, καὶ αὐτὸς διὰ τὸ κεκακώσθαι οὐκ ἄνοιξε τὸ στόμα. ὡς πρόβατον ἐπὶ σφαγῆν ἤχηθα, καὶ ὡς ἡμῶν ἐναντίον τοῦ κείραντος ἄφωνος, οὕτως οὐκ ἄνοιξε τὸ στόμα αὐτοῦ. 8. ἐν τῇ ταπεινώσει ἡ κρίσις αὐτοῦ ἤρθη. 9. τὴν γενεᾶν αὐτοῦ
1. For Christ is of those who are humble-minded, not of those who exalt themselves over His flock. The humility of Christ

2. The sceptre of the greatness of God, the Lord Jesus Christ, came not with the pomp of pride or of arrogance, for all his power, but was humble-minded, as the Holy Spirit spake concerning him. For it says, 3. "Lord, who has believed our report, and to whom was the arm of the Lord revealed? We declared him before the Lord as a child, as a root in thirsty ground; there is no form in him, nor glory, and we saw him, and he had neither form nor beauty, but his form was without honour, less than the form of man, a man living among stripes and toil, and acquainted with the endurance of weakness; for his face was turned away, he was dishonoured, and not esteemed. 4. He it is who beareth our sins, and is pained for us, and we regarded him as subject to pain, and stripes and affliction, 5. but he was wounded for our sins and he has suffered for our iniquities. The chastisement of our peace was upon him; with his bruises were we healed. 6. All we like sheep went astray, each man went astray in his path; 7. and the Lord delivered him up for our sins, and he openeth not his mouth because of his affliction. As a sheep he was brought to the slaughter, and as a lamb dumb before its shearer, so he openeth not his mouth. In humiliation his judgment was taken away. 8. Who shall declare
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

τίς διηγήσεται; ὃτι αἰρεται ἀπὸ τῆς γῆς ἡ ζωὴ αὐτοῦ. 9. ἀπὸ τῶν ἀνομίων τοῦ λαοῦ μου ἤμει εἰς θάνατον. 10. καὶ δώσω τοὺς πονηροὺς ἀντὶ τῆς ταφῆς αὐτοῦ καὶ τοὺς πλουσίους ἀντὶ τοῦ θανάτου αὐτοῦ· ὅτι ἀνομίαν οὐκ ἔποιησεν, οὐδὲ εὐρέθη δόλος ἐν τῷ στόματι αὐτοῦ. καὶ κύριος βούλεται καθαρίσαι αὐτὸν τῆς πληγῆς. 11. ἔαν δῷ τε περὶ ἀμαρτίας, ἡ ψυχὴ ὑμῶν ὅφεται σπέρμα μακρόβιοι. 12. καὶ κύριος βούλεται ἀφελεῖν ἀπὸ τοῦ πόνου τῆς ψυχῆς αὐτοῦ, δείξαι αὐτῷ φῶς καὶ πλάσαι τῇ συνέσει, δικαιώσω δίκαιον εὖ δουλεύοντα πολλοῖς. καὶ τὰς ἀμαρτίας αὐτῶν αὐτὸς ἀνοίσει. 13. διὰ τούτο αὐτὸς κληρονομήσει πολλοῖς καὶ τῶν ἱσχυρῶν μερεῖς σκῦλα· ἀνθ' ὅν παρεδόθη εἰς θάνατον ἡ ψυχὴ αὐτοῦ, καὶ ἐν τοῖς ἀνόμοις ἐλογίσθη. 14. καὶ αὐτὸς ἀμαρτίας πολλῶν ἀνήνεγκεν καὶ διὰ τὰς ἀμαρτίας αὐτῶν παρεδόθη. 15. καὶ πάλιν αὐτὸς φησίν· Ἐγώ δὲ εἰμι σκώληξ καὶ οὐκ ἀνθρώπος, ὁνείδος ἀνθρώπων καὶ ἐξουθένημα λαῶν. 16. πάντες οἱ θεωροῦντες με ἐξεμνυστήρισάν με, ἐλάλησαν ἐν χείλεσιν, ἐκίνησαν κεφάλήν. Ἡλπίσεως ἐπὶ κύριον, ρυσάσθω αὐτῶν, σωσάτω αὐτῶν, ὅτι θέλει αὐτῶν. 17. ὁρᾷ, ἀνδρεῖς ἀγαπητοί, τίς ὁ ὑπογραμμὸς ὁ δεδομένος ἦμων· εἰ γὰρ ὁ κύριος οὕτως ἐταπεινοφόρησεν, τί ποιήσωμεν ἡμεῖς οἱ ὑπὸ τὸν ξυγὸ τῆς χάριτος αὐτοῦ δι' αὐτοῦ ἐλθόντες;

Ps. 22, 6-8

36
I. CLEMENT, xvi. 8–xvi. 17

his generation? For his life is taken away from the earth. 9. For the iniquities of my people is he come to death. 10. And I will give the wicked for his burial, and the rich for his death; for he wrought no iniquity, nor was guile found in his mouth. And the Lord's will is to purify him from stripes. 11. If ye make an offering for sin, your soul shall see a long-lived seed. 12. And the Lord's will is to take of the toil of his soul, to show him light and to form him with understanding, to justify a righteous man who serveth many well. And he himself shall bear their sins. 13. For this reason shall he inherit many, and he shall share the spoils of the strong; because his soul was delivered to death, and he was reckoned among the transgressors. 14. And he bore the sins of many, and for their sins was he delivered up." 15. And again he says himself, "But I am a worm and no man, a reproach of men, and despised of the people. 16. All they who saw me mocked me, they spoke with their lips, they shook their heads; He hoped on the Lord, let him deliver him, let him save him, for he hath pleasure in him." 17. You see, Beloved, what is the example which is given to us; for if the Lord was thus humble-minded, what shall we do, who through him have come under the yoke of his grace?
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

XVII

Hob. 11, 37
1. Μιμηται γενόμεθα κάκεινοι, δότινες εις δερμασιν αἰγείοις και μηλωταις περιπετητας κηρύσσοντες την ἔλευσιν του Χριστου· λέγομεν δὲ Ἡλίαν καὶ Ελισαίε, ἐτι δὲ καὶ Ἰεζεκιήλ, τους προφητας· πρὸς τούτους καὶ τους μεμαρτυρημένους.

Gen. 18, 27
2. ἐμαρτυρήθη μεγάλως Ἀβραάμ καὶ φίλος προσηγορεύθη τοῦ θεοῦ, καὶ λέγει ἀτενίζων εἰς τὴν δόξαν τοῦ θεοῦ ταπεινοφρονών· Ἐγὼ δὲ εἰμὶ γῆ καὶ σποδός. 3. ἐτι δὲ καὶ περὶ Ἰωβ ὦτως γέγραπται· Ἰωβ δὲ ἦν δίκαιος καὶ ἀμεμπτος, ἀληθινός, θεοσεβής, ἀπεχομένος ἀπὸ παντὸς κακοῦ. 4. ἀληθινοὶ εαυτοῦ κατηγορεῖ λέγοντες· Οὐδεὶς καθαρὸς ἀπὸ ρύπου, οὐδὲ ἄν μιᾶς ἡμέρας ἢ

Job 1, 1
5. Μωϋσῆς πιστὸς ἐν ὅλω τῷ οἴκῳ αὐτοῦ ἐκλήθη, καὶ διὰ τῆς ὑπηρεσίας αὐτοῦ ἐκρίσεων ὁ θεός Αἴγυπτον διὰ τῶν μαστίγων καὶ τῶν αἰκισμάτων αὐτῶν· ἀλλὰ κάκεινος δοξασθεὶς μεγάλως ὅυκ ἐμεγαλορθήσησεν, ἀλλ' εἶπεν ἐκ τῆς βάτου χρηματισμοῦ αὐτὸ διδομένου. Τίς εἰμι εἶγο, ὅτι με πέμπετε; Ἐγὼ δὲ εἰμὶ ἰσχυρόφωνος καὶ βραδύγλωςτος. 6. καὶ πάλιν λέγει· Ἐγὼ δὲ εἰμὶ ἀτμίς ἀπὸ κύθρας.

XVIII

Job 14, 4, 5
Ps. 80, 20; Acts 13, 22
Num. 12, 7
Heb. 3, 2
Exod. 3, 11; 4, 10
Ps. 51, 1–17

1. Τι δὲ εἴπωμεν ἐπὶ τῷ μεμαρτυρημένῳ Δανείδ; ἐφ' οὖν εἶπεν ὁ θεός· Εὐρυν ἄνδρα κατὰ τὴν καρδίαν μου, Δανείδ τὸν τοῦ Ἰεσσαί, ἐν ἐλεεὶ αἰωνίω ἔχρισα αὐτὸν. 2. ἀλλὰ καὶ αὐτὸς λέγει πρὸς τὸν θεού· Ἐλέησόν με, ὁ θεός, κατὰ τὸ μέγα

1 So L Clem. ἐρρ δὲ ἌΚΣ.
XVII

1. Let us also be imitators of those who went about "in the skins of goats and sheep," heralding the coming of Christ; we mean Elijah and Elisha, and moreover Ezekiel, the prophets, and in addition to them the famous men of old. 2. Great fame was given to Abraham, and he was called the Friend of God, and he, fixing his gaze in humility on the Glory of God, says "But I am dust and ashes." 3. Moreover it is also written thus concerning Job:—"Now Job was righteous and blameless, true, a worshipper of God, and kept himself from all evil." 4. But he accuses himself, saying, "No man is clean from defilement, not even if his life be but for a single day." 5. Moses was called "Faithful with all his house," and through his ministry God judged Egypt with their scourges and torments; but he, though he was given great glory, did not use great words, but, when an oracle was given to him from the bush, said:—"Who am I that thou sendest me? Nay, I am a man of feeble speech, and a slow tongue." 6. And again he says, "But I am as smoke from a pot."

XVIII

1. But what shall we say of the famous David? Of him said God, "I have found a man after my own heart, David the son of Jesse, I have anointed him with eternal mercy;" 2. but he too says to God "Have mercy upon me, O God, according to thy
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

έλεος σου, καὶ κατὰ τὸ πλῆθος τῶν οἴκτιρμῶν σου ἐξάλειψον τὸ ἀνόμημα μου. 3. ἐπὶ πλείου πλῦνον μὲ ἀπὸ τῆς ἀνομίας μου, καὶ ἀπὸ τῆς ἀμαρτίας μου καθάρισον με· ὅτι τήν ἀνομίαν μου ἐγὼ γινώσκω, καὶ ἡ ἀμαρτία μου ἐνώπιον μου ἑστὶν διαπαντὸς. 4. σοὶ μόνῳ ἡμαρτον, καὶ τὸ πονηρὸν ἐνόπτιον σου ἐποίησα, ὅπως ἂν δικαιωθῆσαι ἐν τοῖς λόγοις σου, καὶ νικήσῃς ἐν τῷ κρίνεσθαι σε. 5. ἴδοι γὰρ ἐν ἀνομίαις συνελήμφθην, καὶ ἐν ἀμαρτίαις ἐκίσσεσέν με ἡ μήτηρ μου. 6. ἴδοι γὰρ ἀλῆθειαν ἡγάπησας· τὰ ἄδηλα καὶ τὰ κρύφια τῆς σοφίας σου ἐδήλωσάς μοι. 7. ῥαντίεις μὲ ὠσπότω, καὶ καθαρισθήσομαι· πλυνεῖς με, καὶ ὑπὲρ χίωνα λευκαθήσομαι. 8. ἀκουτίεις με ἀγαλλιάσω καὶ εὑροςύνην. ἀγαλλιάσωσαι ὅστα τεταπεινωμένα. 9. ἀπόστρεψον τὸ πρόσωπόν σου ἀπὸ τῶν ἀμαρτίων μου, καὶ πάσας τὰς ἀνομίας μου ἐξάλειψον. 10. καρδίαν καθαρὰν κτίσον ἐν ἐμοί, ὁ θεός, καὶ πνεῦμα εὐθές ἐγκαίνισον ἐν τοῖς ἐγκάτοις μου. 11. μὴ ἀπορέησης με ἀπὸ τὸ προσώπον σου, καὶ τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἄγιον σου μὴ ἀντανέλης ἀπ' ἐμοῦ. 12. ἀπόδοσ μοι τὴν ἀγαλλίασιν τοῦ σωτηρίου σου, καὶ πνεῦματι ἡγεμονικῷ στήρισόν με. 13. διδάξω ἀνόμους τὰς ὀδοὺς σου, καὶ ἀσέβεις ἐπιστρέψουσιν ἐπὶ σέ. 14. ῥῦσαι με ἐξ αἰμάτων, ὁ θεός, ὁ θεὸς τῆς σωτηρίας μου. 15. ἀγαλλιάσεται ἡ γλῶσσά μου τὴν δικαιοσύνην σου. κύριε, τὸ στόμα μου ἀνοίξεις, καὶ τὰ χείλη μου ἀναγγελεῖ τὴν αἰνείων σου. 16. ὅτι εἰ ἡθέλησας θυσίαν, ἔδωκα ἀν· ολοκαυτώματα ὑμένευδοκήσεις. 17. θυσία τῷ θεῷ πνεῦμα συντετριμμένον· καρδίαν συντετριμμένην καὶ τεταπεινωμένην ὁ θεὸς ὑμῖν ἐξουθενώσει. 40
great mercy, and according to the multitude of thy compassions, blot out my transgression. 3. Wash me yet more from mine iniquity, and cleanse me from my sin; for I know my iniquity, and my sin is ever before me. 4. Against thee only did I sin, and did evil before thee, that thou mightest be justified in thy words, and mightest overcome when thou art judged. 5. For, lo, I was conceived in iniquity, and in sin did my mother bear me. 6. For, behold, thou hast loved truth, thou didst make plain to me the secret and hidden things of thy wisdom. 7. Thou shalt sprinkle me with hyssop, and I shall be cleansed; thou shalt wash me, and I shall be whiter than snow. 8. Thou shalt make me hear joy and gladness; the bones which have been humbled shall rejoice. 9. Turn thy face from my sins, and blot out all mine iniquities. 10. Create a clean heart in me, O God, and renew a right spirit in my inmost parts. 11. Cast me not away from thy presence, and take not thy Holy Spirit from me. 12. Give me back the gladness of thy salvation, strengthen me with thy governing spirit. 13. I will teach the wicked thy ways, and the ungodly shall be converted unto thee. 14. Deliver me from blood-guiltiness, O God, the God of my salvation. 15. My tongue shall rejoice in thy righteousness. O Lord, thou shalt open my mouth, and my lips shall tell of thy praise. 16. For if thou hadst desired sacrifice, I would have given it; in whole burnt offerings thou wilt not delight. 17. The sacrifice unto God is a broken spirit, a broken and a humbled heart God shall not despise."
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

XIX

1. Τῶν τοσούτων οὖν καὶ τοιούτων οὕτως μεμαρτυρημένων τὸ ταπεινόφρον καὶ τὸ ύποδεές διὰ τῆς ύπακοῆς οὐ μόνον ἡμᾶς, ἀλλὰ καὶ τὰς πρὸ ἡμῶν γενεὰς βελτίως ἐποίησεν, τούς τε κατα-

dεξαμένους τὰ λόγια αὐτοῦ ἐν φόβῳ καὶ ἀληθείᾳ.

2. πολλῶν οὖν καὶ μεγάλων καὶ ἐνδόξων μετείλη-

φότες πράξεων ἐπαναδράμωμεν ἐπὶ τὸν ἐξ ἀρχῆς

παραδεδομένων ἡμῖν τῆς εἰρήνης σκοπόν, καὶ

ἀνενόσωμεν εἰς τὸν πατέρα καὶ κτίστην τοῦ

σύμπαντος κόσμου καὶ ταῖς μεγαλοπρεπείσας καὶ

ὑπερβαλλούσας αὐτοῦ δορεάς τῆς εἰρήνης εὐεργε-

σίαις τε κολληθῶμεν. 3. ἰδοὺςιν αὐτὸν κατὰ

dιάνοιαν καὶ ἐμβλέψωμεν τοῖς ὀμμασίν τῆς ψυχῆς

eἰς τὸ μακρόθυμον αὐτοῦ βούλημα· νοήσωμεν, τῶν

ἀόργητος ὕπάρχει πρὸς πᾶσαν τὴν κτίσιν αὐτοῦ.

XX

1. Οἱ οὖραν τῇ διωικήσει αὐτοῦ σαλευόμενοι

ἐν εἰρήνῃ ὑποτάσσονται αὐτῷ. 2. ἡμέρα τε καὶ

νυξ τὸν τεταγμένον ύπ’ αὐτοῦ δρόμον διανύσσων,

μηδὲν ἀλλήλοις ἐμποδίζοντα. 3. ἤλιος τε καὶ

σελήνη, άστέρων τε χοροῖ κατὰ τὰ διαταγήν

αὐτοῦ ἐν ὀμονοίᾳ δίχα πάσης παρεκβάσεως

ἐξελίσσουσιν τοὺς ἐπιτεταγμένους αὐτοῖς ὀρίσμοις.

4. γῆ κυνοφοροῦσα κατὰ τὸ θέλημα αὐτοῦ τοῖς

ἰδίοις καυροῖς τὴν πανπληθή ἀνθρώποις τε καὶ

θηροῖ καὶ πᾶσιν τοῖς οὐσίων ἐπ’ αὐτῆς ζωῖς ἀνα-

tέλεσι τροφῆς, μὴ διχοστατοῦσα μηδὲ ἀλλοιούσα
I. CLEMENT, xix. i–xx. 4

XIX

1. The humility and obedient submission of so many men of such great fame, have rendered better not only us, but also the generations before us, who received his oracles in fear and truth. 2. Seeing then that we have received a share in many great and glorious deeds, let us hasten on to the goal of peace, which was given us from the beginning, and let us fix our gaze on the Father and Creator of the whole world and cleave to his splendid and excellent gifts of peace, and to his good deeds to us. 3. Let us contemplate him with our mind, let us gaze with the eyes of our soul on his long-suffering purpose, let us consider how free from wrath he is towards all his creatures.

XX

1. The heavens moving at his appointment are subject to him in peace; 2. day and night follow the course allotted by him without hindering each other. 3. Sun and moon and the companies of the stars roll on, according to his direction, in harmony, in their appointed courses, and swerve not from them at all. 4. The earth teems according to his will at its proper seasons, and puts forth food in full abundance for men and beasts and all the living things that are on it, with no dissension, and changing
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

τι τῶν δεδοματισμένων ὑπ’ αὐτοῦ. 6. ἀβύσσων τε ἀνεξιχνίαστα καὶ νερτέρων ἀνεκδιήγητα κλίματα
τοὺς αὐτοῖς συνέχεται προστάγμασιν. 6. τὸ κύτος τῆς ἀπείρου βαλάσσης κατὰ τὴν δημοουργίαν
αὐτοῦ συνταθὲν εἰς τὰς συναγωγὰς οὐ παρεκβαίνει
tὰ περιτεθείμενα αὐτῇ κλείθρα, ἀλλὰ καθὼς
dιέταξεν αὐτῇ, οὕτως ποιεῖ. 7. εἰπεν γάρ Ἔως
δόθη ἤξεις, καὶ τὰ κύματα σου ἐν σοὶ συντριβή-
σεται. 8. ὥσειας ἀπέραντος ἀνθρώπως καὶ οἱ
μετ’ αὐτὸν κόσμοι ταῖς αὐταῖς ταγάς τοῦ δεσπότου
dιενεύουνται. 9. καιροὶ ἑαρνιοὶ καὶ θερινοὶ καὶ
μετοπωρινοὶ καὶ χειμερινοὶ ἐν εἰρήνῃ μεταταρα-
dιδόσιν ἄλλοις. 10. ἀνέμοι σταθμοὶ κατὰ
tὸν ἱδίον καιρὸν τὴν λειτουργίαν αὐτῶν ἀπο-
σκόπως ἐπιτελοῦσιν ἀέναοι τε πηγαί, πρὸς
ἀπόλαυσιν καὶ ὑγείαν δημοουργηθεῖσαι, δίχα
έλλειψες παρέχονται τοὺς πρὸς ζωῆς ἀνθρώ-
poīs μαζών: τὰ τε ἐλάχιστα τῶν ζωῶν τὰς
συνελεύσεις αὐτῶν ἐν ὁμονοία καὶ εἰρήνῃ ποιοῦνται.
11. ταῦτα πάντα ὁ μέγας δημοουργὸς καὶ δεσπότης
tῶν ἀπάντων ἐν εἰρήνῃ καὶ ὁμονοίᾳ προσέταξεν
ἴναι, εὐεργετῶν τὰ πάντα, ὑπερεκπερισσῶς δὲ
ἡμᾶς τοὺς προσπεριφευγότας τοῖς πολεμιμοῖς αὐτοῦ
diὰ τοῦ κυρίου ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, 12. Ἄ ἡ
δόξα καὶ ἡ μεγαλωσύνη εἰς τοὺς αἰώνας τῶν
αἰώνων. ἀμήν.

1 κλίματα AC, qui situ (sic) L, “boundaries” K. The emendation given in the text seems the most probable treatment of the difficulty.
I. CLEMENT, xx. 4–xx. 12

none of his decrees. 5. The unsearchable places of the abysses and the unfathomable realms of the lower world are controlled by the same ordinances. 6. The hollow of the boundless sea is gathered by his working into its allotted places, and does not pass the barriers placed around it, but does even as he enjoined on it; 7. for he said "Thus far shalt thou come, and thy waves shall be broken within thee." 8. The ocean, which men cannot pass, and the worlds beyond it, are ruled by the same injunctions of the Master. 9. The seasons of spring, summer, autumn, and winter give place to one another in peace. 10. The stations of the winds fulfil their service without hindrance at the proper time. The everlasting springs, created for enjoyment and health, supply sustenance for the life of man without fail; and the smallest of animals meet together in concord and peace. 11. All these things did the great Creator and Master of the universe ordain to be in peace and concord, and to all things does he do good, and more especially to us who have fled for refuge to his mercies through our Lord Jesus Christ, 12. to whom¹ be the glory and the majesty for ever and ever, Amen.

¹ The Latin has per quem deo et patri, "through whom to God and the Father."
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

XXI

1. Ὄρατε, ἀγαπητοί, μὴ αἱ ἐνεργεῖσαι αὐτοῦ ἀι πολλαὶ γένωνται εἰς κρίμα ἡμῖν, ἕαυν μὴ ἀξίως αὐτοῦ πολιτευόμενοι τὰ καλὰ καὶ εὐάρεστα ἐνώπιον αὐτοῦ ποιῶμεν μεθ’ ὁμονοίας. 2. λέγει γὰρ πον. Πνεῦμα κυρίου λύχνος ἑρευνῶν τὰ ταμεῖα τῆς γαστρός. 3. ἢδομεν, πῶς ἐγγὺς ἐστιν, καὶ ὅτι οὐδὲν λέληθεν αὐτὸν τῶν ἐννοιῶν ἡμῶν οὐδὲ τῶν διάλογισμῶν ὧν ποιοῦμεθα. 4. δίκαιον οὖν ἐστιν μὴ λειποτακτεῖν ἡμᾶς ἀπὸ τοῦ θελήματος αὐτοῦ. 5. μᾶλλον ἀνθρώποις ἁφροσυ καὶ ἀνοητοῖς καὶ ἐπαιρομένοις καὶ ἐγκαυχομένοις ἐν ἀλαξονείᾳ τοῦ λόγου αὐτῶν προσκόπωμεν ἢ τῷ θεῷ. 6. τῶν κυρίων Ἰησοῦν Χριστόν, οὐ τὸ αἷμα ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν ἔδοθη, ἐντραπῶμεν, τοὺς προηγούμενους ἡμῶν αἰδεσθῶμεν, τοὺς πρεσβυτέρους τιμῆσομεν, τοὺς νέους παιδεύσωμεν τὴν παιδείαν τοῦ φοβου τοῦ θεοῦ, τὰς γυναικας ἡμῶν ἐπὶ τὸ ἀγαθὸν διορθωσμέθα. 7. τὸ ἀξιαγάπητον τῆς ἀγνείας ὃθος ἐνδεξιάσθωσαν, τὸ ἀκέραιον τῆς πραύτητος αὐτῶν βούλημα ἀποδεικτῶσαν, τὸ ἐπιεικὲς τῆς γλώσσης αὐτῶν διὰ τῆς συγῆς φανερον ποιησάτωσαν, τὴν ἀγάπην αὐτῶν μὴ κατὰ προσκλίσεις, ἀλλὰ πᾶσιν τοῖς φοβουμένοις τῶν θεῶν ὄσίως ἐσην παρεχέτωσαν. 8. τὰ τέκνα ἡμῶν τῆς ἐν Χριστῷ παιδείας μεταλαμβανέτωσαν, μαθήτωσαν, τὰ ταπεινοφροσύνη παρὰ θεῷ ἵσχυε, τὴν ἀγάπην ἄγνη παρὰ θεῷ δύναται, πῶς ὁ φόβος αὐτοῦ καλὸς καὶ μέγας καὶ

1 A(C) read κρίμα πᾶσιν ἡμῖν.
2 L implies ηδομεν (sciamus), “let us know.”
XXI

1. Take heed, beloved, lest his many good works towards us become a judgment on us, if we do not good and virtuous deeds before him in concord, and be citizens worthy of him. 2. For he says in one place:—"The Spirit of the Lord is a lamp searching the inward parts." 3. Let us observe how near he is, and that nothing escapes him of our thoughts or of the devices which we make. 4. It is right, therefore, that we should not be deserters from his will. 5. Let us offend foolish and thoughtless men, who are exalted and boast in the pride of their words, rather than God. 6. Let us reverence the Lord Jesus Christ, whose blood was given for us, let us respect those who rule us, let us honour the aged,¹ let us instruct the young in the fear of God, let us lead our wives to that which is good. 7. Let them exhibit the lovely habit of purity, let them show forth the innocent will of meekness, let them make the gentleness of their tongue manifest by their silence, let them not give their affection by factious preference, but in holiness to all equally who fear God. 8. Let our children share in the instruction which is in Christ, let them learn the strength of humility before God, the power of pure love before God, how beautiful and great is his fear and how it

¹ Or possibly "the Presbyters," but the context makes this improbable.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

σώζων πάντας τοὺς ἐν αὐτῷ ὅσίως ἀναστρέφομένους ἐν καθαρᾷ διάνοιᾳ. 9. ἐρευνητὴς γὰρ ἐστιν ἐννοιῶν καὶ ἐνθύμησεων οὕτω πνοὴ αὐτοῦ ἐν ἡμῖν ἐστίν, καὶ ὅταν θέλῃ, ἀνελεῖ αὐτὴν.

XXII

1. Ταῦτα δὲ πάντα βεβαιοὶ ἐν Χριστῷ πίστει· καὶ γὰρ αὐτὸς διὰ τοῦ πνεύματος τοῦ ἀγίου οὕτως προσκαλεῖται ἡμᾶς. Δεῦτε, τέκνα, ἀκούσατε μου, φῶς τοῦ κυρίου διαδόχων ἡμᾶς. 2. τίς ἐστιν ἀνθρωπὸς ὁ θέλων ζωήν, ἀγαπῶν ἁμέρας ἰδεῖν ἀγαθάς; 3. παῦσον τὴν γλῶσσάν σου ἀπὸ κακοῦ, καὶ χείλη σου τῷ μὴ λαλῆσαι δόλου. 4. ἔκκλινον ἀπὸ κακοῦ, καὶ πολίσθην ἀγαθόν. 5. ξητήσον εἰρήνην, καὶ δίωξον αὐτήν. 6. ὁθαλμοὶ κυρίου ἐπὶ δικαίους, καὶ ὅτα αὐτοῦ πρὸς δέχεσθαι αὐτῶν πρόσωπον ἐπὶ κυρίου ἐπὶ ποιοῦντας κακά, τὸ ἐξολθέρεσά τε ἐκ γῆς τὸ μνημόσυνον αὐτῶν. 7. ἐκέκραξεν ὁ δικαῖος, καὶ ὁ κύριος εἰσήκουσεν αὐτοῦ, καὶ ἐκ πασῶν τῶν θλίψεων αὐτοῦ ἐρύσατο αὐτὸν. 8. Πολλαὶ αἱ μάστιγες τοῦ ἀμαρτωλοῦ, τοὺς δὲ ἑλπίζοντας ἐπὶ κυρίου ἔλεος κυκλώσει.

XXIII

1. ὁ ὀικτήρμων κατὰ πάντα καὶ ἐνεργετικὸς πατήρ ἔχει σπλάγχνα ἐπὶ τοὺς φοβουμένους αὐτοῦ, ἡπίως τε καὶ προσημόστας χάριτας αὐτοῦ

---

1 S adds πολλαὶ αἱ θλίψεις τοῦ δικαίου, καὶ ἐκ πασῶν αὐτῶν ρύσεται αὐτῶν ὁ κύριος, but the evidence of ACLK suggests that it is an insertion from the text of LXX; cf. I. Clem. XV. 5, and the note on the text.
I. CLEMENT, xxii. 8–xxiii. 1

gives salvation to all who live holily in it with a pure mind. 9. For he is a searcher of thoughts and desires; his breath is in us, and when he will he shall take it away.

XXII

1. Now the faith which is in Christ confirms all these things, for he himself through his Holy Spirit calls us thus:—“Come, Children, hearken to me, I will teach you the fear of the Lord. 2. Who is the man that desireth life, that loveth to see good days? 3. Make thy tongue cease from evil, and thy lips that they speak no guile. 4. Depart from evil, and do good. 5. Seek peace, and pursue it. 6. The eyes of the Lord are upon the righteous, and his ears are open to their petition; but the face of the Lord is against those that do evil, to destroy the memory of them from off the earth. 7. The righteous cried, and the Lord heard him, and delivered him out of all his afflictions.1 8. Many are the scourges of the sinner, but mercy shall encompass those that hope on the Lord.”

XXIII

1. The all-merciful and beneficent Father has compassion on those that fear him, and kindly and lovingly bestows his favours on those that draw near

1 The Editors (except Knopf) add as v. 8, “Many are the afflictions of the righteous and out of them all will the Lord deliver him.”
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

ἀποδιδοῖ τοῖς προσερχομένοις αὐτῷ ὑπλή διανοία. 2. διὸ μὴ διψυχῶμεν, μηδὲ ἴνδαλλέσθω ἡ ψυχή ἡμῶν ἐπὶ ταῖς ὑπερβαλλοῦσαι καὶ ἐνδόξοις δωρεαῖς αὐτοῦ. 3. πόρρω γενέσθω ἀφ’ ἡμῶν ἡ γραφὴ αὐτή, ὅπου λέγει: Ταλαίπωροί εἰσίν οἱ δίψυχοι, οἱ διστάζοντες τῇ ψυχῇ, οἱ λέγοντες: Ταύτα ἥκουσαμεν καὶ ἐπὶ τῶν πατέρων ἡμῶν, καὶ ἰδοὺ, γεγυμάκαμεν, καὶ οὐδὲν ἡμῖν τούτων συνβέβηκεν. 4. ὁ ἄνωθεν, συμβάλλετε ἑαυτοὺς ἐξ ὀλγῆς. λάβετε ἀμπελοῦν πρὸ των μὲν φυλλοροεῖ, εἶτα βλαστάσει γίνεται, εἶτα φύλλον, εἶτα ἀνθός, καὶ μετὰ ταύτα ὁμφαξί, εἶτα σταφυλὴ παρεστηκυία. ὅρατε, ὅτι ἐν καρπῷ ὁλίγῳ εἰς πέπειρον κατανυ connexion καρπὸς τοῦ ἦλον. 5. ἔτερω ἀλλείποις ταχύ καὶ ἐξαιρόντας τελειωθήσεται τὸ βούλημα αὐτοῦ, συνεργομαρτυροῦσθαι καὶ τῆς γραφῆς, ὅτι ταχύ ἤξει καὶ οὐ χρονεῖ, καὶ ἐξαιρόντας ἦξει ἡ κύριος εἰς τὸν ναὸν αὐτοῦ, καὶ ὁ ἄγιος, ὅτι ὑμεῖς προσδοκαίτε.

XXIV

1. Κατανοοῦσωμεν, ὁγαπητοῖ, πῶς ὁ δεσπότης ἐπιδείκνυται διηνεκῶς ἡμῖν τὴν μέλλουσαν ἀνάστασιν ἑσεθάθαι, ἃς τὴν ἀπαρχὴν ἐποίησατο τὸν κύριον Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν ἐκ νεκρῶν ἀναστήσας. 2. ἰδομεν, ἀγαπητοῖ, τὴν κατὰ καιρὸν γινομένην ἀνάστασιν. 3. ἡμέρα καὶ νῦς ἀνάστασιν ἡμῖν δηλοῦσιν κοιμᾶται ἡ νῦς ἀνάσταται ἡ ἡμέρα. ἡ ἡμέρα ἀπείρισιν, νῦς ἑπέρχεται. 4. λάβωμεν τοὺς καρποὺς.
to him with a simple mind. 2. Wherefore let us not be double-minded, nor let our soul be fanciful concerning his excellent and glorious gifts. 3. Let this Scripture be far from us in which he says "Wretched are the double-minded, who doubt in their soul and say 'We have heard these things even in the days of our fathers, and behold we have grown old, and none of these things has happened to us.' 4. Oh, foolish men, compare yourself to a tree: take a vine, first it sheds its leaves, then there comes a bud, then a leaf, then a flower, and after this the unripe grape, then the full bunch."¹ See how in a little time the fruit of the tree comes to ripeness. 5. Truly his will shall be quickly and suddenly accomplished, as the Scripture also bears witness that "he shall come quickly and shall not tarry; and the Lord shall suddenly come to his temple, and the Holy One for whom ye look."

XXIV

1. Let us consider, beloved, how the Master continually proves to us that there will be a future resurrection, of which he has made the first-fruits, by raising the Lord Jesus Christ from the dead. 2. Let us look, beloved, at the resurrection which is taking place at its proper season. 3. Day and night show us a resurrection. The night sleeps, the day arises: the day departs, night comes on. 4. Let us take the crops: how and in what way does the

¹ This quotation which is also found in II. Clem. 11, 2, cannot be identified. Some think it is from the lost apocalypse of Eldad and Modad. Cf. Hermas, Vis. 2, 3.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

Mk. 4, 8 and cf. I Cor. 15, 80 ff.

ο σπόρος πώς καὶ τίνα τρόπον γίνεται; 5. ἔξηλθεν ὁ σπείρων καὶ ἔβαλεν εἰς τὴν γῆν ἐκαστον τῶν σπερμάτων, ἀτιμα πεσόντα εἰς τὴν γῆν ξηρὰ καὶ γυμνὰ διαλύεται. εἰτ' ἐκ τῆς διαλύσεως ἡ μεγα- λειότης τῆς προνοίας του δεσπότου ἀνίστησιν αὐτά, καὶ ἐκ τοῦ ἐνὸς πλείονα αὐξεῖ καὶ ἐκφέρει καρπόν.

XXV

1. Ἡδομεν τὸ παράδοξον σημεῖον τὸ γινόμενον ἐν τοῖς ἀνατολικοὶς τόποις, τούτεστιν τοῖς περὶ τὴν 'Αραβίαν. 2. ὁρνεω γὰρ ἔστιν, ὁ προσονο-

μάζεται φοινιξ· τοῦτο μονογενὴς ὑπάρχων ζῇ ἐν ἡ πεντακόσια, γενόμενον τε ἡδη πρὸς ἀπόλυσιν τοῦ ἀποθανείν αὐτό, σηκον ἐαυτῷ ποιεὶ ἐκ λιβάνου καὶ σμύρνης καὶ τῶν λοιπῶν ἀρωμάτων, εἰς ὅν πληρω-

θέντος τοῦ χρόνου εἰςερχέται καὶ τελευτᾷ. 3. σηπομένης δὲ τῆς σαρκὸς σκώλης τῆς γεννᾶται, ὅσοι ἐκ τῆς ἴκμάδος τοῦ τετελευτηκότος ζῶον ἀνατρε-

φόμενος πτεροφυεί· εἶτα γενναίος γενόμενος αἱρεῖ τὸν σηκὸν ἐκεῖνον, ὅποι τὰ ὅστα τοῦ προγεγομένου ἔστιν, καὶ ταῦτα βαστάζουν διανύει ἀπὸ τῆς Ἀρα-

βικῆς χώρας ἔως τῆς Αἰγύπτου ἐις τὴν λεγομένην Ἡλιούπολιν, 4. καὶ ἡμέρας, ἑλεπόντων πάντων, ἐπιπτᾶς ἐπὶ τῶν τοῦ ἡλίου βωμῶν τίθησιν αὐτά καὶ ὅτως εἰς τούτοις ἀφορμά. 5. οἱ οὖν ἱερεῖς ἐπισκέπτονται τὰς ἀναγραφὰς τῶν χρόνων καὶ εὑρίσκουσιν αὐτὸν πεντακοσίοντο ἔτους πεπλη-

ρωμένον ἐληλυθέναι.
sowing take place? 5. "The sower went forth" and cast each of the seeds into the ground, and they fall on to the ground, parched and bare, and suffer decay; then from their, decay the greatness of the providence of the Master raises them up, and from one grain more grow and bring forth fruit.

XXV

1. Let us consider the strange sign which takes place in the East, that is in the districts near Arabia. 2. There is a bird which is called the Phoenix. This is the only one of its kind, and lives 500 years; and when the time of its dissolution in death is at hand, it makes itself a sepulchre of frankincense and myrrh and other spices, and when the time is fulfilled it enters into it and dies. 3. Now, from the corruption of its flesh there springs a worm, which is nourished by the juices of the dead bird, and puts forth wings. Then, when it has become strong, it takes up that sepulchre, in which are the bones of its predecessor, and carries them from the country of Arabia as far as Egypt until it reaches the city called Heliopolis, 4. and in the daylight in the sight of all it flies to the altar of the Sun, places them there, and then starts back to its former home. 5. Then the priests inspect the registers of dates, and they find that it has come at the fulfilment of the 500th year.¹

¹ The same story, with variations, is found in Herodotus (ii. 73), Pliny (Nāt. Hist. x. 2), etc. It was supposed by Christians to be sanctioned by the LXX version of Ps. xcii. 12, where there is a confusion between φοίνιξ = phoenix, and φοίνιξ = palm tree.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

XXVI

1. Μέγα καὶ θαυμαστὸν οὖν νομίζομεν εἶναι, εἰ ὁ δημοσιογγος τῶν ἀπάντων ἀνάστασιν ποιήσεται τῶν ὀσίως αὐτῷ δουλευσάντων ἐν πεποιθήσει πίστεως ἀγαθῆς, ὅπου καὶ δὲ ὅρνεοι δείκνυσιν ἡμῖν τὸ μεγαλεῖον τῆς ἐπαγγελίας αὐτοῦ; 2. λέγει γὰρ ποῦ· Καὶ ἔξαναστήσεις με, καὶ ἐξομολογήσομαι σοι, καὶ· Ἐκοιμήθην καὶ ὑπνώσα, ἐξηγήρθην, ὅτι σὺ μετέ ἐμοί εἰ. 3. καὶ πάλιν Ἰωβ λέγει· Καὶ ἀναστήσεις τὴν σάρκα μου ταύτην τὴν ἀναντλήσασαν ταύτα πάντα.

XXVII

1. Ταύτην οὖν τῇ ἐλπίδι προσδεδέσθωσαν αἱ ψυχαὶ ἡμῶν τῷ πιστῷ ἐν ταῖς ἐπαγγελίαις καὶ τῷ δικαίῳ ἐν τοῖς κρίμασιν. 2. ὁ παραγγελωτὴς μὴ ψεύδεσθαι, πολλῷ μᾶλλον αὐτὸς οὐ ψεύσεται· οὐδὲν γὰρ ἀδύνατον παρὰ τῷ θεῷ εἰ μὴ τὸ ψεύδησθαι. 3. ἀναζωπυρησάτω οὖν ἡ πίστις αὐτοῦ ἐν ἡμῖν, καὶ νοήσωμεν ὅτι πάντα ἐγγὺς αὐτῷ ἐστίν. 4. ἐν λόγῳ τῆς μεγαλωσύνης αὐτοῦ συνεστήσατο τὰ πάντα, καὶ ἐν λόγῳ δύναται αὐτὰ καταστρέψαι. 5. Τής ἐρεί αὐτῷ· Τῇ ἐποίησας; ἡ τής ἀντιστήσεται τῷ κράτει τῆς ἱσχύος αὐτοῦ; ὅτε θέλει καὶ ὅσοι θέλει ποιήσει πάντα, καὶ οὐδὲν μὴ παρέλθη τῶν δεδοματωμένων ὑπ' αὐτοῦ. 6. πάντα ἐνώπιον αὐτοῦ εἰσίν, καὶ οὐδὲν λέλεηθεν τὴν βουλὴν αὐτοῦ, 7. εἰ οἱ οὐρανοί διηγοῦνται δόξαν θεοῦ,
I. CLEMENT, xxvi. i–xxvii. 7

XXVI

1. Do we then consider it a great and wonderful thing that the creator of the universe will bring about the resurrection of those who served him in holiness, in the confidence of a good faith, when he shows us the greatness of his promise even through a bird? 2. For he says in one place “And thou shalt raise me up, and I will praise thee,” and “I laid me down and slept, I rose up, for thou art with me.” 3. And again Job says “And thou shalt raise up this my flesh which has endured all these things.”

XXVII

1. In this hope then let our souls be bound to him who is faithful in his promises and righteous in his judgments. 2. He who has commanded not to lie shall much more not be a liar himself; for nothing is impossible with God save to lie. 3. Let therefore faith in him be kindled again in us, and let us consider that all things are near him. 4. By the word of his majesty did he establish all things, and by his word can he destroy them. 5. “Who shall say to him what hast thou done, or who shall resist the might of his strength?” When he will, and as he will, he will do all things, and none of his decrees shall pass away. 6. All is in his sight and nothing has escaped from his counsel, 7. since “The heavens declare the glory of God and the firmament
ΤΗΣ ΑΠΟΣΤΟΛΙΚΕΣ ΦΑΤΕΡΕΣ

ποιησιν δὲ χειρών αυτοῦ άναγγέλλει τὸ στερέωμα· ἡ ἡμέρα τῇ ἡμέρᾳ ἑρεύσεται ρήμα, καὶ νῦν νυκτὶ ἀναγγέλλει γνώσις· καὶ οὐκ εἰσὶν λόγοι οὐδὲ λαλιαί, διὸν οὐχὶ ἀκούονται αἱ φωναὶ αυτῶν.

XXVIII

1. Πάντων οὖν βλεπομένων καὶ ἀκονομένων, φοβηθῶμεν αυτὸν, καὶ ἀπολίπομεν φαύλων έργων μμαρας ἐπιθυμίας, ἵνα τῷ ἑλείς αὐτοῦ σκεπασθῶμεν ἀπὸ τῶν μελλόντων κριμάτων. 2. ποῦ γὰρ τις ἠμῶν δύναται φυγεῖν ἀπὸ τῆς κραταίας χειρός αυτοῦ; ποῖος δὲ κόσμος δέξεται τινα τῶν αὐτομολούντων ἀπ' αὐτοῦ; 3. λέγει γὰρ ποῦ τὸ γράφειν· Ποῦ ἀφήξω καὶ ποῦ κρυβήσομαι ἀπὸ τοῦ προσώπου σου; εὰν ἀναβῶ εἰς τὸν οὐρανὸν, σὺ ἐκεῖ εἰ; εὰν ἀπέλθω εἰς τὰ ἐσχάτα τῆς γῆς, ἐκεῖ ἡ δεξία σου· εὰν καταστρῶσω εἰς τὰς ἀβύσσους, ἐκεῖ τὸ πνεῦμά σου. 4. ποῦ οὖν τις ἀπέλθῃ ἡ ποῦ ἀποδράσῃ ἀπὸ τοῦ τὰ πάντα ἐμπεριέχοντος;

XXIX

1. Προσέλθωμεν οὖν αυτῷ ἐν ὀσιότητι ψυχῆς, ἀγνάς καὶ ἀμάντους χειρὰς αἴροντες πρὸς αὐτόν, ἀγαπῶντες τὸν ἐπιεική καὶ εὐσπλαγχνον πατέρα ἡμῶν, ὅσ ἐκλογῆς μέρος ἡμᾶς ἐποίησεν ἐαυτῷ. 2. οὕτω γὰρ γέγραπται· "Οτε διεμερίξεν ὁ ἴψιστος

56
I. CLEMENT, xxvii. 7–xxix. 2

telleth his handiwork, day uttereth speech unto day, and night telleth knowledge to night. And there are neither words nor speeches, and their voices are not heard."

XXVIII

1. Since then all things are seen and heard by him, let us fear him, and leave off from foul desires of evil deeds, that we may be sheltered by his mercy from the judgments to come. 2. For whither can any of us fly from his mighty hand? And what world shall receive those who seek to desert from him? 3. For the Writing says in one place: "Where shall I go and where shall I hide from thy presence? If I ascend into heaven thou art there, if I depart to the ends of the earth there is thy right hand; If I make my bed in the abyss there is thy spirit." 4. Whither then shall a man depart or where shall he escape from him who embraces all things?

XXIX

1. Let us then approach him in holiness of soul, raising pure and undefiled hands to him, loving our gracious and merciful Father, who has made us the portion of his choice for himself. 2. For thus it is written: "When the most high divided the nations,

1 An accurate quotation of an unintelligible sentence. τὸ γραφεῖον means the third division of the Jewish bible, sometimes called the "Hagiographa"; it was in a sense "Scripture" but not considered as important as the "Law" and the "Prophets."
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

1. Ἀγίου 1 οὖν μερὶς ὑπάρχοντες ποιήσωμεν τὰ τοῦ ἁγίασμοῦ πάντα, φεύγοντες καταλαλιάς, μιαρὰς τε καὶ ἀνάγνους συμπλοκάς, μέθας τε καὶ νεωτερισμοῦς καὶ βδελυκτᾶς ἐπιθυμίας, μυσερὰν μοιχείαν, βδελυκτὴν ὑπερφανίαν. 2. Θεὸς γὰρ, φησίν, ὑπερφάνοις ἀντιτάσσεται, ταπεινοὶ δὲ διδὼν χάριν. 3. κολληθῶμεν οὖν ἐκεῖνοι, οἷς ἡ χάρις ἀπὸ τοῦ θεοῦ δέδοται· ἐνδυσώμεθα τὴν ὀμόνωιν ταπεινοφρονοῦντες, ἐγκρατεύμενοι, ἀπὸ παντὸς ψυχρισμὸς καὶ καταλαλιάς πόρρω ἐαυτοῦς ποιοῦντες, ἐργοὶς δικαιοῦμενοι, μὴ 2 λόγοις.

4. λέγει γὰρ· ὁ τὰ πολλὰ λέγων καὶ ἀντακοῦσεται· ἢ ὁ εὐλαλος οἰτείσται εἶναι δίκαιος; 5. εὐλογημένως γεννητὸς γυναικὸς ὀλιγόβιος. μὴ πολὺς ἐν ρήμασιν γίνων. 6. ὁ ἐπαινοὺς ἡμῶν ἐστώ ἐν θεῷ καὶ μὴ ἐξ αὐτῶν· αὐτεπαίνετος γὰρ μοι ὑπείρων μερίς ὑπάρχοντες ποιήσωμεν τὰ τοῦ ἁγίασμοῦ πάντα, φεύγοντες καταλαλιάς, μιαρὰς τε καὶ ἀνάγνους συμπλοκάς, μέθας τε καὶ νεωτερισμοῦς καὶ βδελυκτᾶς ἐπιθυμίας, μυσερὰν μοιχείαν, βδελυκτὴν ὑπερφανίαν. 2. Θεὸς γὰρ, φησίν, ὑπερφάνοις ἀντιτάσσεται, ταπεινοὶ δὲ διδὼν χάριν. 3. κολληθῶμεν οὖν ἐκεῖνοι, οἷς ἡ χάρις ἀπὸ τοῦ θεοῦ δέδοται· ἐνδυσώμεθα τὴν ὀμόνωιν ταπεινοφρονοῦντες, ἐγκρατεύμενοι, ἀπὸ παντὸς ψυχρισμὸς καὶ καταλαλιάς πόρρω ἐαυτοῦς ποιοῦντες, ἐργοὶς δικαιοῦμενοι, μὴ 2 λόγοις.

1 A has ἀγίου ὅπως μερίς; C has ἁγία ὅπως μέρις; LS imply ἁγία ὅπως μερίς “a holy portion”; K represents ἀγίων ὅπως μέρις “portion of saints.”
2 μὴ CLK, καὶ μὴ AS.
I. CLEMENT, xxix. 2–xxx. 6

when he scattered the sons of Adam, he established the bounds of the nations according to the number of the angels of God. His people Jacob became the portion of the Lord, Israel was the lot of his inheritance." 3. And in another place he says "Behold the Lord taketh to himself a nation from the midst of nations, as a man taketh the first-fruit of his threshing-floor, and the Holy of Holies shall come forth from that nation." 1

XXX

1. Seeing then that we are the portion of one who is holy, let us do all the deeds of sanctification, fleeing from evil speaking, and abominable and impure embraces, drunkenness and youthful lusts, and abominable passion, detestable adultery, and abominable pride. 2. "For God," he says, "resisteth the proud but giveth grace to the humble." 3. Let us then join ourselves to those to whom is given grace from God; let us put on concord in meekness of spirit and continence, keeping ourselves far from all gossip and evil speaking, and be justified by deeds, not by words. 4. For he says "He that speaketh much shall also hear much; or doth he that is a good speaker think that he is righteous? 5. Blessed is he that is born of woman and hath a short life. Be not profuse in speech." 2 6. Let our praise be with God, and not from ourselves, for God hates

1 The passages quoted in the margin are those which most nearly resemble this quotation, but the difference is considerable, and Clement may be referring to some lost source.

2 The text is here obviously corrupt; but the corruption is in the LXX, not in Clement.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

θεός. 7. η μαρτυρία τῆς ἁγαθῆς πράξεως ἡμῶν διδόσθω ὑπ’ ἄλλων, καθὼς ἔδοθη τοῖς πατράσιν ἡμῶν τοῖς δικαίους. 8. θράσος καὶ αὐθάδεια καὶ τόλμα τοῖς κατηγραμένοις ὑπὸ τοῦ θεοῦ· ἐπιείκεια καὶ ταπεινοφροσύνη καὶ πραΰτης παρὰ τοῖς ἡμολογημένοις ὑπὸ τοῦ θεοῦ.

XXXI

1. Κολληθῶμεν οὖν τῇ εὐλογίᾳ αὐτοῦ καὶ ἰδωμεν, τίνες αἱ ὅδοι τῆς εὐλογίας. ἀνατυλίξωμεν τὰ ἀπ’ ἀρχῆς γενόμενα. 2. τίνος χάριν ἡλογήθη ὁ πατήρ ἡμῶν Ἄβρααμ, οὐχὶ δικαιοσύνην καὶ ἀλήθειαν διὰ πίστεως ποιήσας; 3. Ἰσαὰκ μετὰ πεποθῆσας γυνώσκων τὸ μέλλον ἡδέως προσήγετο θυσία. 4. Ἰακώβ μετὰ ταπεινοφροσύνης ἐξεχώρησεν τῆς γῆς αὐτοῦ δὲ ἀδελφὸν καὶ ἐπορεύθη πρὸς Ἀβαὰν καὶ ἐδούλευσεν, καὶ ἔδοθε αὐτῷ τὸ δωδεκάσκηπτρον τοῦ Ἰσραήλ.

XXXII

1. "Ὁ ἐὰν τις καθ’ ἐν ἑκαστοῦ εἰλικρινῶς κατανυστηῇ, ἐπιγυνώσεται μεγαλεία τῶν ὑπ’ αὐτοῦ δεδομένων δωρῶν. 2. ἐξ αὐτοῦ γὰρ ἱερεῖς καὶ Ἰαβᾶν πάντες οἱ λειτουργοῦντες τῷ θυσιαστήρῳ
I. CLEMENT, xxx. 6–xxxii. 2

those who praise themselves. 7. Let testimony to our good deeds be given by others, as it was given to our fathers, the righteous. 8. Frowardness and arrogance and boldness belong to those that are accursed by God, gentleness and humility and meekness are with those who are blessed by God.

XXXI

1. Let us cleave, then, to his blessing and let us consider what are the paths of blessing. Let us unfold the deeds of old. 2. Why was our father Abraham blessed? Was it not because he wrought righteousness and truth through faith? 3. Isaac in confident knowledge of the future was gladly led as a sacrifice. 4. Jacob departed from his country in meekness because of his brother, and went to Laban and served him, and to him was given the sceptre of the twelve tribes of Israel.

XXXII

1. And if anyone will candidly consider this in detail, he will recognize the greatness of the gifts given by him. 2. For from him¹ come the priests and all the Levites, who serve the altar

¹ The obscurity of this passage is partly due to an ambiguity in the Greek, partly to the faultiness of the chapter-divisions. The first verse of this chapter ought really to be closely connected with the last verse of Chapter XXXI; the "by him" in XXXII, 1 means "by God," and the "from him" in XXXII, 2 means from Jacob.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

Rom. 9, 3 τοῦ θεοῦ· ἐξ αὐτοῦ ὁ κύριος Ἰησοῦς τὸ κατὰ σάρκα·
ἐξ αὐτοῦ βασιλείς καὶ ἄρχοντες καὶ ἥγουμενοι
catat toν Ἰουδαν· τὰ δὲ λοιπὰ σκῆπτρα αὐτοῦ
οὐκ ἐν μικρᾷ δόξῃ ὑπάρχουσιν, ὡς ἐπαγγειλαμένου
tovn theou, óti éstai to spéra ma sou òs oî ásterees
tovn ouranoû. 3. pánites oûn édoxásthēsan kai
émeagalústhēsan ou di' aútôn ÿ tōn érgōn aútōn
ý tîs dikaiotpragías ÿs kateirγávasto, allâ dia
tovn thelîmátos aútou. 4. kai ÿmeis oûn, dia
thelîmátos aútou en Xristô 'Ihsoû klytheûtes, ou
di' eautôn dikaiouméthai, oude diá tîs ħmetéras
sofías ÿ synésewos ÿ ensebeias ÿ érgōn ÿn
kateirγanámevha en ósiotîti kardias, allâ dia
tîs pîstewos, di' ÿs pánitas tōn áp', aiônos ÿ
pantokratôr thēs ëdikaîwvthain. ȧ' estw ÿ doxa eis
tōn aiônas tōn aiônos. ȧmîn.

XXXIII

Rom. 6, 1 1. Tî oûn poihsowmen, ÿdelphoi; ãrhēsowmen ápô
tîs ághathopoiías kai éγkatalîpvmen tîn ágâpîn;
μηθαμôs toûto éasai o despôtîs ÿf' ÿmîn ÿ
geînithnai, allâ spêusowmen metâ êkteniáς kai
proðumías pân érgōn áγathón épîteleîn. 2. aútôs
gâr o δημιουργός kai despôtîs tōn ápântovn
êpî tois érgous aútou áγallîvtaî. 3. tî gâr
pammegevhestástôw aútou krâtei ouvanoûs ësthrîsasen
kai tî ùkatallîptw aútou synëseî diekôsmhisen
aútou's ÿnh te dieçôrîsen ápô toû perieçontos
aútîn ÿdastos kai ÿdraseîn épî tôn ásfalh tōu
idîou boulîmátos thêmëliôn; tâ te ën aútî ÿwâ

62
1. CLEMENT, xxxii. 2—xxxiii. 3

of God, from him comes the Lord Jesus according to the flesh, from him come the kings and rulers and governors in the succession of Judah, and the other sceptres of his tribes are in no small renown seeing that God promised that "thy seed shall be as the stars of heaven." 3. All of them therefore were all renowned and magnified, not through themselves or their own works or the righteous actions which they had wrought, but through his will; 4. and therefore we who by his will have been called in Christ Jesus, are not made righteous by ourselves or by our wisdom or understanding or piety or the deeds which we have wrought in holiness of heart, but through faith, by which Almighty God has justified all men from the beginning of the world; to him be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

XXXIII

1. What shall we do, then, brethren? Shall we be slothful in well-doing and cease from love? May the Master forbid that this should happen, at least to us, but let us be zealous to accomplish every good deed with energy and readiness. 2. For the Creator and Master of the universe himself rejoices in his works. 3. For by his infinitely great might did he establish the heavens, and by his incomprehensible understanding did he order them; and he separated the earth from the water that surrounds it, and fixed it upon the secure foundation of his own will; and the animals
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

φοιτώντα τῇ ἑαυτοῦ διατάξει ἐκέλευσεν εἰναι τὰ ἡμᾶς καὶ τὰ ἐν αὐτῇ ἐκεῖ προετοιμάσας ἐνέκλεισεν τῇ ἑαυτοῦ δυνάμει. 4. ἔπει πάσι τῷ ἔξοχωτατον καὶ παραγέθες κατὰ διάνοιαν, ἀνθρωπον, ταῖς ἱεραις καὶ ἀμώμων χεραίν ἐπιλασεν τῆς ἑαυτοῦ εἰκόνος χαρακτῆρα. 5. οὕτως γάρ φησιν ὁ θεὸς. Ποιήσωμεν ἀνθρωπον κατ’ εἰκόνα καὶ καθ’ ὅμοιωσιν ἡμετέραν καὶ ἐποίησεν ὁ θεὸς τὸν ἀνθρωπον, ἁρσεν καὶ θήλη ἐποίησεν αὐτοὺς. 6. ταύτα ὁμ ἀς πάντα τελειώσας ἐπηγεξεν αὐτὰ καὶ ἡπόγγησεν καὶ ἐπεν. Αὐξάνεσθε καὶ πληθύνεσθε. 7. ἰδώμεν, ὅτι ἐν ἑργοις ἁγαθοῖς πάντες ἐκωσμήθησαν οἱ δίκαιοι, καὶ αὐτοὶ δὲ οἱ κύριοι ἑργοις ἁγαθοῖς ἑαυτοὺς κοσμήσας ἐχαρή. 8. ἐχούντες οὖν τούτον τὸν ύπογραμμὸν ἀκόνως προσέλθωμεν τῷ θελήματι αὐτοῦ. εἰς ὅλης τῆς ἱσχύος ἡμῶν ἐργασώμεθα ἑργον δικαιοσύνης.

XXXIV

1. ὁ ἁγαθὸς ἑργάτης μετὰ παρρησίας λαμβάνει τὸν ἁρτον τοῦ ἑργον αὐτοῦ, ὁ νοθρος καὶ παρειμένος οὐκ ἄντοφθαλμετ ἑργοπαρέκτη αὐτοῦ. 2. δεόν οὖν ἐστὶν προθύμοις ἡμᾶς εἶναι εἰς ἁγαθοποιιαν ἐξ αὐτοῦ γάρ ἐστιν τὰ πάντα. 3. προλέγει γάρ ἡμῖν Ἰδοὺ οἱ κύριοι, καὶ ὁ μυσθὸς αὐτοῦ πρὸ προσώπου αὐτοῦ, ἀποδοῦναι ἐκάστῳ κατὰ τὸ ἑργον αὐτοῦ. 4. προτρέπεται οὖν ἡμᾶς πιστεύοντας εἰς ὅλης τῆς καρδίας ἐπ' αὐτῷ, μὴ ἄργοις μηδὲ παρειμένους εἶναι ἐπὶ πᾶν ἑργον ἁγαθον. 5. τὸ

Is. 48, 10; 62, 11; Prov. 24, 12; Rev. 22, 12; Tit. 3, 1

64
I. CLEMENT, xxxiii. 3-xxxiv. 4

that move in it did he command to exist by his own decree; the sea and the living things in it did he make ready, and enclosed by his own power.

4. Above all, man, the most excellent and from his intellect the greatest of his creatures, did he form in the likeness of his own image by his sacred and faultless hands. 1 5. For God spake thus: "Let us make man according to our image and likeness; and God made man, male and female made he them."

6. So when he had finished all these things he praised them and blessed them and said, "Increase and multiply." 7. Let us observe that all the righteous have been adorned with good works; and the Lord himself adorned himself with good works and rejoiced. 8. Having therefore this pattern let us follow his will without delay, let us work the work of righteousness with all our strength.

XXXIV

1. The good workman receives the bread of his labour with boldness; the lazy and careless cannot look his employer in the face. 2. Therefore we must be prompt in well-doing: for all things are from him. 3. For he warns us: "Behold the Lord cometh, and his reward is before his face, to pay to each according to his work." 4. He exhorts us therefore if we believe on him with our whole heart not to be lazy or careless "in every good work."

1 Or perhaps "did he form in accordance with his intellect."
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

καύχημα ἡμῶν καὶ ἡ παρρησία ἐστὶν ἐν αὐτῷ· ὑπο-
tassómeva tῷ θελήματι αὐτοῦ· κατανοήσωμεν τὸ
πᾶν πλήθος τῶν ἀγγέλων αὐτοῦ, πῶς τῷ θελήματι
αὐτοῦ λειτουργούσιν παρεστώτες. 6. λέγει γὰρ
ἡ γραφὴ· Μύριαι μυριάδες παρεισήκεισαν αὐτῷ,
καὶ χίλιαι χιλιάδες ἐλευθέρωροιν αὐτῷ, καὶ
ἐκέκραγον, Ἀγιοι, ἀγιοι, ἀγιος κύριος σαβαὼθ,
πλήρης πᾶσα ἡ κτίσις τῆς δόξης αὐτοῦ. 7. καὶ
ἡμεῖς, οὖν, ἐν ὁμονοίᾳ ἐπὶ τὸ αὐτὸ συναχθέντες τῇ
συνεδρίᾳ, ὡς εἷς ἐνὸς στόματος βοήσωμεν πρὸς
αὐτὸν ἐκτενῶς εἰς τὸ μετόχους ἡμᾶς γενέσθαι τῶν
μεγάλων καὶ ἐνδόξων ἐπαγγελμάτων αὐτοῦ. 8. λέ-
γει γὰρ· ὂφθαλμός οὐκ εἶδεν, καὶ οὐκ ἦκον,
καὶ ἐπὶ καρδιάν ἀνθρώπου οὐκ ἤνεβη, δῶσα
ἡτοίμασεν κύριος τοῖς ὑπομένουσιν αὐτοῦ.

XXXV

1. Ὡς μακάρια καὶ θαυμαστὰ τὰ δώρα τοῦ
θεοῦ, ἀγαπητοί. 2. ξωὴ ἐν ἀθανασίᾳ, λαμπρότης
ἐν δικαιοσύνῃ, ἀλήθεια ἐν παρρησίᾳ, πίστις ἐν
πεποιθήσει, ἐγκράτεια ἐν ἁγιασμῷ καὶ ταύτα
ὑπέταττεν πάντα ὑπὸ τὴν διάνοιαν ἡμῶν. 3. τίνα
οὖν ἄρα ἐστὶν τὰ ἐτοιμαζόμενα τοῖς ὑπομένουσιν;
ὁ δημιουργὸς καὶ πατὴρ τῶν αἰώνων ὁ πανάγιος
αὐτὸς γινώσκει τὴν ποσότητα καὶ τὴν καλλονή
αὐτῶν. 4. ἡμεῖς οὖν ἁγιασώμεθα εὐρεθήσωμαι ἐν
τῷ ἄριθμῷ τῶν ὑπομενόντων, ὅπως μεταλά-
βωμεν τῶν ἐπηγγελμένων δωρεῶν. 5. πῶς δὲ

1 Κύριος CLS, ὁ θεὸς Clem. (so 1 Cor. 2, 9), A omits.

66
I. CLEMENT, xxxiv. 5–xxxv. 5

5. Let our glorying and confidence be in him; let us be subject to his will; let us consider the whole multitude of his angels, how they stand ready and minister to his will. 6. For the Scripture says "Ten thousand times ten thousand stood by him, and thousand thousands ministered to him, and they cried Holy, Holy, Holy is the Lord of Sabaoth, the whole creation is full of his glory." 7. Therefore, we too must gather together with concord in our conscience¹ and cry earnestly to him, as it were with one mouth, that we may share in his great and glorious promises, 8. for he says: "Eye hath not seen, and ear hath not heard, and it hath not entered into the heart of man, what things the Lord hath prepared for them that wait for him."

XXXV

1. How blessed and wonderful, beloved, are the gifts of God! 2. Life in immortality, splendour in righteousness, truth in boldness, faith in confidence, continence in holiness: and all these things are submitted to our understanding. 3. What, then, are the things which are being prepared for those who wait for him? The Creator and Father of the ages, the All-holy one, himself knows their greatness and beauty. 4. Let us then strive to be found among the number of those that wait, that we may receive a share of the promised gifts. 5. But how

¹ Others translate "in concord and a good conscience": but it is not certain that συνείδησις can be the synonym of ἀγαθή συνείδησις.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

ἐσται τούτο, ἀγαπητοί; εάν ἐστηριγμένη ἡ ἡ διάνοια ἡμῶν πιστῶς πρὸς τὸν θεόν, εάν ἐκξητῶμεν τὰ εὐάρεστα καὶ εὐπρόσδεκτα αὐτῷ, εάν ἐπιτελεσµῶμεν τὰ ἀνήκοντα τῇ ἀμώµῳ βουλήσει αὐτοῦ, καὶ ἀκολουθήσωμεν τῇ ὁδῷ τῆς ἀληθείας, ἀπορρίψαντες ἄφες εαυτῶν πάσαν ἁδικίαν καὶ πονηρίαν, πλεονεξίαν, έρεις, κακοποθεῖας τε καὶ δόλους, ψιθυρισµοῦς τε καὶ καταλαλίας, θεοστηνίαν, υπερηφανίαν τε καὶ ἀλαζονείαν, κενοδοξίαν τε καὶ ἀφιλοξενίαν.16. ταῦτα γὰρ οἱ πράσσοντες στυγνητοὶ τῷ θεῷ ὑπάρχουσιν οὐ μόνον δὲ οἱ πράσσοντες αὐτά, ἀλλὰ καὶ οἱ συνευδοκοῦντες αὐτοῖς. 7. λέγει γὰρ ἡ γραφή: Ὁ δὲ ἀμαρτωλῷ εἶπεν ὁ θεός: ἤνατι σὺ διηγή τὰ δικαιώματά μου, καὶ ἀναλαμβάνεις τὴν διαθήκην μου ἐπὶ στόματός σου; 8. σὺ δὲ ἐμίσησας παιδείαν καὶ ἐξέβαλες τοὺς λόγους μου εἰς τὰ ὀπίσω. εἰ θεώρεις κλέπτην, συνέτρεχες αὐτῷ, καὶ μετὰ μοιχῶν τὴν μερίδα σου ἐτίθεις. τὸ στόμα σου ἐπελεύσασεν κακίαν, καὶ ἡ γλώσσα σου περιέπλεκεν δολιότητα. καθήμενος κατὰ τοῦ ἀδελφοῦ σου κατελάεις, καὶ κατὰ τοῦ νιν τῆς μητρός σου ἐτίθεις σκάνδαλον. 9. ταῦτα ἐποίησας, καὶ ἐσύγγησα· ὑπέλαβες, ἀνομε, ὅτι ἐσομαι σοὶ δόµοις. 10. ἐλέγξοι σε καὶ παραστήσω σε κατὰ πρόσωπόν σου. Π. σύνετε δὴ ταῦτα, οἱ ἐπιλαυθανόµενοι τοῦ θεοῦ, μὴ ποτε ἀρπάζῃ ὃς λέων, καὶ μὴ ἡ ὁ ρύµενος. 12. θυσία αἰνέσεως δοξάσει με, καὶ ἐκεί ὁδὸς, ἡ2 δείξω αὐτῷ τὸ σωτήριον τοῦ θεοῦ.

1 The text is doubtful: A reads φιλοξενίαν, which is impossible, CS read ἀφιλοξενίαν, but L has inhumilibatem, which Knopf believes to represent an original φιλοξενίαν.

2 ἡ L (in qua) ἐν ACS with later LXX MSS.
shall this be, beloved? If our understanding be
fixed faithfully on God; if we seek the things which
are well-pleasing and acceptable to him; if we fulfil
the things which are in harmony with his faultless
will, and follow the way of truth, casting away from
ourselves all iniquity and wickedness, covetousness,
strife, malice and fraud, gossiping and evil speaking,
hatred of God, pride and arrogance, vain-glory and
inhospitality. 6. For those who do these things are
hateful to God, and "not only those who do them,
but also those who take pleasure in them." 7. For
the Scripture says: "But to the sinner said God:
Wherefore dost thou declare my ordinances, and
takest my covenant in thy mouth? 8. Thou hast
hated instruction, and cast my words behind thee.
If thou sawest a thief thou didst run with him, and
thou didst make thy portion with the adulterers.
Thy mouth hath multiplied iniquity, and thy tongue
did weave deceit. Thou didst sit to speak evil
against thy brother, and thou didst lay a stumbling-
block in the way of thy mother's son. 9. Thou
hast done these things and I kept silent; thou didst
suppose, O wicked one, that I shall be like unto thee.
10. I will reprove thee and set thyself before thy
face. 11. Understand then these things, ye who
forget God, lest he seize you as doth a lion, and
there be none to deliver. 12. The sacrifice of
praise shall glorify me, and therein is a way in which
I will show to him the salvation of God."

1 The Syriac reads "Set thy sins before thy face." This
is no doubt a guess, but it gives the meaning.
XXXVI

1. Αὕτη ἡ ὁδὸς, ἀγαπητοί, ἐν ἡ εὗρομεν τὸ σωτήριον ἡμῶν, Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν, τὸν ἀρχιερεά τῶν προσφορῶν ἡμῶν, τὸν προστάτην καὶ βοηθόν τῆς ἀσθενείας ἡμῶν. 2. διὰ τούτου ἀτενίζομεν ἐάς τὰ ὑψη τῶν οὐρανῶν, διὰ τούτου ἐνοπτριζόμεθα τὴν ἄμωμον καὶ ὑπερτάτην ὅψιν αὐτοῦ, διὰ τούτου ἱμαλθήσεσθαι ὁ φῶς, διὰ τούτου ἐνθάλλεται ἡ καρδίας, διὰ τούτου ἡ ἀσύνετος καὶ ἐσκοτωμένη διάνοια ἡμῶν ἀναθάλλει εἰς τὸ φῶς, διὰ τούτου ἠθέλησεν ὁ δεσπότης τῆς ἀβανάτου γνώσεως ἡμᾶς γεύσασθαι, διὸ ἂν ἀπαύγασα τῆς μεγαλωσύνης αὐτοῦ, τοσοῦτοι μείζων ἔστιν ἄγγελων, ὡς διαφορώτερον ὄνομα κεκληρονόμηκεν. 3. γέγραπται γὰρ οὕτως ὁ ποιῶν τοὺς ἄγγελους αὐτοῦ πνεύματα καὶ τοὺς λειτουργοὺς αὐτοῦ πυρὸς φλόγα. 4. ἐπὶ δὲ τῶν νυφῶν αὐτοῦ οὕτως εἶπεν ὁ δεσπότης. Τίς μοι ἐστὶ νυφὸς ἄνθρωπος καὶ ἐστὶν ὁ δεσπότης. Τίς μοι ἐστὶ σύ, ἐγὼ σήμερον γεγέννηκά σε· αἰτησίας παρ᾽ ἐμοῦ, καὶ δῶσο σοι ἐθνὸς τὴν κληρονομίαν σου καὶ τὴν κατάσχεσίν σου τὰ πέρατα τῆς γῆς. 5. καὶ πάλιν λέγει πρὸς αὐτὸν. Κάθω πέρ εὐχερὰς σου ὑποπόδιοι τῶν ποδῶν σου. 6. τίνες οὖν οἴ ἐχθροῖς; οἱ φαῦλοι καὶ ἀνιτασσόμενοι τῷ θελήματι αὐτοῦ.

XXXVII

1. Στρατευοσώμεθα οὖν, ἀνδρεῖς ἄδελφοι, μετὰ πάσης ἐκτενείας ἐν τοῖς ἁμάμοις προστάγμασιν αὐτοῦ. 2. κατανοήσωμεν τοὺς στρατευομένους

1 ἀτενίζομεν Α “let us fix our gaze.”
XXXVI

1. This is the way, beloved, in which we found our salvation, Jesus Christ, the high priest of our offerings, the defender and helper of our weakness. Through him we fix our gaze on the heights of heaven, through him we see the reflection of his faultless and lofty countenance, through him the eyes of our hearts were opened, through him our foolish and darkened understanding blossoms towards the light, through him the Master willed that we should taste the immortal knowledge; “who, being the brightness of his majesty is by so much greater than angels as he hath inherited a more excellent name.” 3. For it is written thus “Who maketh his angels spirits, and his ministers a flame of fire.” 4. But of his son the Master said thus “Thou art my son: to-day have I begotten thee. Ask of me, and I will give thee the heathen for thine inheritance, and the ends of the earth for thy possession.” 5. And again he says to him “Sit thou on my right hand until I make thine enemies a footstool of thy feet.” 6. Who then are the enemies? Those who are wicked and oppose his will.

XXXVII

1. Let us then serve in our army, brethren, with all earnestness, following his faultless commands. 2. Let us consider those who serve our generals, with
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

τοὺς ἠγουμένους ἥμων, πῶς εὐτάκτως, πῶς ἐκτικῶς,1 πῶς ὑποτεταγμένως ἐπιτελοῦσιν τὰ διατασσόμενα. 3. οὔ πάντες εἰσὶν ἐπαρχοὶ οὐδὲ χειλίαρχοι οὐδὲ ἑκατόνταρχαι οὐδὲ πεντηκόνταρχοι οὐδὲ τὸ καθεξῆς, ἀλλ' ἐκαστὸς ἐν τῷ ἰδίῳ τάγματι τὰ ἐπιτασσόμενα ὑπὸ τοῦ βασιλέως καὶ τῶν ἠγουμένων ἐπιτελεῖ. 4. οἱ μεγάλοι δίχα τῶν μικρῶν οὐ δύνανται εἶναι, οὔτε οἱ μικροὶ δίχα τῶν μεγάλων· σύγκρασις τῆς ἕστιν ἐν πᾶσιν, καὶ ἐν τούτοις 2 χρήσεις. 5. λάβωμεν τὸ σῶμα ἥμων· ἡ κεφαλὴ δίχα τῶν ποδῶν οὐδὲν ἐστιν, οὔτως οὐδὲ οἱ πόδες δίχα τῆς κεφαλῆς· τὰ δὲ ἐλάχιστα μέλη τοῦ σῶματος ἥμων ἀναγκαῖα καὶ εὐχρηστὰ εἰσιν ὅλῳ τῷ σώματι· ἀλλὰ πάντα συνυπεῖ καὶ ὑποταγῇ μᾶ χρῆται εἰς τὸ σώζεσθαι ὅλον τὸ σῶμα.

XXXVIII

1. Σωζέσθω οὖν ἡμῶν ὅλον τὸ σῶμα ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ, καὶ ὑποτασσόμεθα ἐκαστὸς τῷ πλησίον αὐτοῦ, καθὼς ἐτέθη ἐν τῷ χαρίσματι αὐτοῦ. 2. ο ἱσχυρὸς τημελεῖτω3 τὸν ἁσθενῆ, ὁ δὲ ἁσθενὴς ἐντρεπέσθω τῶν ἱσχυρῶν· ὁ πλοῦσιος ἐπιχορηγεῖτω τῷ πτωχῷ, ὁ δὲ πτωχὸς εὐχαριστεῖτω τῷ θεῷ, ὧτι ἐδωκεν αὐτῷ, δι` οὗ ἀναπληρωθῇ αὐτοῦ τὸ ὑστέρημα· ὁ σοφὸς ἐνδεικνύσθω τὴν σοφίαν αὐτοῦ μὴ ἐν

1 A reads εἰκτι... (the rest of the word has disappeared, though there is a trace either of οὐ, or of ἐκ.) A 1 has ἐνεικτ. ...

2 L seems to imply ἀλλήλας “and one makes use of the other,” which may be the original text.

3 A has μὴ τημελεῖτω. This is perhaps a corruption of μὴ ἀτημελεῖτω “not neglect,” which may be the true reading.
what good order, habitual readiness, and submissiveness they perform their commands. 3. Not all are prefects, nor tribunes, nor centurions, nor in charge of fifty men, or the like, but each carries out in his own rank the commands of the emperor and of the generals. 4. The great cannot exist without the small, nor the small without the great; there is a certain mixture among all, and herein lies the advantage. 5. Let us take our body; the head is nothing without the feet, likewise the feet are nothing without the head; the smallest members of our body are necessary and valuable to the whole body, but all work together and are united in a common subjection to preserve the whole body.

XXXVIII

1. Let, therefore, our whole body be preserved in the duties of mutual help. Christ Jesus, and let each be subject to his neighbour, according to the position granted to him. 2. Let the strong care for the weak and let the weak reverence the strong. Let the rich man bestow help on the poor and let the poor give thanks to God, that he gave him one to supply his needs; let the wise manifest his wisdom not in words but in good deeds;
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

λόγοις, ἀλλ' ἐν ἔργοις ἀγαθοῖς: ὁ ταπεινοφρονῶν μὴ ἐαυτῷ μαρτυρεῖτω, ἀλλ' ἐάντω υψη ἐτέρου ἐαυτὸν μαρτυρεῖσθαι: ὁ ἁγιὸς ἐν ἡ σαρκί μὴ ἀλαξονεύσωθω, γινώσκων ὅτι ἐτέρος ἔστιν ὁ ἐπιχορηγῶν αὐτῷ τὴν ἐγκράτειαν. 3. ἀναλογισώ-μεθα οὖν, ἀδελφοί, ἐκ ποιας ὀλης ἐγενήθημεν, ποίοι καὶ τίνες εἰσήλθαμεν εἰς τὸν κόσμον, ἐκ ποιοῦ τάφου καὶ σκότους ὁ πλάσας ἡμᾶς καὶ δημοφυ-γήσας εἰσήγαγεν εἰς τὸν κόσμον αὐτοῦ, προετοι-μάσας τὰς εὐεργεσίας αὐτοῦ, πρὶν ἡμᾶς γεννηθῆναι. 4. ταῦτα οὖν πάντα ἐξ αὐτοῦ ἔχοντες οἰκεῖον κατὰ πάντα εὐχαριστεῖν αὐτῷ: ὃ ἦ δόξα εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας τῶν αἰῶνων. ἀμήν.

XXXIX

1. "Ἀφρόνες καὶ ἀσύνετοι καὶ μωροὶ καὶ ἀπαι-δευτοὶ χλευάζουσιν ἡμᾶς καὶ μυκτηρίζουσιν, ἕως τοῦ ἄνοιγμαν ἐπαίρεσθαι ταῖς διανοιαῖς αὐτῶν. 2. τί γὰρ δύναται θυητός; ἡ τίς ἱσχὺς γηγενοῦς; 3. γεγραπται γὰρ. Οὐκ ἦν μορφὴ πρὸ ὀφθαλμῶν μου, ἀλλ' ἡ αὐραν καὶ φωνὴ ἡκουν. 4. Τι γὰρ; μὴ καθαρὸς ἐσται βροτὸς ἐναντίον κυρίον; ἡ ἀπὸ τῶν ἐργῶν αὐτοῦ ἁμετριτὸς ἁνήρ, εἰ κατὰ παῖδων αὐτοῦ οὐ πιστεύει, κατὰ δὲ ἀγγέλων αὐτοῦ σκολιόν τί ἐπενόησεν; 5. οὗρανὸς δὲ οὐ καθαρὸς ἐνώπιον αὐτοῦ; ἐὰ δὲ, οἱ κατοι-κοῦντες οἰκίας τηλίνας, ἐξ ὧν καὶ αὐτοὶ ἐκ τοῦ

1 A reads καὶ μὴ preceded by a lacuna (the vellum has been cut away). It is suggested that ἤτω should be supplied, giving the meaning "Let him who is pure in the flesh, be so, and not," etc.
I. CLEMENT, xxxviii. 2–xxxix. 5

let him who is humble-minded not testify to his own humility, but let him leave it to others to bear him witness; let not him who is pure in the flesh be boastful, knowing that it is another who bestows on him his continence. 3. Let us consider, then, brethren, of what matter we were formed, who we are, and with what nature we came into the world, and how he who formed and created us brought us into his world from the darkness of a grave, and prepared his benefits for us before we were born. 4. Since, therefore, we have everything from him we ought in everything to give him thanks, to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

XXXIX

1. Foolish, imprudent, silly, and uninstructed men mock and deride us, wishing to exalt themselves in their own conceits. 2. For what can mortal man do, or what is the strength of him who is a child of earth? 3. For it is written "There was no shape before mine eyes, but I heard a sound and a voice. 4. What then? Shall a mortal be pure before the Lord? Or shall a man be blameless in his deeds, seeing that he believeth not in his servants, and hath noted perversity in his angels? 5. Yea, the heaven is not pure before him. Away then, ye who inhabit houses of clay, of which, even of the same clay, we ourselves were made. He smote them as a
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

αὐτοῦ πηλοῦ ἐσμένι ἐπαισεν αὐτοῦς σητός τρόπον, καὶ ἀπὸ πρωθεὶν ἐως ἐσπέρας σὰρκὶ ἐπὶ εἰσὶν· παρὰ τὸ μὴ δύνασθαι αὐτοῖς ἑαυτοῖς βοηθῆσαι ἀπώλουτο. 6. ἐνεφύσησεν αὐτοῖς, καὶ ἐτελεύτησαν παρὰ τὸ μὴ ἔχειν αὐτοὺς σοφίαν. 7. ἐπικαλέσαι δὲ, εἰ τίς σοι ὑπακοῦσται, ἢ εἰ τίνα ἁγίων ἁγιεῖσαν ὄψιν καὶ γὰρ ἁφόνα ἀναίρει ὅργῃ, τεπλανημένου δὲ θανατοῦ ζῆλος. 8. ἐγὼ δὲ ἑώρας ἁφονας ρίζας βάλλοντας, ἀλλ' εὐθέως ἐβρώθῃ αὐτῶν ἡ δίαιτα. 9. πόρρω γένοιτο οἱ νῦιοι αὐτῶν ἀπὸ σωτηρίας· κολαβροθεῖσαν ἐπὶ θύραις ἡσόνων, καὶ οὐκ ἔσται ὁ ἐξαιροῦμενος· ἂ γὰρ ἐκεῖνοι ἠτούμασται, δίκαιοι ἔδονται, αὐτοὶ δὲ ἐκ κακῶν οὐκ ἔξαρτετο ἔσονται.

XL

1. Προδήλων οὖν ἡμῖν ὄντων τούτων, καὶ ἐγκεκυφότες εἰς τὰ βάθη τῆς θείας γνώσεως, πάντα τάξει ποιεῖν ὄφελομεν, ὥσα ὁ δεσπότης ἐπιτελεῖν ἐκέλευσεν κατὰ καιροῦς τεταγμένους. 2. τας τε προσφορὰς καὶ λειτουργίας ἐπιτελεῖσθαι, καὶ ὁ οὐκ εἰκῆ ᾧ ἀτάκτως ἐκέλευσεν γίνεσθαι, ἀλλ' ὁρισμένοις καιροῖς καὶ ὁραις. 3. ποὺ τε καὶ διά τινων ἐπιτελεῖσθαι θέλει, αὐτὸς ὁρισεν τῇ υπερτάτῳ αὐτοῦ βουλήσει, ἱν' ὡσὶν πάντα γενόμενα ἐν εὐδοκῆσθαι εὐπρόσδεκτα εἰς τῷ θελήματι αὐτοῦ. 4. οἱ οὖν τόσοι προστεταγμένοις καιροῖς ποιοῦντες τας προσφορὰς αὐτῶν εὐπρόσδεκτοί τε καὶ

1 βάλλοντας Α, βάλλοντας CLS (LXX).
2 ἐπιτελεῖσθαι καὶ AC, om. LS.
I. CLEMENT, xxxix. 5–xl. 4

moth, and from morning until evening they do not endure; they perished, without being able to help themselves. 6. He breathed on them and they died because they had no wisdom. 7. But call now, if any shall answer thee, or if thou shalt see any of the holy angels; for wrath destroyeth the foolish, and envy putteth to death him that is in error. 8. I have seen the foolish taking root, but their habitation was presently consumed. 9. Let their sons be far from safety; let them be mocked in the gates of those less than they, with none to deliver; for what was prepared for them the righteous shall eat, and they themselves shall not be delivered from evil."

XL

1. Since then these things are manifest to us, and we have looked into the depths of the divine knowledge, we ought to do in order all things which the Master commanded us to perform at appointed times. 2. He commanded us to celebrate sacrifices and services, and that it should not be thoughtlessly or disorderly, but at fixed times and hours. 3. He has himself fixed by his supreme will the places and persons whom he desires for these celebrations, in order that all things may be done piously according to his good pleasure, and be acceptable to his will. 4. So then those who offer their oblations at the appointed seasons are acceptable and blessed, for
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

μακάριοι τοῖς γὰρ νομίμοις τοῦ δεσπότου ἀκολουθοῦντες οὐ διαμαρτάνουσιν. 5. τῷ γὰρ ἀρχιερεῖ ἵδια τοῖς ἑρευναῖς διδομέναι εἰς ἐναλλάξοντας, καὶ τοῖς ἑρευναῖς ἵδια ὁ τόπος προστέτακται, καὶ Δευτέρας ἵδια διακονία ἐπικείµενον ἵνα λαϊκὸς ἀνθρώπος τοῖς λαϊκοῖς προστάγμασιν δέδεται. 1

XLI

1 Cor. 16, 28 1. "Εκαστὸς ἡμῶν, ἀδελφοὶ, ἐν τῷ ἰδίῳ τάγματι εὐχαριστεῖται ἕν τῷ θεῷ ἐν ἁγαθῇ συνείδησε ὑπάρχων, μὴ παρεκβαινών τὸν ώριμὸν τὴς λειτουργίας αὐτοῦ κανόνα, ἐν σεμνότητι. 2. οὐ πανταχοῦ, ἀδελφοί, προσφέρονται θυσίαι ἐν εὐδοκίας ἐν εὐχέσι, ἐν ἀμαρτίας καὶ πλημμελείας, ἀλλὰ ἐν ἑυροσαλήμ μόνῃ κακεὶ δὲ οὐκ ἐν παντὶ τόπῳ προσφέρεται, ἀλλὰ ἐμπροσθεν τοῦ ναοῦ πρὸς τὸ θυσιαστήριον, μοισεία καὶ τῆς προειρημένου λειτουργῶν. 3. οἱ οὖν παρὰ τὸ καθήκων τῆς βουλής σεως αὐτοῦ ποιοῦντες τι θάνατον τὸ πρόστιμον ἔχουσιν. 4. ὁ ῥατε, ἀδελφοί, ὅσον πλείονος κατηγορεῖται ἡμῶν γνώσεως, τοσοῦτο τούτῳ μᾶλλον ἐποκείμεθα κινδύνῳ.

XLII

1. Οἱ ἀπόστολοι ἡμῖν εὐχαριστοῦσαν ἀπὸ τοῦ κυρίου Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, Ἰησοῦς ὁ Χριστὸς ἀπὸ

1 δέδεται A, δέδοται CLS.
2 A reads εὐχαριστεῖτω, "join in the Eucharist," or less probably, "give thanks."
3 C reads προσευχῆν.
I. CLEMENT, XL. 4–XLII. 1

they follow the laws of the Master and do no sin. 5. For to the High Priest his proper ministrations are allotted, and to the priests the proper place has been appointed, and on Levites their proper services have been imposed. The layman is bound by the ordinances for the laity.

XLI

1. Let each one of us, brethren, be well pleasing to God in his own rank, and have a good conscience, not transgressing the appointed rules of his ministration, with all reverence. 2. Not in every place, my brethren, are the daily sacrifices offered or the free-will offerings, or the sin-offerings and trespass-offerings, but only in Jerusalem; and there also the offering is not made in every place, but before the shrine, at the altar, and the offering is first inspected by the High Priest and the ministers already mentioned. 3. Those therefore who do anything contrary to that which is agreeable to his will suffer the penalty of death. 4. You see, brethren, that the more knowledge we have been entrusted with, the greater risk do we incur.

XLII

1. The Apostles received the Gospel for us from the Lord Jesus Christ, Jesus the Christ was sent from

1 If the reading of C be adopted, "Sacrifices of prayers."
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

tou theou exepegemfthe. 2. o Christos ouv apto tou theou kai oi apostoioi apto tou Christou' egenonto ouv umfotera eutaktos eke thelama theou.
3. paraphgelias ouv labontes kal pleroforhentes dia tis anastaseis tou kuriou hmioun Isou Christou kai piasthentes en to lypo tou theou, metap pleroforiai pnevmatos anion ezhlon euaggeliosomeno, tin basileian tou theou melleiv erchesthai. 4. kata kiaras ouv kai poleis khrusasontes kai koiexasontai tis aparchas auton, dokimasautes to pnevmati, eis episkopous kai diakonous ton melanton pistevein. 5. kai touto ou kainous ek gar de polloin chrinov enegrappto peri episkopon kai diakonon. outhos gar pous legei h grafh, Katastoish tou episkopon auton en diamaioseun kai tois diakonous auton en pistei.

XLIII

Num. 12, 7; Heb. 3, 5
1. Kali ti thanamaston, eis ois en Christo pistevenentes para theou ergon touo katesthasan tois proeiremenvous; otopo kal o makarios pio ton theronton en olh to oikov Mouthis tis diatetagmena autow panta espeirostatou en tais ierais bibelous, ko kai episkolouthsan ois loipoi profiatai, suynoptanarturountes tois wp autou neomethemenois.
2. ekeinos gar, zhtou empeisontos peri tis ierwsunis kai stasiazhousan ton fulon, otopia auton eis to evdoxw onomati kekosphemene, ekleusen

1 L adds eos qui obaudiebant voluntati Dei baptizantes. "baptising those who were obedient to the will of God."
I. CLEMENT, xlII. 1—xliII. 2

God. 2. The Christ therefore is from God and the Apostles from the Christ. In both ways, then, they were in accordance with the appointed order of God's will. 3. Having therefore received their commands, and being fully assured by the resurrection of our Lord Jesus Christ, and with faith confirmed by the word of God, they went forth in the assurance of the Holy Spirit preaching the good news that the Kingdom of God is coming. 4. They preached from district to district, and from city to city, and they appointed their first converts, testing them by the Spirit, to be bishops and deacons of the future believers. 5. And this was no new method, for many years before had bishops and deacons been written of; for the scripture says thus in one place "I will establish their bishops in righteousness, and their deacons in faith."

XLIII

1. And what wonder is it if those who were in Christ, and were entrusted by God with such a duty, established those who have been mentioned? Since the blessed Moses also "A faithful servant in all his house" noted down in the sacred books all the injunctions which were given him; and the other prophets followed him, bearing witness with him to the laws which he had given. 2. For when jealousy arose concerning the priesthood, and the tribes were quarrelling as to which of them was adorned with that glorious title, Moses himself commanded the

1 ἀμφότερα "both" is probably adverbial rather than the subject of ἔγενοντο.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

tou's de'eka phul'ar'chous prosevegekeiv'ain aut'w r'ab'dous
ep'igegram'men'as ek'asth's phul'hês kat' onoma' kai
labb'ou aut'as ed'hsen kai es'frape'sen to'is dak'tu-
lois to'w phul'ar'chou, kal' ap'etheto aut'as eis'th' 
skhe'nh to'mu marturi'ou epi'th' tranpe'zai to'w theou'.
3. kai klei'sas t'h' skhe'nh es'frape'sen t'as kle'i'das
wsa'un'tos kai t'as r'ab'dous. 4. kai ei'ten aut'ois':
'Andres ade'lo'i, h' an phi'lh' h' r'ab'dos blas'th's',
taut'h' ek'lelektai o theos' eis'th' ierateu'en kai
leitou'rgein aut'w. 5. proi'tas de' ge'no'men'is supe-
kal'esen pant'a to'n 'Isha'lh, tas' ek'ko'sias i'li-
adas t'wn an'xor'w, kal' epede'xato to'is phul'ar'chou
 tas' sfrag'idas, kai h'noi'xen t'h' skhe'nh t'n 
marturi'ou kal' proe'leun t'as r'ab'dous' kal' eu're'th' h
r'ab'dos 'Aar'w, ou'mo'n bhe'blas'th'kia', al'lal kai
kar'ton' xhousa. 6. t'i dokei'te, agap'htoi; ou
proe'dei Mo'us'his tou'to me'leun e'se'seai; ma'li'sta
h'dei; al'l' ina m'h' akatasta'sia gene'tai en t'h
'Isha'lh, o'utw's ep'to'nsei, eis'th' do'xas'hm'w t'o
ct. Joh. 17,8 o'nom'a to'n al'htinov' kai m'o'n o'neh'. 1 
phi' h' do'xa eis'th' to'w ai'w'na t'n ai'w'vo'n. 
'Am'h'n.

XLIV

1. Kal' oi' o'p'ostolo'i h'mou e'g'w'san di'w t'w kuriou
h'mou 'Isha'ou 'Xristou', o'ti' e'ri'w e'stai e'pi'to
on'ma'tos t'h' e'ti'sko'th'. 2. di'w taut'h' ou'n t'h'
a'ti'an pro'g'w'sin e'ilh'fo'tes tel'e'i'w w'c'asth'san

1 theu' "God" KS, kuriou' "Lord" S, L omits and has
merely "the true and only one," A is missing.

82
I. CLEMENT, xliii. 2-xliv. 2

rulers of the twelve tribes to bring him rods, with the name of a tribe written on each; and he took them, and bound them, and sealed them with the rings of the rulers of the tribes, and put them away in the Tabernacle of Testimony on the table of God. 3. And he shut the Tabernacle, and sealed the keys, as he had done with the rods, 4. and he said to them, "Brethren, of whichever tribe the rod shall bud, this has God chosen for his priesthood and ministry." 5. And when it was daylight he called together all Israel, six hundred thousand men, and showed the seals to the rulers of the tribes, and opened the Tabernacle of Testimony, and took forth the rods, and the rod of Aaron was found not only to have budded, but also to be bearing fruit. 6. What do you think, beloved? That Moses did not know beforehand that this was going to happen? Assuredly he knew, but he acted thus that there should be no disorder in Israel, to glorify the name of the true and only God, to whom be the glory for ever and ever. Amen.

XLIV

1. Our Apostles also knew through our Lord Jesus Christ that there would be strife for the title of bishop. 2. For this cause, therefore, since they had received perfect foreknowledge, they appointed
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

τοὺς προειρημένους, καὶ μεταξὺ ἐπινομὴν ¹ δεδώκασι, ὅπως, ἐὰν κοιμηθώσῃ, διαδέξωσαι ἐτεροὶ δεδωκιμασμένοι ἀνδρεῖς τὴν λειτουργίαν αὐτῶν. 3. τοὺς σὺν κατασταθέντας ὑπὲ ἐκεῖνων ἡ μεταξὺ ὕφ’ ἑτέρων ἐλλογίμων ἀνδρῶν συνεπικηκτάσης τῆς ἐκκλησίας πάσης, καὶ λειτουργήσατας ἀμέμπτως τῷ ποιμνίῳ τοῦ Χριστοῦ μετὰ ταπεινοφροσύνης, ἥσυχος καὶ ἀβαναύσως, μεμαρτυρημένους τε πολλοῖς χρόνοις ὑπὸ πάντων, τούτους οὐ δικαίως νομίζομεν ἀποβάλλεσθαι τῆς λειτουργίας. 4. ἀμαρτία γὰρ οὐ μικρὰ ἡμῖν ἑσται, ἐὰν τοὺς ἀμέμπτους καὶ ὁσίους προσευχόκοντας τὰ δῶρα τῆς ἐπίσκοπης ἀποβάλωμεν. 5. μακάριοι οἱ προοδοιοποιήσαντες πρεσβυτεροὶ, οὕτως ἐγκαρπον καὶ τελείαν ἑσχον τὴν ἀνάλυσιν οὐ γὰρ εὐλαβοῦνται μὴ τις αὐτοῦς μεταστήσῃ ἀπὸ τοῦ ἱδρυμένου αὐτοῖς τόπου. 6. ὀρῶμεν γὰρ, ὅτι ἐνίοις ὑμεῖς μετηγάγετε καλῶς πολιτευμένους ἐκ τῆς ἀμέμπτους αὐτοῖς τετιμημένης λειτουργίας.

XLV

1. Φιλόνεικοι ἔστε, ἄδελφοι, καὶ ξηλωταί περὶ τῶν ἀνηκόντων εἰς σωτηρίαν. 2. ἐγκεκύφατε εἰς τὰς ιερὰς γραφὰς, τὰς ἄληθείς, τὰς διὰ τοῦ

¹ ἐπινομὴν A, ἐπιδομὴν C, legem L (= ετὶ νόμον ?); the equivalent of ἐπιδοκιμὴν S, “And gave to those who were after them” K. ἐπινομὴν seems to be the most probable reading as L more or less supports the -νομὴν and CS support the ἐπι-; but the translation is doubtful, as it is difficult to obtain any sense unless it be supposed that ἐπινομὴν has the meaning “codicil” which usually belongs to the cognate word ἐπινομεῖς. Lightfoot emends to ἐπιμονὴν, “permanence.”
I. CLEMENT, XLIV. 2–XLV. 2

those who have been already mentioned, and afterwards added the codicil that if they should fall asleep, other approved men should succeed to their ministry. 3. We consider therefore that it is not just to remove from their ministry those who were appointed by them, or later on by other eminent men, with the consent of the whole Church, and have ministered to the flock of Christ without blame, humbly, peaceably, and disinterestedly, and for many years have received a universally favourable testimony. 4. For our sin is not small, if we eject from the episcopate those who have blamelessly and holily offered its sacrifices. 5. Blessed are those Presbyters who finished their course before now, and have obtained a fruitful and perfect release in the ripeness of completed work, for they have now no fear that any shall move them from the place appointed to them. 6. For we see that in spite of their good service you have removed some from the ministry which they fulfilled blamelessly.¹

XLV

1. You are contentious,² brethren, and zealous for the things which lead to salvation. 2. You have studied the Holy Scriptures, which are true, and given by

¹ It is doubtful if this translation is right, and the Greek is perhaps corrupt. Lightfoot emends τετηματίους to τετηρηματίους "which they preserved." The translation given is supported by L. facto (probably a corruption of functo).
² Or possibly, "Be contentious."
πνεύματος τοῦ ἀγίου. 3. ἐπίστασθε, ὅτι οὐδὲν ἄδικον οὐδὲ παραπεποιημένον γέγραπται ἐν αὐταῖς. οὐχ εὐρήσετε δικαίους ἀποβεβλημένους ἀπὸ ὅσίων ἀνδρῶν. 4. ἐδιώκθησαν δίκαιοι, ἀλλ’ ὑπὸ ἄνωμῶν ἐφυλακίσθησαν, ἀλλ’ ὑπὸ ἄνωσίων ἐλθάσθησαν ὑπὸ παρανόμων ἀπεκτάνθησαν ὑπὸ τῶν μιαρῶν καὶ ἄδικον ξύλου ἀνειληφότων. 5. ταῦτα πάσχοντες εὐκλεῶς ἤμενεκαν. 6. τί γὰρ εἰπώμεν, ἀδελφοί; Δανιὴλ ὑπὸ τῶν φοβουμένων τὸν θεὸν ἐβλήθη εἰς λάκκον λεύτων; 7. ἢ Ἠθαναίας καὶ Ἀζαρίας καὶ Μισααήλ ὑπὸ τῶν θρησκευόντων τὴν μεγαλοτρέπη καὶ ἐνδοξὸν θρησκείαν τοῦ υψίστου κατείρξθησαν εἰς κάμνον πυρὸς; μηθαμῶς τούτο γένοιτο. τίνες οὖν οἱ ταῦτα δράσαντες; οἱ στυγνοὶ καὶ πάσχεις κακίας πληρεῖς εἰς τοσοῦτο ἐξήρασαν θυμοῦ, ὡστε τοὺς ἐν ὅσια καὶ ἀμώμῳ προδέσει δουλεύοντας τῷ θεῷ εἰς αἰκίαν περιβαλέιν, μὴ εἰδότες ὅτι ὁ υψίστος υπέρμαχος καὶ ὑπερασπιστής ἐστὶν τῶν ἐν καθαρᾶ συνειδήσει λατρεύοντων τῷ παναρέτῳ ὁνόματι αὐτοῦ; ὃ ἡ δόξα εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας τῶν αἰώνων. ἀμήν. 8. οἱ δὲ υπομένοντες ἐν πεποιθήσει δόξαι καὶ τιμὴν ἐκληρονομήσαν, ἐπηρθήσαν τε καὶ ἐγγραφοὶ ἐγένοντο ἀπὸ τοῦ θεοῦ ἐν τῷ μνημοσύνῃ αὐτοῦ εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας τῶν αἰώνων. ἀμήν.

XLVI

1. Τοιούτοις οὖν ὑποδείγμασιν κολληθῆναι καὶ ἡμᾶς δεῖ, ἀδελφοί. 2. γέγραπται γὰρ Κολλάσθε τοῖς ἁγίοις, ὅτι οἱ κολλώμενοι αὐτοῖς ἀγιασθή-

1 μνημοσύνῃ αὐτῶν Α, “their memorial.”

86
the Holy Spirit. 3. You know that nothing unjust or counterfeit is written in them. You will not find that the righteous have been cast out by holy men. 4. The righteous were persecuted; but it was by the wicked. They were put in prison; but it was by the unholy. They were stoned by law-breakers, they were killed by men who had conceived foul and unrighteous envy. 5. These things they suffered, and gained glory by their endurance. 6. For what shall we say, brethren? Was Daniel cast into the lions' den by those who feared God? 7. Or were Ananias, Azarias, and Misael shut up in the fiery furnace by those who ministered to the great and glorious worship of the Most High? God forbid that this be so. Who then were they who did these things? Hateful men, full of all iniquity, were roused to such a pitch of fury, that they inflicted torture on those who served God with a holy and faultless purpose, not knowing that the Most High is the defender and protector of those who serve his excellent name with a pure conscience, to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen. But they who endured in confidence obtained the inheritance of glory and honour; they were exalted, and were enrolled by God in his memorial for ever and ever. Amen.

XLVI

1. We also, brethren, must therefore cleave to such examples. 2. For it is written, “Cleave to the holy, for they who cleave to them shall be made holy.”

1 The source of this quotation is unknown.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

Ps. 17, 28 f.

σονταί. 3. καὶ πάλιν ἐν ἐτέρῳ τόπῳ λέγει· Μετὰ ἀνδρός ἀθώου ἄθροις ἐση καὶ μετὰ ἐκλεκτοῦ ἐκλεκτὸς ἐση, καὶ μετὰ στρεβλῶν διαστρέψεις. 4. κολληθώμεν οὖν τοῖς ἀθώοις καὶ δικαίοις· εἰσὶν δὲ οὕτω ἐκλεκτοῖ τοῦ Θεοῦ. 5. ἵνατί ἔρεις καὶ θυμοὶ καὶ διχοστασίαι καὶ σχίσματα πόλεμός τε ἐν ὑμῖν; 6. ἢ οὖχ ἐνα θεοῦ ἔχομεν καὶ ἐνα Χριστοῦ καὶ ἐν πνεύμα τῆς χάριτος τὸ ἐκχυθὲν ἐφ' ἡμᾶς; καὶ μία κλήσις ἐν Χριστῷ; 7. ἵνατι διέλκομεν καὶ διάστωμεν τα μέλη τοῦ Χριστοῦ καὶ στασιώζομεν πρὸς τὸ σώμα τὸ ἵδιον, καὶ εἰς τοσαυτὴν ἄποναιαν ἐρχόμεθα, ὡστε ἐπιλαθέσθαι ἡμᾶς, ὅτι μέλη ἐσμέν αὐτῇ ἐλλήλων; μυνήθητε τῶν λόγων τοῦ κυρίου Ἰησοῦ. 8. εἶπεν γάρ· Οὐαὶ τῷ ἀνθρώπῳ ἐκείνῳ καὶ τῷ ἀνθρώπῳ ἐκείνῳ, εἰ οὐκ ἐγεννηθῇ, ἢ ἔνα τῶν ἐκλεκτῶν μου σκανδαλίσαι· κρέιττον ἢν αὐτῷ περιτεθῆναι μύλοι καὶ καταποντισθῆναι εἰς τὴν θάλασσαν, ἢ ἔνα τῶν ἐκλεκτῶν μου διαστρέψαι. 9. τὸ σχίσμα ὑμῶν πολλοὺς διέστρεψεν, πολλοὺς εἰς ἀθυμίαν ἔβαλεν, πολλοὺς εἰς δισταχμὸν, τοὺς πάντας ἡμᾶς εἰς λύπην· καὶ ἐπίμονος ὑμῶν ἐστιν ἡ στάσις.

XLVII

1 Cor. 1, 10 f. 1. Ἀναλάβετε τὴν ἐπιστολήν τοῦ μακαρίου Παύλου τοῦ ἀποστόλου. 2. τῷ πρῶτον ὑμῶν ἐν

1 Ἰησοῦ τοῦ κυρίου ἡμῶν Α, τοῦ κυρίου ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ CSK, domini Ihesu (τοῦ κυρίου Ἰησοῦ) L. The other readings appear to be semi-liturgical expansions of the simple form found in L.

2 τῶν ἐκλεκτῶν μου διαστρέψαι LSK Clem. τῶν μικρῶν μου σκανδαλίσαπος "offend one of my little ones" AC.
I. CLEMENT, xlvi. 3-xlvi. 2

3. And again in another place it says, "With the innocent man thou shalt be innocent, and with the elect man thou shalt be elect, and with the perverse man thou shalt do perversely." 4. Let us then cleave to the innocent and righteous, for these are God's elect. 5. Why are there strife and passion and divisions and schisms and war among you? 6. Or have we not one God, and one Christ, and one Spirit of grace poured out upon us? And is there not one calling in Christ? 7. Why do we divide and tear asunder the members of Christ, and raise up strife against our own body, and reach such a pitch of madness as to forget that we are members one of another? Remember the words of the Lord Jesus; 8. for he said, "Woe unto that man: it were good for him if he had not been born, than that he should offend one of my elect; it were better for him that a millstone be hung on him, and he be cast into the sea, than that he should turn aside one of my elect." 9. Your schism has turned aside many, has cast many into discouragement, many to doubt, all of us to grief; and your sedition continues.

XLVII

1. Take up the epistle of the blessed Paul the Apostle. 2. What did he first write to you at the

---

1 Clement takes the word for "with" (μετὰ) to mean "in the company of": in Ps. 17 (in Hebrew and English Ps. 18) it means "in the case of," and the subject of the verbs is God.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

ἀρχή τοῦ εὐαγγελίου ἔγραψεν; 3. ἐπ' ἀληθείᾳ πνευματικῶς ἔπεστειλεν ύμᾶν περὶ ἑαυτοῦ τε καὶ Κηφᾶ τε καὶ Ἀπολλών, διὰ τὸ καὶ τότε προσκλίσεις ύμᾶς πεποιήσατε. 4. ἄλλ' ἡ πρόσκλησις ἐκείνη ἦττονα ἁμαρτίαν ύμῶν προσήνεγκεν προσεκλίθητε γὰρ ἀποστόλοις μεμαρτυρημένοις καὶ ἄνδρι δεδοκιμασμένῳ παρ' αὐτοῖς. 5. νυνὶ δὲ κατανοῆσατε, τίνες ύμᾶς διέστρεψαν καὶ τὸ σεμνὸν τῆς περιβοὴτον φιλαδελφίας ύμῶν ἐμείσαν. 6. αἰσχρά, ἀγαπητοί, καὶ λίαν αἰσχρὰ, καὶ ἄναξία τῆς ἐν Χριστῷ ἄγωγης ἀκούεσθαι, τὴν βεβαιοτᾷ τὴν καὶ ἀρχαίαν Κορινθίων ἐκκλησίαν δι᾽ ἐν ἡ δύο πρόσωπα στασιάζειν πρὸς τοὺς πρεσβυτέρους. 7. καὶ αὕτη ἡ ἀκοὴ σὐ μόνον εἰς ἡμᾶς ἔχωρησεν, ἀλλὰ καὶ εἰς τοὺς ἐπεροκλινεῖς ὑπάρχοντας ἀφ' ἡμῶν, ὡστε καὶ βλασφημίας ἐπιφέρεσθαι τῷ ὀνόματι κυρίου διὰ τὴν ὑμετέραν ἀφροσύνην, ἑαυτοῖς δὲ κίνδυνον ἐπεξεργάζεσθαι.

XLVIII

1. Ἐξάρωμεν οὖν τούτῳ ἐν τάχει καὶ προσπέσωμεν τῷ δεσπότῃ καὶ κλαύσωμεν ἰκετεύοντες αὐτὸν, ὅπως ἔλεως γενόμενος ἐπικαταλαγῇ ἡμῖν καὶ ἐπὶ τὴν σεμνὴν τῆς φιλαδελφίας ἡμῶν ἀγωγὴν ἀποκαταστήσῃ ἡμᾶς. 2. πῦλη γὰρ δικαιοσύνης ἀνεφύη εἰς ξωὴν αὐτή, καθὼς γέγραπται. 'Ανοίξατε μοι πύλας δικαιοσύνης, ίνα εἰσελθῶν ἐν αὐταῖς ἔξωμολογήσωμαι 1 τῷ κυρίῳ. 3. αὕτη ἡ

Ps.118,19,20

1 ἵνα εἰσελθῶν . . . ἔξωμολογήσωμαι SK Clem., εἰσελθῶν . . . ἔξωμολογήσωμαι (I will enter . . . and praise) ACL.
beginning of his preaching? 3. With true inspiration he charged you concerning himself and Cephas and Apollos, because even then you had made yourselves partisans. 4. But that partisanship entailed less guilt on you; for you were partisans of Apostles of high reputation, and of a man approved by them. 5. But now consider who they are who have perverted you, and have lessened the respect due to your famous love for the brethren. 6. It is a shameful report, beloved, extremely shameful, and unworthy of your training in Christ, that on account of one or two persons the steadfast and ancient church of the Corinthians is being disloyal to the presbyters. 7. And this report has not only reached us, but also those who dissent from us, so that you bring blasphemy on the name of the Lord through your folly, and are moreover creating danger for yourselves.

XLVIII

1. Let us then quickly put an end to this, and let us fall down before the Master, and beseech him with tears that he may have mercy upon us, and be reconciled to us, and restore us to our holy and seemly practice of love for the brethren. 2. For this is the gate of righteousness which opens on to life, as it is written "Open me the gates of righteousness, that I may enter into them and praise the Lord;
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

πύλη τοῦ κυρίου δίκαιον εἰσέλθονται ἐν αὐτῇ. 4. πολλῶν οὖν πυλῶν ἀνεφγυνών ἐν δικαιοσύνῃ αὐτῆς ἐστὶν ἐν Χριστῷ, ἐν ἡ μακάριοι πάντες οἱ εἰσέλθοντες καὶ κατευθύνοντες τὴν πορείαν αὐτῶν ἐν ὀσιότητι καὶ δικαιοσύνῃ, ἀταράχως πάντα ἐπιτελοῦντες. 5. ἦτο τις πιστός, ἦτο δυνατός γνώσιν ἐξειπεῖν, ἦτο σοφὸς ἐν διακρίσει λόγων, ἦτο ἁγνός ἐν ἔργοις. 6. τοσοῦτος γὰρ μάλλον ταπεινοφρονεῖν ὁφείλει, ὅσο δοκεῖ μάλλον μείζων εἶναι, καὶ ξητεῖν τὸ κοινωφελές πᾶσιν, καὶ μὴ τὸ ἑαυτοῦ.

XLIX

1. 'Ὁ ἔχων ἀγάπην ἐν Χριστῷ ποιησάτω τὰ τοῦ Χριστοῦ παραγγέλματα. 2. τὸν δεσμὸν τῆς ἀγάπης τοῦ θεοῦ τὶς δύναται ἐξηγήσασθαι; 3. τὸ μεγαλεῖον τῆς καλλονῆς αὐτοῦ τῆς ἄρκετός ἐξειπεῖν; 4. τὸ υψός, εἰς ὃ ἀνάγει ἡ ἀγάπη, ἀνεκδιηγητῶν ἐστιν. 5. ἀγάπη κολλᾶ ἡμᾶς τῷ θεῷ, ἀγάπη καλύπτει πλήθος ἀμαρτίων, ἀγάπη πάντα ἀνέχεται, πάντα μακροθυμεῖ· οὐδὲν βάναυσον ἐν ἀγάπῃ, οὐδὲν ὑπερήφανον· ἀγάπῃ σχῆσιμα οὐκ ἔχει, ἀγάπη οὐ στασιάζει, ἀγάπη πάντα ποιεῖ ἐν ὁμοφωνίᾳ· ἐν τῇ ἀγάπῃ ἐτελευηθησάν ταῖς οἱ ἐκλεκτοὶ τοῦ θεοῦ, δίχα ἀγάπης οὐδὲν εὑρίσκον ἐστιν ἐν θεῷ. 6. ἐν ἀγάπῃ προσελαβεῖτο ἡμᾶς ὁ δεσπότης· διὰ τὴν ἀγάπην, ἧν ἐσχεν πρὸς ἡμᾶς,

1 Clement twice quotes this passage with ἀγνός (energetic) instead of ἁγνός before ἐν ἔργοις, but the second time he adds ἤτο ἁγνός as well.

2 ἐστιν om. L. Clem.
1. CLEMENT, xlviii. 3-xl ix. 6

3. this is the gate of the Lord, the righteous shall enter in by it." 4. So then of the many gates which are opened, that which is in righteousness is the one in Christ, in which are blessed all who enter and make straight their way in holiness and righteousness, accomplishing all things without disorder. 5. Let a man be faithful, let him have power to utter "Knowledge," let him be wise in the discernment of arguments, let him be pure in his deeds; 6. for the more he seems to be great, the more ought he to be humble-minded, and to seek the common good of all and not his own benefit.

XLIX

1. Let him who has love in Christ perform the commandments of Christ. 2. Who is able to explain the bond of the love of God? 3. Who is sufficient to tell the greatness of its beauty? 4. The height to which love lifts us is not to be expressed. 5. Love unites us to God. "Love covereth a multitude of sins. Love beareth all things, is long-suffering in all things. There is nothing base, nothing haughty in love; love admits no schism, love makes no sedition, love doeth all things in concord. In love were all the elect of God made perfect. Without love is nothing well pleasing to God. 6. In love did the Master receive us; for the sake of the love which he

1 "Knowledge" is here no doubt used in the almost technical sense of "secret knowledge, conveying power, and specially revealed," approaching closely to the meaning which it had in the various "Gnostic" systems and in the Mystery religions.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

tó áima autóú édowel upére ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς
ó kúrios ἡμῶν én thelhmati theou, kai tēn sárka
upére tís sárkoś ἡμῶν kai tēn psuchên upére tōn
psuchôn ἡμῶν.

L

1. Ὄρατε, ἀγαπητοὶ, πῶς μέγα καὶ θαυμαστῶν
ἔστιν ἡ ἀγάπη, καὶ τῆς τελειωτητος αὐτῆς οὐκ
ἔστιν εξήγησις. 2. τὸς Ικάνος ἐν αὐτῇ εὑρέθηναι,
eὶ μὴ οὐδὲν καταξιώσῃ οὗ θεὸς; δεώμεθα οὖν καὶ
αιτώμεθα ἀπὸ τοῦ ἑλέους αὐτοῦ, ἵνα ἐν ἀγάπῃ
eὑρεθῶμεν δίχα προσκλίσεως ἀνθρωπίνης, ἁμώμοι.
3. αἰ γενεὰ πᾶσαι ἀπὸ Ἄδαι ἔως τῆς τῆς
ἡμέρας παρῆλθον, ἀλλὰ οἱ ἐν ἀγάπῃ τελειωθέντες
κατὰ τὴν τοῦ θεοῦ χάριν ἔχουσιν χῶρον εὑσέβων,
οἱ φανερωθήσονται ἐν τῇ ἐπίσκοπῃ τῆς βασιλείας
τοῦ Χριστοῦ. 4. γέγραπται γάρ. Εἰς ἑλθεῖτε εἰς τὰ
ταμεῖα μικρὸν ὅσον ὅσον, ἕως οὐ παρέλθῃ ἡ ὀργὴ
cαὶ ὁ θυμὸς μου, καὶ μην ἁσθήσωμαι ἡμέρας ἀγαθῆς,
καὶ ἀναστήσω ύμᾶς ἐκ τῶν θηκῶν ύμῶν. 5. μα-
κάριοι ἐσμεν, ἀγαπητοὶ, εἰ τὰ προστάγματα τοῦ
θεοῦ ἐποιοῦμεν ἐν ὁμονοίᾳ ἀγάπης, εἰς τὸ ἀφε-
θῆναι ἡμῖν διὰ ἀγάπης τὰς ἀμαρτίας. 6. γέγραπ-
tαι γάρ. Μακάριοι, ὃν ἀφέθησαν αἱ ἀνομίαι καὶ
δῶν ἐπεκαλύφθησαν αἱ ἀμαρτίαι μακάριοι ἀνήρ,
oὐ οὐ μὴ λογίζηται κύριος ἀμαρτίαιν, οὐδὲ ἔστιν
ἐν τῷ στόματι αὐτοῦ δόλος. 7. οὕτως ὁ μακαρι-

1 Χριστοῦ (A)LK Clem., theou CS.
2 This seems corrupt: a present is required.
had towards us did Jesus Christ our Lord give his blood by the will of God for us, and his flesh for our flesh, and his soul for our souls.”

L

1. See, beloved, how great and wonderful is love, and that of its perfection there is no expression. 2. Who is able to be found in it save those to whom God grants it? Let us then beg and pray of his mercy that we may be found in love, without human partisanship, free from blame. 3. All the generations from Adam until this day have passed away; but those who were perfected in love by the grace of God have a place among the pious who shall be made manifest at the visitation of the Kingdom of Christ. 4. For it is written, “Enter into thy chambers for a very little while, until my wrath and fury pass away, and I will remember a good day, and will raise you up out of your graves.” 5. Blessed are we, beloved, if we perform the commandments of God in the concord of love, that through love our sins may be forgiven. 6. For it is written “Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered; blessed is the man whose sin the Lord will not reckon, and in whose mouth is no guile.”

1 Or, perhaps “life for our lives”; but there seems to be an antithesis in the Greek between σῶμα, flesh, and ψυχή, soul.
σμος ἐγένετο ἐπὶ τοὺς ἐκλελεγμένους ὑπὸ τοῦ θεοῦ διὰ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ τοῦ κυρίου ἡμῶν, ὥς ἡ δόξα εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας τῶν αἰώνων. ἀμήν.

LI

1. Ὅσα οὖν παρεπέσαμεν καὶ ἐποιήσαμεν διὰ τινὰς παρεμπτώσεις τοῦ ἀντικειμένου, ἄξιωσόμεν αφεθήναι ἡμῖν. καὶ ἔκεινοι δὲ, οἵτως ἀρχηγοὶ στάσεως καὶ διχοστασίας ἐγενήθησαν, ὠφείλονσιν τὸ κοινὸν τῆς ἐλπίδος σκοπεῖν. 2. οἱ γὰρ μετὰ φόβοι καὶ ἀγάπης πολυτενόμενοι ἐαυτοὺς θελοῦσιν μᾶλλον αἰκίας περιπίπτειν ἢ τοὺς πλησίον μᾶλλον δὲ ἐαυτὸν κατάγνωσιν φέρουσιν ἢ τῆς παραδεδομένης ἡμῖν καλῶς καὶ δικαίως ὄμοφωνιας, 3. καλὸν γὰρ ἀνθρώπῳ ἐξομολογεῖσθαι περὶ τῶν παραπτωμάτων ἢ σκληροῦσιν τὴν καρδίαν αὐτοῦ, καθὼς ἐσκληρύνθη ἡ καρδία τῶν στασιαζόντων πρὸς τὸν θεράποντα τοῦ θεοῦ Μωϋσῆν, ὅν τὸ κρίμα πρόδηλον ἐγενήθη. 4. κατέβησαν γὰρ εἰς ἄδον ξόντες, καὶ θάνατος ποιμανεὶ αὐτοὺς. 5. Φαραώ καὶ ἡ στρατιά αὐτοῦ καὶ πάντες οἱ ἡγούμενοι Ἀιγύπτου, τὰ τε ἄρματα καὶ οἱ ἀνάβαται αὐτῶν οὐ δι' ἄλλην τινὰ αἰτίαν ἐβυθίσθησαν εἰς θάλασσαν ἐρυθρὰν καὶ ἀπόλοντο, ἀλλὰ διὰ τὸ σκληρύνθηναί αὐτῶν τὰς ἄσυνετος καρδίας μετὰ τὸ γενέσθαι τὰ σημεῖα καὶ τὰ τέρατα ἐν γῇ Ἀιγύπτου διὰ τοῦ θεράποντος τοῦ θεοῦ Μωϋσέως.

1 The text is doubtful: ὅπερ τὰς παρεμπτώσεις Clem., propter quasdam incursiones L, the equivalent of ὅπερ τὰς παρεμπτώσεις τινῶν (tás) K, διὰ τινὸς τῶν ACS.
I. CLEMENT, L. 7–LI. 5

7. This blessing was given to those who have been chosen by God through Jesus Christ our Lord, to whom be the glory for ever and ever. Amen.

LI

1. Let us then pray that for our transgressions, and for what we have done through any attacks of the adversary, forgiveness may be granted to us. And those also who were the leaders of sedition and disagreement are bound to consider the common hope. 2. For those who live in fear and love are willing to suffer torture themselves rather than their neighbours, and they suffer the blame of themselves, rather than that of our tradition of noble and righteous harmony, 3. for it is better for man to confess his transgressions than to harden his heart, even as the heart of those was hardened who rebelled against God’s servant Moses, and their condemnation was made manifest, 4. for “they went down into Hades alive” and “death shall be their shepherd.” 5. Pharaoh and his army and all the rulers of Egypt, “the chariots and their riders,” were sunk in the Red Sea, and perished for no other cause than that their foolish hearts were hardened, after that signs and wonders had been wrought in the land of Egypt by God’s servant Moses.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

LII

1. Ἀπροσδεής, ἀδελφοί, ὁ δεσπότης ὑπάρχει τῶν ἀπάντων· οὐδὲν οὐδενὸς χρῆτει εἰ μὴ τὸ ἔξομολογεῖσθαι αὐτῷ. 2. φησίν γὰρ ο ἐκλεκτὸς
Ps. 69, 30–32
Δανείδ. Ἐξομολογήσομαι τῷ κυρίῳ, καὶ ἀρέσει αὐτῷ ὑπὲρ μόσχον νέον κέρατα ἐκφέροντα καὶ ὀπλάς· ἰδέτωσαν πτωχοὶ καὶ εὐφρανθήτωσαν.
Ps. 50, 14, 15
3. καὶ πάλιν λέγει. Θύσον τῷ θεῷ θυσίαν αἰνέσεως καὶ ἀπόδος τῷ υἱῷ σου τὰς εὐχὰς σου· καὶ ἑπικάλεσαι με ἐν ἡμέρᾳ θλίψεως σου, καὶ ἐξελοῦμαι σε, καὶ δοξάσεις με. 4. θυσία γὰρ τῷ
Ps. 51, 17
θεῷ πνεύμα συντετριμμένον.

LIII

1. Ἐπίστασθε γὰρ καὶ καλῶς ἐπίστασθε τὰς ἱερὰς γραφάς, ἀγαπητοί, καὶ ἐγκεκύφατε εἰς τὰ λόγια τοῦ θεοῦ. πρὸς ἀνάμνησιν οὖν ταῦτα γράφο-μεν. 2. Μωϋσέως γὰρ ἀναβάντος εἰς τὸ ὅρος καὶ ποιήσαντος τεσσαράκοντα ἡμέρας καὶ τεσσαρά-
Deut. 9, 12
κοντα νῦκτας ἐν νηστείᾳ καὶ ταπεινώσει, εἶπεν πρὸς αὐτὸν ὁ θεός. Κατάβηθι1 τὸ τάχος ἑντεῦθεν, διὶ ἡμῶν ὁ λαὸς σου, οὓς ἔξηγαγες ἐκ γῆς Αἰγύπτου· παρέβησαν ταχὺ ἐκ τῆς ὁδοῦ ἢς ἑνετείλω αὐτῶς, ἐποίησαν ἑαυτοῖς χωνεύματα.
Deut. 9, 18, 14
καὶ εἶπεν κύριος πρὸς αὐτὸν· Δελάληκα
(Exod. 32, 7–8)
Deut. 9, 18, 14
(Exod. 32, 9–10)
πρὸς σε ἀπαξ καὶ δις λέγων· Ἔσωρακα τὸν λαὸν
tοῦτον, καὶ ἰδοὺ ἐστιν σκληροτραχύλος· ἐσάν
1 Μωϋσῆ, Μωϋσῆ κατάβηθι Δ(C) om. Μωϋσῆ, Μωϋσῆ LSK.

98
I. CLEMENT, LII. i—LIII. 3

LII

1. The Master, brethren, is in need of nothing: he asks nothing of anyone, save that confession be made to him. 2. For David the chosen says:—"I will confess to the Lord, and it shall please him more than a young calf that groweth horns and hoofs: let the poor see it and be glad." 3. And again he says "Sacrifice to God a sacrifice of praise, and pay to the Highest thy vows; and call upon me in the day of thy affliction, and I will deliver thee and thou shalt glorify me. 4. For the sacrifice of God is a broken spirit."

LIII

1. For you have understanding, you have a good understanding of the sacred Scriptures, beloved, and you have studied the oracles of God. Therefore we write these things to remind you. 2. For when Moses went up into the mountain, and passed forty days and forty nights in fasting and humiliation, God said to him:—"Go down hence quickly, for thy people, whom thou didst bring out of the land of Egypt, have committed iniquity; they have quickly gone aside out of the way which thou didst command them; they have made themselves molten images." 3. And the Lord said to him:—"I have spoken to thee once and twice, saying, I have seen this people, and behold it is stiffnecked; suffer
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

με ἐξολοθρεύσαι αὐτοὺς, καὶ ἐξαλείψω τὸ ὄνομα αὐτῶν ὑποκάτωθεν τοῦ οὐρανοῦ, καὶ ποιήσω σε εἰς ἐθνος μέγα καὶ θάναμστον καὶ πολὺ μᾶλλον ἡ τούτο. 4. καὶ εἶπεν Ὁμώσης· Μηδαμῶς, κύριε· ἄφες τὴν ἀμαρτίαν τῷ λαῷ τούτῳ, ἢ καὶ ἐξάλειψον ἐκ βίβλου ζώντων. 5. ὦ μεγάλη ἀγάπης, ὦ τελειώτητος ἀνυπερβλήτου, παρρησιάζεται θεράπων πρὸς κύριον, αἰτεῖται ἄφεσιν τῷ πλήθει, ἢ καὶ ἑαυτὸν ἐξαλειφθῆναι μετ' αὐτῶν ἄξιοι.

LIV

1. Τίς οὖν ἐν ὑμῖν γενναῖος, τίς εὐσπλαγχνος, τίς πεπληρωμένος ἀγάπης; 2. εἰπάτω· Εἰ δι' ἐμὲ στάσις καὶ ἔρις καὶ σχίσματα, ἐκχωρόν, ἀπειμο, οὐ ἔαν βούλησθε, καὶ ποιῶ τὰ προστασομένα ὑπὸ τοῦ πλήθους· μόνον τὸ ποιμνὶ τοῦ Χριστοῦ εἰρηνευτῶ μετὰ τῶν καθεσταμένων προσβετέρων. 3. τούτο οὐ ποιήσας ἑαυτῷ μέγα κλέος ἐν Χριστῷ περιποίησεται, καὶ πᾶς τόπος δέξεται αὐτόν, τοῦ γὰρ κυρίου ἡ γῆ καὶ τὸ πλῆρωμα αὐτῆς. 4. ταῦτα οἱ πολιτεύομενοι τὴν ἀμεταμέλητον πολιτείαν τοῦ θεοῦ ἐποίησαν καὶ ποιήσουσιν.

LV

1. ἵνα δὲ καὶ ὑποδείγματα ἑθῶν ἐνεγκωμεν. πολλοὶ βασίλεις καὶ ἤγοιμενοι, λοιμικοῖ τινος ἐνστάτως καιροῦ, χρησμοδοτήσετε παρέδωκαν ἑαυτοὺς εἰς θάνατον, ἵνα ρύσωνται διὰ τοῦ ἑαυτῶν αἰματος τοὺς πολίτας· πολλοὶ ἐξεχώρησαν ἰδίων

100
me to destroy them, and I will wipe out their name from under heaven, and thee will I make into a nation great and wonderful and much more than this." 4. And Moses said, "Not so, Lord; pardon the sin of this people, or blot me also out of the book of the living." 5. O great love! O unsurpassable perfection! The servant is bold with the Lord, he asks forgiveness for the people, or begs that he himself may be blotted out together with them.

LIV

1. Who then among you is noble, who is compassionate, who is filled with love? 2. Let him cry:—"If sedition and strife and divisions have arisen on my account, I will depart, I will go away whithersoever you will, and I will obey the commands of the people; only let the flock of Christ have peace with the presbyters set over it." 3. He who does this will win for himself great glory in Christ, and every place will receive him, for "the earth is the Lord's, and the fullness of it." 4. This has been in the past, and will be in the future, the conduct of those who live without regrets as citizens in the city of God.

LV

1. Let us also bring forward examples from the other heathen. Many kings and rulers, when a time of pestilence has set in, have followed the counsel of oracles, and given themselves up to death, that they might rescue their subjects through their own blood.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

πόλεως, ἵνα μὴ στασιάζωσιν ἐπὶ πλεῖον. 2. ἐπι- 
στάμεθα πολλοὺς ἐν ἧμῖν παραδεδωκότας ἑαυτοὺς 
eis δεσμά, ὅπως ἐτέρους λυτρώσωσται: πολλοὶ 
ἑαυτοὺς παρέδωκαν εἰς δουλείαν, καὶ λαβόντες 
tὰς τιμὰς αὐτῶν ἐτέρους ἐψώμισαν. 3. πολλαὶ 
γυναῖκες ἐνδυναμώθησαν διὰ τῆς χάριτος τοῦ 
θεοῦ ἐπετελέσαντο πολλὰ ἀνδρεία. 4. 'Ἰουδίθ ἡ 
μακαρία, ἐν συγκλεισμῷ οὕσης τῆς πόλεως, 
ὑπήρξατο παρὰ τῶν πρεσβυτέρων ἐαθήναι αὐτὴν 
ἐξελθείν εἰς τὴν παρεμβολὴν τῶν ἀλλοφύλων. 
5. παραδοῦσα οὖν ἑαυτὴν τῷ κινδύνῳ ἐξῆλθεν δι' 
ἀγάπην τῆς πατρίδος καὶ τοῦ λαοῦ τοῦ υἱοῦ 
eἰς συγκλεισμῷ, καὶ παρέδωκεν κύριος Ὁ λοφέρνην ἐν 
χειρὶ θελείας. 6. οὐχ ἦττον1 καὶ ἡ τελειᾳ κατὰ 
πίστιν Ἐσθήρ κινδύνῳ ἑαυτὴν παρέβαλεν, ἵνα 
τὸ ἔθνος2 τοῦ Ἰσραήλ μέλλον ἀπολέσθαι ρύσηται. 
διὰ γὰρ τῆς νηστείας καὶ τῆς ταπεινώσεως αὐτῆς 
ἐξώσεν τὸν παντελότην δεσπότην3 τῶν αἰώνων: 
διὰ ιδὼν τὸ ταπεινὸν τῆς ψυχῆς αὐτῆς ἐρύσατο τὸν 
λαὸν, ὃν χάριν ἐκινδύνευσεν.

LVI

1. Καὶ ἥμεις οὖν ἐντύχωμεν περὶ τῶν ἐν τινὶ 
παραπτώματι ὑπαρχόντων, ὅπως δοθῇ αὐτοῖς 
ἐπτείκεια καὶ ταπεινοφροσύνη εἰς τὸ εἰξαί αὐτοῖς 
μὴ ἥμιν ἀλλὰ τῷ θελήματι τοῦ θεοῦ· οὕτως γὰρ 
ἐσται αὐτοῖς ἐγκαρπίς καὶ τελείᾳ ἡ πρὸς τῶν θεῶν

1 ἦττον CSK, ἦττον A ("to no less danger").
2 ἔθνος LSK, δωδεκάφυλον ("the twelve tribes") AC.
3 δεσπότην LK, δεσπότην θεον A, θεον C (S also inserts θεον 
but after τῶν αἰώνων).

192
I. CLEMENT, LV. I—LVI. 1

Many have gone away from their own cities, that sedition might have an end. 2. We know that many among ourselves have given themselves to bondage that they might ransom others. Many have delivered themselves to slavery, and provided food for others with the price they received for themselves. 3. Many women have received power through the grace of God and have performed many deeds of manly valour. 4. The blessed Judith, when her city was besieged, asked the elders to suffer her to go out into the camp of the strangers. 5. So she gave herself up to danger, and went forth for love of her country and her people in their siege, and the Lord delivered over Holofernes by the hand of a woman. 6. Not less did Esther also, who was perfect in faith, deliver herself to danger, that she might rescue the nation of Israel from the destruction that awaited it; for with fasting and humiliation she besought the all-seeing Master of the Ages, and he saw the meekness of her soul, and rescued the people for whose sake she had faced peril.

LVI

1. Let then us also intercede for those who have fallen into any transgression, that meekness and humility be given to them, that they may submit, not to us, but to the will of God; for so will they have fruitful and perfect remembrance before God.
καὶ τοὺς ἁγίους μετ’ οἴκτηριμῶν μνεία. 2. ἀναλάβωμεν παιδείαν, ἐφ’ ἦν οὐδεὶς ὤφείλει ἁγανακτεῖν, ἁγαπητοί. ἡ νουθέτησις, ἢν ποιούμεθα εἰς ἅλλους, καλὴ ἔστω καὶ ὑπεράγαν ὁφέλιμος· κολλᾷ γὰρ ἡμᾶς τῷ θελήματι τοῦ θεοῦ. 3. οὕτως γὰρ φησὶν ὁ ἁγιος λόγος. Παιδεύων ἐπαιδευσέν με ὁ κύριος, καὶ τῷ θανάτῳ οὐ παρέδωκεν με· 4. ὦ γὰρ ἁγαπᾷ κύριος παιδεύει, μαστυγοὶ δὲ πάντα νῦν ὑπάρχοντες θελεῖ θεοῦ. 5. Παιδεύσει με γάρ, φησίν, δίκαιος ἐν ἑλέει καὶ ἑλέγξει με, ἐλαιον δὲ ἄμαρτωλὸν μὴ λυπανόντω τὴν κεφαλήν μου.

6. καὶ πάλιν ἴέχει: Μακάριος ἀνθρώπος, διὸ ἠλεγξὲν ὁ κύριος· νουθέτησις δὲ παντοκράτορος μὴ ἀπανάινον· αὐτὸς γὰρ ἁλγεῖν ποιεῖ, καὶ πάλιν ἀποκαθιστήσει. 7. ἔπαισεν, καὶ αἱ χεῖρες αὐτοῦ ἱσταντο. 8. ἔξακις ἔξ ἀναγκῶν ἐξελείταί σε, ἐν δὲ τῷ ἐβδόμῳ οὐχ ἁψεῖται σου κακῶν. 9. ἐν λιμῷ ρύσεται σε ἐκ θανάτου, ἐν πολέμῳ δὲ ἐκ χειρὸς σιδήρου γυνείσει σε. 10. καὶ ἀπὸ μάστυγος γλώσσης σε κρύψει, καὶ οὐ μὴ φοβηθήσῃ κακῶν ἐπερχομένων. 11. ἀδίκων καὶ ἀνόμων καταγελάση, ἀπὸ δὲ θηρίων ἁγρίων οὐ μὴ φοβηθής. 12. θήρες γὰρ ἁγροὶ εἰρηνεύσοντον σου. 13. εἶτα γνῶσθη, ὅτι εἰρηνεύεσί σου ὁ σώκος, ἢ δὲ δίαιτα τῆς σκηνῆς σου οὐ μὴ ἀμάρτητῃ. 14. γνῶσθη δὲ, ὅτι πολὺ τὸ στέρμα σου, τὰ δὲ τέκνα σου ὅσπερ τὸ παμβότανον τοῦ ἁγροῦ. 15. ἐλεύση δὲ ἐν τάφῳ ὅσπερ σῖτος ὄρμος κατὰ καιρὸν θερίζομενος, ἢ 104
I. CLEMENT, LVI. 1–LVI. 15

and the saints, and find compassion. 2. Let us receive correction, which none should take amiss, beloved. The admonition which we make one to another is good and beyond measure helpful, for it unites us to the will of God. 3. For the holy word says thus: “With chastisement did the Lord chastise me, and he delivered me not over unto death; 4. for whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth.” 5 “For,” he says, “the righteous shall chasten me with mercy, and reprove me, but let not the oil of sinners anoint my head.” 6. And again he says “Blessed is the man whom the Lord did reprove; and reject not thou the admonition of the Almighty, for he maketh to suffer pain and again he restoreth; 7. he wounded, and his hands healed. 8. Six times shall he deliver thee from troubles, and the seventh time evil shall not touch thee. 9. In famine he shall rescue thee from death, and in-war he shall free thee from the hand of the sword. 10. And he shall hide thee from the scourge of the tongue and thou shalt not fear when evils approach. 11. Thou shalt laugh at the unrighteous and wicked, and thou shalt not be afraid of wild beasts; 12. for wild beasts shall be at peace with thee. 13. Then thou shalt know that thy house shall have peace, and the habitation of thy tabernacle shall not fail. 14. And thou shalt know that thy seed shall be many and thy children like the herb of the field. 15. And thou shalt come to the grave like ripened corn that is harvested in its due season, or like a heap on the threshing-floor.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

δὲστερ θημωνια ἄλωνος καθ' ὀραν συγκομισθείσα.
16. βλέπετε, ἀγαπητοί, πόσος ὑπερασπισμός ἐστὶν
toῖς παιδευμένοις ὑπὸ τοῦ δεσπότου. πατὴρ γὰρ
ἀγαθὸς ὃν παιδεύει εἰς τὸ ἐλεηθῆναι ἡμᾶς διὰ τῆς
ὀσίας παιδείας αὐτοῦ.

LVII

1. Ὁμείς οὖν τὴν καταβολὴν τῆς στάσεως
ποιήσαντες ὑποτάγητε τοῖς πρεσβυτέροις καὶ
παιδεύθητε εἰς μετάνοιαν, κάμψαντες τὰ γόνατα
τῆς καρδίας ὑμῶν. 2. μᾶθετε ὑποτάσσεσθαι,
ἀποθέμενοι τὴν ἀλαζόνα καὶ ὑπερήφανον τῆς
γλώσσης ὑμῶν αὐθάδειαν ἄμενοιν γὰρ ἐστὶν
ὑμῖν, ἐν τῷ ποιμνίῳ τοῦ Χριστοῦ μικροὺς καὶ
ἐλλογίμους εὐρεθήσιαι, ἢ καθ' ὑπεροχὴν δοκοῦντας
ἐκριφῆναι ἐκ τῆς ἐλπίδος αὐτοῦ. 3. οὕτως γὰρ
λέγει ἡ πανάρετος σοφία. Ἰδοῦ, προσῆσομαι ὑμῖν
ἐμῆς πνεύμων ῥῆσιν, διδάξω δὲ ὑμᾶς τὸν ἐμὸν λόγον.
4. ἐπειδὴ ἐκάλουν καὶ οὐχ ὑπηκούσατε, καὶ
ἐξετείνων λόγους καὶ οὐ προσέχετε, ἀλλὰ ἀκύρους
ἐποιεῖτε τὰς ἐμὰς βουλὰς, τοῖς δὲ ἐμοῖς ἐλέγχοις
ἡπειθῆσατε. τογγραοῦν κἂν τῇ ὑμετέρᾳ ἀπωλείᾳ
ἐπτυχεῖσομαι, καταχαροῦμαι δὲ ἡνίκα ἄν ἐρχηται
ὑμῖν ἁλεθρὸς καὶ ὡς ἄν ἀφίκηται ὑμῖν ἄφων ὅρυ-
βος, ἢ δὲ καταστροφὴ ὁμοία καταγιδὶ παρῆ, ἡ ὅταν
ἐρχηται ὑμῖν θλῆσις καὶ πολιορκία. 5. ἔσται γὰρ
ὅταν ἐπικαλέσῃσθε με, ἐγώ δὲ οὐκ εἰσακούσομαι.
I. CLEMENT, LVI. 15–LVII. 5

which is gathered together at the appointed time.”

16. You see, beloved, how great is the protection given to those that are chastened by the Master, for he is a good father and chastens us that we may obtain mercy through his holy chastisement.

LVII

1. You therefore, who laid the foundation of the sedition, submit to the presbyters, and receive the correction of repentance, bending the knees of your hearts. 2. Learn to be submissive, putting aside the boastful and the haughty self-confidence of your tongue, for it is better for you to be found small but honourable in the flock of Christ, than to be pre-eminent in repute but to be cast out from his hope. 3. For “the excellent wisdom” 1 says thus:—

“Behold I will bring forth to you the words of my spirit, 4. and I will teach you my speech, since I called and ye did not obey, and I put forth my words and ye did not attend, but made my counsels of no effect, and disobeyed my reproofs; therefore will I also laugh at your ruin, and I will rejoice when destruction cometh upon you, and when sudden confusion overtaketh you and catastrophe cometh as a storm, or when persecution or siege cometh upon you. 5. For it shall come to pass when ye call upon me, I will not hear you. The evil shall seek me and they shall not find me. For they hated wisdom and they

1 “The excellent wisdom” is a title used (a) of Proverbs, (b) of Proverbs, Ecclesiasticus, and Ecclesiastes, (c) of the third division of the O.T. (Hagiographa or “Writings”) as a whole. Cf. note on p. 57.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

ομοίως ἔνθεοςσούν με κακοί, καὶ οὐχ εὐρήσομεν. ἐμώσησαν γὰρ σοφίαν, τὸν δὲ φῶς τοῦ κυρίου οὔ προεῖλαντο, οὐδὲ ἥθελον ἐμαῖς προσέχειν βουλαῖς, ἐμνεκτήριζον δὲ ἐμοὺς ἔλέγχουσι. θ. τοι-γαροῦ ἐδούται τῆς ἑαυτῶν ὁδοῦ τοὺς καρποὺς, καὶ τῆς ἑαυτῶν ἀσεβείας πλησθήσονται. 7. ἀνθ' ὅν γὰρ ἡδίκουν νηπίους φονευθήσονται, καὶ ἔξετασμος ἀσεβείς ὀλεθρ. ο δὲ ἐμοῦ ἀκούων κατασκηνώσει ἐπι ἐξπίδι πεποιθῶς καὶ ἡσυχᾶσει ἀφόβως ἀπὸ παντὸς κακοῦ.

LVIII

1. ὅπακόουσομεν οὐν τῷ παναγίῳ καὶ ὑνόματί αὐτοῦ φυγόντες τὰς προερημένας διὰ τῆς σοφίας τοῖς ἀπειθοῦσιν ἀπειλάς, ἵνα κατασκηνώσωμεν πεποιθότες ἐπὶ τὸ ὀσιότατον τῆς μεγαλωσύνης αὐτοῦ ὄνομα. 2. δέξασθε τὴν συμβουλὴν ἡμῶν, καὶ ἔσται ἀμεταμέλητα ὑμῖν. ἢ γὰρ ὁ θεὸς καὶ ἢ θεός ο κύριος Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς καὶ τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἅγιον, ἢ τε πίστις καὶ ἡ ἐλπίς τῶν ἐκλεκτῶν, ὅτι ὁ ποιήσας ἐν ταπεινωφορούσῃ μετ' ἐκτενοῦς ἐπιεικείαις ἀμεταμελήτως τὰ ὑπὸ τοῦ θεοῦ δεδομένα δικαιώματα καὶ προστάγματα, οὕτως ἐντεταγμένος καὶ ἐλλόγιμος ἐσται εἰς τὸν ἀριθμὸν τῶν σωζόμενων διὰ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, δι' οὐ ἔστιν αὐτῷ ἡ δόξα εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας τῶν αἰώνων. ἀμήν.

1 A is missing from here to the beginning of Chapter LXIV.
2 ὡς θ' CS, om. LK and quotation by Basil.
chose not the fear of the Lord, neither would they attend to my counsels but mocked my reproofs. 6. Therefore shall they eat the fruits of their own way, and shall be filled with their own wickedness; 7. for because they wronged the innocent they shall be put to death, and inquisition shall destroy the wicked. But he who heareth me shall tabernacle with confidence in his hope, and shall be in rest with no fear of any evil."

LVIII

1. Let us then be obedient to his most holy and glorious name, and escape the threats which have been spoken by wisdom aforetime to the disobedient, that we may tabernacle in confidence on the most sacred name of his majesty. 2. Receive our counsel, and there shall be nothing for you to regret, for as God lives and as the Lord Jesus Christ lives and the Holy Spirit, the faith and hope of the elect, he who with lowliness of mind and eager gentleness has without backsliding performed the decrees and commandments given by God shall be enrolled and chosen in the number of those who are saved through Jesus Christ, through whom is to him the glory for ever and ever. Amen.
LIX

1. 'Εαν δὲ τινες ἀπειθήσωσιν τοῖς ὑπ' αὐτοῦ δι' ἥμῶν εἰρημένους, γινωσκέτωσαν ὅτι παραπτώσει καὶ κινδύνῳ ὑπομενοῦν μικρῷ ἑαυτοῦς ἐνδήσουσιν. 2. ἡμεῖς δὲ ἄθροι ἐσόμεθα ἀπὸ ταύτης τῆς ἀμαρτίας καὶ αὐτησόμεθα ἐκτενῆ τὴν δέσιν καὶ ἱκεσίαν τοιούτως, ὅπως τὸν ἀριθμὸν τῶν κατηρωμένων τῶν ἐκλεκτῶν αὐτοῦ ἐν ὅλῳ τῷ κόσμῳ διαφυλάξῃ ἀθραυστῷ ὁ δημιουργὸς τῶν ἀπάντων διὰ τοῦ ἡγαπημένου παιὸς αὐτοῦ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, δι' αὐτὸ ἐκάλεσεν ἡμᾶς ἀπὸ σκότους εἰς φῶς, ἀπὸ ἀγνωσίας εἰς ἐπίγνωσιν δόξης ὄνοματος αὐτοῦ, 3. . . ἐπὶ ἔλπιδες ἂν ἐπὶ τὸ ἀρχεγόνου πάσης κτισεως δυνάμας αὐτοῦ, ἄνοιξε τοὺς οφθαλμοὺς τῆς καρδίας ἡμῶν εἰς τὸ γινώσκειν σε τὸν μόνον υψιστὸν ἐν υψίστοις, ἑγὼν ἐν ἐγένεσιν ἀναπαύμενοι. τῶν ταπεινοῦντα ὑβρίν ὑπερηφάνων, τῶν διαλύνοντα λογισμοὺς ἑθῶν, τῶν ποιοῦντα ταπεινοῦς εἰς υψός καὶ τούς υψιοὺς ταπεινοῦντα, τῶν πλουτίζοντα καὶ πτω-χίζοντα, τῶν ἀποκτείνοντα καὶ ζητοῦντα, τοῦ πνευμάτων καὶ θεὸν πάσης σαρ- κός τῶν ἐπιβλέποντα ἐν τοῖς ἀβύσσοις, τῶν ἐπότι- την ἀνθρωπίνων ἔργων, τῶν τῶν κινδυνεύοντων

Acts 26, 18
Eph. 1, 18
Is. 57, 15
Is. 13, 11
Ps. 32, 10
Jub 5, 11
I Sam. 2, 7; cf. Luke 1, 53
Deut. 82, 39; cf. I Sam. 2, 6; II Kings 5, 7
Num. 16, 22; 27, 16

There appears to be a lacuna in the Greek: Lightfoot supplies Δός ἡμῖν, κύριε.
καὶ σῶζοντα appears to be inserted before καὶ ζητοῦ by SL, but is omitted by CK.
εὐρέτην ("benefactor") C, "creator" K; the text is doubtful but εὐρέτην (LS) seems more likely to be implied by K than εὐρέτην, and is therefore slightly more probable.
1. But if some be disobedient to the words which have been spoken by him through us, let them know that they will entangle themselves in transgression and no little danger; 2. but we shall be innocent of this sin, and will pray with eager entreaty and supplication that the Creator of the Universe may guard unhurt the number of his elect that has been numbered in all the world through his beloved child Jesus Christ, through whom he called us from darkness to light, from ignorance to the full knowledge of the glory of his name.

3. Grant us\textsuperscript{1} to hope on thy name, the source of all creation, open the eyes of our heart to know thee, that thou alone art the highest in the highest and remainest holy among the holy. Thou dost humble the pride of the haughty, thou dost destroy the imaginings of nations, thou dost raise up the humble and abase the lofty, thou makest rich and makest poor, thou dost slay and make alive, thou alone art the finder of spirits and art God of all flesh, thou dost look on the abysses, thou seest into the works of man, thou art the helper of those in danger, the saviour of those in despair, the

\textsuperscript{1} Some such addition, though not in any authority for the text, appears to be necessary.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

βοηθὸν, τὸν τῶν ἀπηλπισμένων σωτῆρα, τὸν παντὸς πνεύματος κτίστην καὶ ἐπίσκοπον τῶν πληθύνοντα ἔθνη ἐπὶ γῆς καὶ ἐκ πάντων ἐκλεξά-
μενον τοὺς ἀγαπῶντάς σε διὰ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ τοῦ ἡγαπημένου παιδός σου, δι' οὗ ἡμᾶς ἐπαίδευσας,
ηγίασας, ἐτίμησας. 4. ἀξιοῦμεν σε, δέσποτα,
βοηθὸν γενέσθαι καὶ ἀντιλήπτορα ἡμῶν. τοὺς ἐν
θλίψει ἡμῶν σώσων, τοὺς ταπεινοὺς ἔλεγον, τοὺς
πεπτωκότας ἐγείρον, τοὺς δεομένους ἐπιφάνθη,
τοὺς ἀσθενείς ἵσαι, τοὺς πλανωμένους τοῦ λαοῦ
σου ἐπίστρεψον χόρτασον τοὺς πεινώντας, λυ-
τρωσά τοὺς δεσμοὺς ἡμῶν, ἑξανάστησον τοὺς
ἀσθενοῦντας, παρακάλεσόν τοὺς ὀλυγυρυχοῦντας·
γνώτωσάν σε ἀπαντὰ τὰ ἐθνη, ὅτι σὺ εἶ ο θεὸς
μόνος καὶ Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς ὁ παῖς σου καὶ ἡμεῖς
λαός σου καὶ πρόβατα τῆς νομῆς σου.

LX

1. Σὺ γὰρ τὴν ἅγιαν τοῦ κόσμου σύστασιν ὑπὸ
tῶν ἐνεργομένων ἐφανεροποιήσας· σὺ, κύριε, τὴν
οἰκουμένην ἐκτισάς, ὁ πιστὸς ἐν πάσαις ταῖς
γενεαῖς, δίκαιος ἐν τοῖς κρίμασιν, θαυμαστὸς ἐν
ἰσχυὶ καὶ μεγαλοπρεπείᾳ, ὁ σοφὸς ἐν τῷ κτίσει
καὶ συνετὸς ἐν τῷ τὰ γενόμενα ἑδράσαι, ὁ ἀγαθὸς
ἐν τοῖς ὀρωμένοις καὶ χρηστὸς ἐν τοῖς πεποιθόσιν
ἐπὶ σέ, ἑλέημον καὶ οἰκτίρμον, ἄφες ἡμῖν τὰς
ἀνομίας ἡμῶν καὶ τὰς ἁδικίας καὶ τὰ παραπτώ-
ματα καὶ πλημμελείας. 2. μὴ λογίσῃ πᾶσαν
ἀμαρτίαν δούλων σου καὶ παιδισκῶν, ἀλλὰ καθά-
ρισον ἡμᾶς τὸν καθαρισμὸν τῆς σῆς ἀληθείας, καὶ
creator and watch over every spirit; thou dost multiply nations upon earth and hast chosen out from them all those that love thee through Jesus Christ thy beloved child, and through him hast thou taught us, made us holy, and brought us to honour.

4. We beseech thee, Master, to be our "help and succour." Save those of us who are in affliction, have mercy on the lowly, raise the fallen, show thyself to those in need, heal the sick, turn again the wanderers of thy people, feed the hungry, ransom our prisoners, raise up the weak, comfort the faint-hearted; let all "nations know thee, that thou art God alone," and that Jesus Christ is thy child, and that "we are thy people and the sheep of thy pasture."

LX

1. For thou through thy operations didst make manifest the eternal fabric of the world; thou, Lord, didst create the earth. Thou that art faithful in all generations, righteous in judgment, wonderful in strength and majesty, wise in thy creation, and prudent in establishing thy works, good in the things which are seen, and gracious among those that trust in thee, O "merciful and compassionate," forgive us our iniquities and unrighteousness, and transgressions, and short-comings. 2. Reckon not every sin of thy servants and handmaids, but
κατεύθυνον τὰ διαβήματα ἡμῶν ἐν ὅσιότητι καρδίας πορεύεσθαι καὶ ποιεῖν τὰ καλὰ καὶ εὐάρεστα εὐώπιον σου καὶ εὐώπιον τῶν ἄρχοντων ἡμῶν.
3. ναί, δέσποτα, ἐπίφανον τὸ πρόσωπόν σου ἐφ' ἡμᾶς εἰς ἀγαθὰ ἐν εἰρήνη, εἰς τὸ σκεπασθῆναι ἡμᾶς τῇ χειρί σου τῇ κραταίᾳ καὶ ῥυσθῆναι ἀπὸ πάσης ἀμαρτίας τῷ βραχίονι σου τῷ ὑψηλῷ, καὶ ῥύσαι ἡμᾶς ἀπὸ τῶν μισοῦντων ἡμᾶς ἀδίκως.
4. δὸς ὁμονοίαν καὶ εἰρήνην ἡμῖν τε καὶ πᾶσιν τοῖς κατοικούσιν τὴν γῆν, καθὼς ἔδωκας τοῖς πατράσιν ἡμῶν, ἐπικαλομένους σε αὐτῶν ὅσιον ἐν πίστει καὶ ἀληθείᾳ, ὑπηκοόσις γνωμένους τῷ παντοκράτορι καὶ εὐδοκίᾳ ὀνόματί σου, τοῖς τῇ ἄρχουσιν καὶ ἱγουμένοις ἡμῶν ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς.

LXI

1. Σῦ, δέσποτα, ἔδωκας τὴν ἐξουσίαν τῆς βασιλείας αὐτοῖς διὰ τοῦ μεγαλοπρεποῦς καὶ ἀνεκδημητοῦ κράτους σου, εἰς τὸ γινώσκοντάς ἡμᾶς τὴν ὑπὸ σοῦ αὐτοῖς δεδομένην δόξαν καὶ τιμήν ὑποτάσσεσθαι αὐτοῖς, μηδὲν ἐναντιούμενος τῷ θελήματί σου· οἷς δός, κύριε, ὑγίειαν, εἰρήνην, ὁμόνοιαν, εὐστάθειαν, εἰς τὸ διέπειν αὐτοὺς τὴν ὑπὸ σοῦ δεδομένην αὐτοῖς ἡγεμονίαν ἀπροσκόπως.

2. σὺ γὰρ, δέσποτα ἐπουράνιε, βασιλεῦ τῶν αἰώνων, δίδως τοῖς νόιοι τῶν ἀνθρώπων δόξαν καὶ τιμήν καὶ ἐξουσίαν τῶν ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς ὑπαρχόντων· σὺ, κύριε, διεύθυνον τὴν βουλὴν αὐτῶν κατὰ τὸ καλὸν καὶ εὐάρεστον ἐνώπιον σου, ὅπως διέποντες ἐν εἰρήνῃ καὶ πραύτητι εὐσεβῶς τὴν ὑπὸ σοῦ
1. CLEMÉNT, LX. 2–LXI. 2

cleanse us with the cleansing of thy truth, and "guide our steps to walk in holiness of heart, to do the things which are good and pleasing before thee" and before our rulers. 3. Yea, Lord, "make thy face to shine upon us" in peace "for our good" that we may be sheltered by thy mighty hand, and delivered from all sin by "thy uplifted arm," and deliver us from them that hate us wrongfully. 4. Give peace concord and peace to us and to all that dwell on the earth, as thou didst give to our fathers who called on thee in holiness with faith and truth, and grant that we may be obedient to thy almighty and glorious name, and to our rulers and governors upon the earth.

LXI

1. Thou, Master, hast given the power of sovereignty to them through thy excellent and inexpressible might, that we may know the glory and honour given to them by thee, and be subject to them, in nothing resisting thy will. And to them, Lord, grant health, peace, concord, firmness that they may administer the government which thou hast given them without offence. 2. For thou, heavenly Master, king of eternity, hast given to the sons of men glory and honour and power over the things which are on the earth; do thou, O Lord, direct their counsels according to that which is "good and pleasing" before thee, that they may administer with piety in peace and gentleness the power given to them by thee, and may find mercy.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

αὐτοῖς δεδομένην ἐξουσίαν ἱλεώ σου τυγχάνωσιν.
3. ὁ μόνος δυνατὸς ποιῆσαι ταῦτα καὶ περισσότερα ἀγαθὰ μεθ’ ἡμῶν, σοι ἐξουσιοδοτοῦμεθα διὰ τοῦ ἀρχιερέως καὶ προστάτου τῶν ψυχῶν ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, δι’ οὗ ὁὐ ἰδία καὶ ἡ μεγαλωσύνη καὶ νῦν καὶ εἰς γενέαν γενεὼν καὶ εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας τῶν αἰῶνων. ἀμήν.

LXII

1. Περὶ μὲν τῶν ἀνηκόντων τῇ θρησκείᾳ ἡμῶν καὶ τῶν ὕφελμωτάτων εἰς ἐνάρετον βίον τοῖς θέλουσιν εὐσεβῶς καὶ δικαίως διευθύνειν, ἰκανῶς ἐπεστείλαμεν ὑμῖν, ἀνδρεῖς ἀδελφοί. 2. περὶ γὰρ πίστεως καὶ μετανοίας καὶ γνησίας ἁγάπης καὶ ἐγκρατείας καὶ σωφροσύνης καὶ ὑπομονῆς πάντα τόποιν ἐφηλαφῆσαμεν, ὑπομιμησκοῦντες δεῖν ὑμᾶς ἐν δικαιοσύνῃ καὶ ἀλθείᾳ καὶ μακροθυμίᾳ τῷ παντοκράτῳ θεῷ ὅσιος εὐαρεστεῖν, ὑμονοουντας ἀμυνησικάκως ἐν ἁγάπῃ καὶ εἰρήνῃ μετὰ ἐκτενούς ἐπιεικείας, καθὼς καὶ οἱ προδηλομένοι πατέρες ἡμῶν εὐηρέστησαν ταπεινοφρονοῦντες τὰ πρὸς τὸν πατέρα καὶ κτίστην θεόν καὶ πάντας ἀνθρώπους. 3. καὶ ταῦτα τοσοῦτον ἔδωκαν ὑπεμιμῆσαμεν, ἐπειδὴ σαφῶς ἦδειμεν γράφειν ἡμᾶς ἀνδράσιν πιστοῖς καὶ ἐλλογιμωτάτοις καὶ ἐγκεκυφόσιν εἰς τὰ λόγια τῆς παιδείας τοῦ θεοῦ.

1 τοῖς θέλουσιν ἐνάρετον βίον SL, εἰς ἐνάρετον βίον τοῖς θέλουσιν ΣΚ.
2 κτίστην θεόν SL, θεόν καὶ κτίστην Ω.
I. CLEMENT, LXI. 2–LXII. 3

in thine eyes. 3. O thou who alone art able to do these things and far better things for us, we praise thee through Jesus Christ, the high priest and guardian of our souls, through whom be glory and majesty to thee, both now and for all generations and for ever and ever. Amen.

LXII

1. We have now written to you, brethren, sufficiently touching the things which befit our worship, and are most helpful for a virtuous life to those who wish to guide their steps in piety and righteousness. 2. For we have touched on every aspect of faith and repentance and true love and self-control and sobriety and patience, and reminded you that you are bound to please almighty God with holiness in righteousness and truth and long-suffering, and to live in concord, bearing no malice, in love and peace with eager gentleness, even as our fathers, whose example we quoted, were well-pleasing in their humility towards God, the Father and Creator, and towards all men. 3. And we had the more pleasure in reminding you of this, because we knew quite well that we were writing to men who were faithful and distinguished and had studied the oracles of the teaching of God.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

LXIII

1. Θεμιτών οὖν ἔστιν τοῖς τοιούτοις καὶ τοσούτοις ὑποδείγμασιν προσελθόντας ὑποθίναι τὸν τράχηλον καὶ τὸν τῆς ὑπακοῆς τόπον ἀναπληρώσαι, ὅπως ἴσχυσαντες τῆς ματαίας στάσεως ἐπὶ τὸν προκείμενον ἡμῖν ἐν ἀληθείᾳ σκοπὸν δίχα παντὸς μόνου καταντήσομεν. 2. χαρὰν γὰρ καὶ ἀγαλλίασιν ἡμῖν παρέξετε, ἐὰν ὑπήκουσιν γενόμενοι τοῖς υφ’ ἡμῶν γεγραμμένοις διὰ τοῦ ἀγίου πνεύματος ἐκκόψατε τὴν ἀδέμετρον τοῦ ἤήλους υἱῶν ὀργῆν κατὰ τὴν ἐνυπερίφηγη νήμων ὑμῶν, ὑπὸ ἐποιησάμεθα περὶ εἰρήνης καὶ ὁμονοίας εἰς τῇ τῇ ἐπιστολῇ. 3. ἐπέμψαμεν δὲ ἀνδρὰς πιστοὺς καὶ σώφρονας ἀπὸ νεότητος ἀναστραφέντας ἐως γῆρους ἀμέμπτως ἐν ἡμῖν, οὕτως καὶ μάρτυρες ἔσωνται μεταξὺ υἱῶν καὶ ἡμῶν. 4. τοῦτο δὲ ἐποιήσαμεν, ἵνα εἰδήτε, ὅτι πᾶσα ἡμῶν φροντὶς καὶ γέγονεν καὶ ἔστιν εἰς τὸ ἐν τάχει ὑμᾶς εἰρηνεύσαι.

LXIV

1. Δοιπότις ο παντετέπτης θεὸς καὶ δεσπότης τῶν πνευμάτων καὶ κύριος πάσης σαρκός, ὁ ἐκλεξάμενος τῶν κύριον Ἰησοῦν Χριστόν καὶ ἡμᾶς Num. 16, 22; 27, 10; 2c. Heb. 12, 9 Deut. 14, 2

1 σωφροσύνην CLK, καὶ σωφ. AS.
I. CLEMENT, LXIII. 1–LXIV. 1

LXIII

1. It is therefore right that we should respect so many and so great examples, and bow the neck, and take up the position of obedience, so that ceasing from vain sedition we may gain without any fault the goal set before us in truth. 2. For you will give us joy and gladness, if you are obedient to the things which we have written through the Holy Spirit, and root out the wicked passion of your jealousy according to the entreaty for peace and concord which we have made in this letter. 3. And we have sent faithful and prudent men, who have lived among us without blame from youth to old age, and they shall be witnesses between you and us. 4. We have done this that you may know that our whole care has been and is directed to your speedy attainment of peace.

LXIV

1. Now may God, the all-seeing, and the master Blessing of spirits, and the Lord of all flesh, who chose out the Lord Jesus Christ, and us through him for "a peculiar people," give unto every soul that is called after his glorious and holy name, faith, fear, peace, patience and long-suffering, self-control, purity, sobriety, that they may be well-pleasing to his
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

eἰς εὐαρέστησιν τῷ ὄνοματι αὐτοῦ διὰ τοῦ ἀρχιερέως καὶ προστάτου ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, δι’ ὁ ἄνω δόξα καὶ μεγαλωσύνη, κράτος καὶ τιμή, καὶ νῦν καὶ εἰς πάντας τούς αἰώνας τῶν αἰώνων. ἀμήν.

LXV

1. Τοὺς δὲ ἀπεσταλμένους ἀφ’ ἡμῶν Κλαύδιου Ἐφηβου καὶ Θυάλεριον Βίτωνα σὺν καὶ Φορτονινάτῳ ἐν εἰρήνῃ μετὰ χαρᾶς εἰς τάχει ἀναπέμψατε πρὸς ἡμᾶς, ὡς θάττου τὴν εὐκταλίαν καὶ ἐπιτυγχάνῃ ἡμῖν εἰρήνην καὶ ὑμοίοιν ἀπαγγέλλωσιν, εἰς τὸ τάχιος καὶ ἡμᾶς χαρῆναι περὶ τῆς εὐσταθείας ὑμῶν.

2. Ἡ χάρις τοῦ κυρίου ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ μεθ’ ὑμῶν καὶ μετὰ πάντων πανταχῆ τῶν κεκλημένων ὑπὸ τοῦ θεοῦ δι’ αὐτοῦ, δι’ οὐ αὐτῷ δόξα, τιμὴ, κράτος καὶ μεγαλωσύνη, θρόνος αἰώνιος, ἀπὸ τῶν αἰώνων εἰς τοὺς αἰώνας τῶν αἰώνων. ἀμήν.

Ἐπιστολὴ τῶν Ῥωμαιῶν πρὸς τοὺς Κορινθίους.

1 δι’ αὐτοῦ ΣL(K), καὶ δι’ αὐτοῦ ΔS,
I. CLEMENT, LXIV. 1–LXV. 2

name through our high priest and guardian Jesus Christ, through whom be to him glory and majesty, might and honour, both now and to all eternity. Amen.

LXV

1. **Send** back quickly to us our messengers Claudius Ephebus and Valerius Vito and Fortunatus, in peace with gladness, in order that they may report the sooner the peace and concord which we pray for and desire, that we also may the more speedily rejoice in your good order.

2. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you and with all, in every place, who have been called by God through him, through whom be to him glory, honour, power and greatness and eternal dominion, from eternity to eternity. Amen.

The Epistle of the Romans to the Corinthians.¹

¹ This form of subscription is found only in the Coptie version, though it was probably also known to Clement of Alexandria, and is undoubtedly correct. The other MSS. all attribute it directly to Clement.
THE
SECOND EPISTLE OF CLEMENT
TO THE CORINTHIANS
THE
SECOND EPISTLE OF CLEMENT
TO THE CORINTHIANS

The so-called second epistle of Clement is found in the two Greek MSS. (AC) of I. Clement, and in the Syriac version (S), but it is not in the Latin or Coptic versions (LK), and it is never quoted by Clement of Alexandria, though apparent reminiscences of its language have given rise to the view that he was acquainted with it. It is clear from the MS. tradition that at least as early as the fifth century, and probably earlier, it was in some circles closely associated with I. Clement, though this was not the case in the Coptic church, which perhaps represents early Alexandrian tradition, or in the Latin Church. Western writers do, it is true, seem to speak of a "second epistle" of Clement, but they refer not to our II. Clement, but to the pseudepigraphic epistle of Clement to James.

II. Clement is a letter only in form, and scarcely in that, for the writer distinctly states (cf. Cap. XIX) that he is reading aloud, and implies that he is doing so in a meeting for religious worship: it is thus clear that it is really more a sermon than a letter. The main object of the writer is to inculcate a

125
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

high Christology, a pure life, and a belief in the resurrection of the flesh. So much is generally agreed and it is, moreover, clear that it cannot have been written by the author of I. Clement; but there is no commonly accepted view as to the community to which it was sent. Three views may be mentioned.

1. Harnack thinks that it is the letter which Soter (bishop of Rome—c. 166–174) is related to have sent to Corinth (cf. Eus. Hist. Eccl. iv. 23. 11). He thinks that Soter probably used an old homily which seemed to him to be suitable. This letter was kept in the archives of the church at Corinth together with I. Clement, which had also come from Rome; later on, when they were both copied, the real facts were forgotten and both were supposed to be letters of Clement (Harnack, Chronologie I, pp. 438 ff.).

2. Lightfoot is inclined to think that it was an ancient homily of some unknown person in the church at Corinth. He lays stress on the imagery from the games, and suggests that this was inspired by the Isthmian games. Like Harnack's this theory has the advantage of explaining why the document came to be connected with Clement,—it was found in the Corinthian archives together with I. Clement.

3. Other scholars, regarding the external evidence as practically valueless, have thought that II. Clement was originally an Alexandrian homily. Their reasons are the theological character of the book, and its possible use of the Gospel of the Egyptians. This theory explains the contents of the book more naturally than do the views of Harnack and Lightfoot, but fails to show why it was ever connected with I. Clement.

126
II. CLEMENT

Equally uncertain is the date of the book. In the absence of any direct references to contemporary events, it can only be dated by considering its place in the general development of Christian doctrine. This is a very insecure guide, but probably the half century between 120 and 170 A.D. is the period chosen by the general opinion of the best critics, and within these limits ±150 A.D. is most usually accepted, except by those who agree with Harnack to identify II. Clement with the letter of Soter to the Corinthians.
ΚΛΗΜΕΝΤΟΣ
ΠΡΟΣ ΚΟΡΙΝΘΙΟΥΣ Β

I

1. Ἄδελφοί, οὕτως δει ἡμᾶς φρονεῖν περὶ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, ὡς περὶ θεοῦ, ὡς περὶ κριτοῦ ζωντων καὶ νεκρῶν καὶ οὐ δει ἡμᾶς μικρά φρονεῖν περὶ τῆς σωτηρίας ἡμῶν. 2. ἐν τῷ γὰρ φρονεῖν ἡμᾶς μικρὰ περὶ αὐτοῦ, μικρὰ καὶ ἐλπίζομεν λαβεῖν καὶ οἱ ἀκούοντες ὡς περὶ μικρῶν ἁμαρτάνουσιν, καὶ ἡμεῖς ἀμαρτάνουμεν οὐκ εἰδότες, πόθεν ἐκλήθημεν καὶ ὑπὸ τίνος καὶ εἰς ὅν τόπον, καὶ ὅσα ὑπέμεινεν Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς παθεῖν ἐνεκα ἡμῶν. 3. τίνα οὖν ἡμεῖς αὐτῷ δῶσομεν ἀντιμισθίαν, ἣ τίνα καρπὸν ἄξιον οὐ ἡμῖν αὐτὸς ἔδωκεν; πόσα δὲ αὐτῷ ὀφείλομεν δόσι; 4. τὸ φῶς γὰρ ἡμῖν ἔχαρισατο, ὡς πατήρ νίους ἡμᾶς προσηγόρευσεν, ἀπολυμένους ἡμᾶς ἐσώσεν. 5. τοῖν οὖν αὐτῷ δωσομεν ἡ μισθὸν ἀντιμισθίας ὑν ἐλάβομεν; 6. τηροὶ οὗτες τῇ διανοίᾳ, προσκυνοῦντες λίθους καὶ εὐλα καὶ χρυσὸ καὶ ἀργυρον καὶ χάλκον, ἐργά ἀνθρώπων καὶ ὁ βίος ἡμῶν ὅλος ἄλλο οὗθεν ἦν εἰ μὴ θάνατος ἀμαύρωσιν οὖν περικείμενοι καὶ τοιαύτης ἀχλύους γέμοντες ἐν

1 ὄμ. ἀμαρτάνουσιν, καὶ ἡμεῖς ΑΣ.
THE SECOND EPISTLE OF CLEMENT TO THE CORINTHIANS

1.

1. BRETHREN, we must think of Jesus Christ as of God, as of "the Judge of the living and the dead" and we must not think little of our salvation, 2. for if we think little of him we also hope to obtain but little. And those who listen as though it were a little matter are sinning, and we also are sinning, if we do not know whence and by whom, and to what place we were called, and how great sufferings Jesus Christ endured for our sake. 3. What return, then, shall we make to him, or what fruit shall we offer worthy of that which he has given us? And how great a debt of holiness do we owe him? 4. For he gave us the light, he called us "son," as a Father, he saved us when we were perishing. 5. What praise, then, or what reward shall we give him in return for what we received? 6. We were maimed in our understanding, worshipping stone, and wood, and gold, and silver, and copper, the works of men, and our whole life was nothing else than death. We were covered with darkness, and our eyes were full of mist; but we


**THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS**

tη ὀράσει, ἀνεβλέψαμεν ἀποθέμενοι ἐκεῖνο δ' περικείμεθα νέφος τη αὐτοῦ θελῆσει. 7. ἦλθεν γὰρ ἡμᾶς καὶ σπλαγχνισθεὶς ἔσωσεν, θεασάμενος ἐν ἡμῖν πολλῇ πλάνῃ καὶ ἀπώλειαν, καὶ μηδεμίαν ἐλπίδα ἔχοντας σωτηρίας, εἰ μὴ τὴν παρ' αὐτοῦ. 8. ἐκάλεσεν γὰρ ἡμᾶς οὐκ ὄντας καὶ ἠθέλησεν ἐκ μὴ δυντος εἶναι ἡμᾶς.

**II**

1. Εὐφράνθητι, στείρα ἡ οὐ τίκτουσα, ῥήξου καὶ βόησον, ἡ οὐκ ὀδύνουσα, ὅτι πολλὰ τα τέκνα τῆς ἔρημου μᾶλλον τῆς ἔχουσης τὸν ἄνδρα. Ὡδείπερ: Ἐὐφράνθητι, στείρα ἡ οὐ τίκτουσα, ἡμᾶς εἶπεν: στείρα γὰρ ἢ ἡ ἐκκλησία ἡμῶν πρὸ τοῦ δοθῆναι αὐτῇ τέκνα. 2. ὦ δὲ εἶπεν: Βόησον, ἡ οὐκ ὀδύνουσα, τοῦτο λέγει: τὰς προσευχὰς ἡμῶν ἀπλῶς ἀναφέρειν πρὸς τὸν θεόν, μὴ ὥς αἱ ὁδύνουσαι ἐγκακῶμεν, 3. δὲ εἶπεν: Ἡ λεία τα τέκνα τῆς ἔρημου μᾶλλον τῆς ἔχουσης τὸν ἄνδρα. ὢδείπερ ἐρήμος ἐδοκεὶ εἶναι ἀπὸ τοῦ θεοῦ ὁ λαὸς ἡμῶν, νυνὶ δὲ πιστεύσαντες πλεῖονες ἐγενόμεθα τῶν δοκοῦντων ἔχειν θεόν. 4. καὶ ἔτερα δὲ γραφὴ λέγει, ὅτι οὐκ ἔλθων καλέσαι δικαίοις, ἀλλὰ ἀμαρτωλοὺς. 5. τοῦτο λέγει, ὅτι δεῖ τοὺς ἀπολλυμένους σώζειν. 6. ἐκεῖνο γὰρ ἕστιν μέγα καὶ θαυμαστὸν οὐ τὰ ἑστῶτα στηρίζειν, ἀλλὰ τὰ πίπτοντα. 7. οὔπως καὶ οὗς Ἰησοῦς ἠθέλησεν σώζαι τὰ ἀπολλύμενα, καὶ ἔσωσεν πολλοὺς, ἔλθων καὶ καλέσας ἡμᾶς ἤδη ἀπολλυμένους.
II. CLEMENT, 1. 6-11. 7

have received our sight, and by his will we have cast off the cloud which covered us. 7. For he had pity on us, and saved us in his mercy, and regarded the great error and destruction which was in us, and our hopelessness of salvation save from him; 8. for he called us when we were not, and it was his will that out of nothing we should come to being.

II

1. "Rejoice thou barren that barest not; break forth and cry thou that travailest not; for the children of the deserted are many more than hers that hath a husband." In saying, "Rejoice thou barren that barest not," he meant us, for our church was barren before children were given her. 2. And in saying, "Cry thou that travailest not," he means this,—that we should offer our prayers in sincerity to God, and not grow weary as women that give birth. 3. And in saying, "For the children of the deserted are many more than hers that hath a husband," he meant that our people seemed to be deserted by God, but that now we who have believed have become many more than those who seemed to have God. 4. And another Scripture also says, "I came not to call righteous, but sinners"; 5. He means that those who are perishing must be saved, 6. for it is great and wonderful to give strength, not to the things which are standing, but to those which are falling. 7. So Christ also willed to save the perishing, and he saved many, coming and calling us who were already perishing.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

III

1. Τοσούτον οὖν ἐλεος ποιήσαντος αὐτοῦ εἰς ἡμᾶς, πρῶτον μὲν, ὅτι ἡμεῖς οἱ ζῶντες τοῖς νεκροῖς θεοῖς οὐ θύμεν καὶ οὐ προσκυνοῦμεν αὐτοῖς, ἀλλὰ ἐγνωμεν δι' αὐτοῦ τὸν πατέρα τῆς ἀληθείας· τίς η γνώσις η πρὸς αὐτὸν, ἢ τὸ μὴ ἀρνεῖσθαι· δι' οὐ ἐγνωμεν αὐτὸν; 2. λέγει δὲ καὶ αὐτός· Τὸν ὀμολογήσαντα με ἐνώπιον τῶν ἀνθρώπων, ὁμολογήσω αὐτόν ἐνώπιον τοῦ πατρὸς μου. 3. οὗτος οὖν ἐστὶν ὁ μισθὸς ἡμῶν, ἐὰν οὖν ὀμολογήσωμεν δι' οὐ ἐσώθημεν. 4. εἰ τίνι δὲ αὐτῶν ὀμολογοῦμεν· εἰν τῷ ποιεῖν ἄ λέγει καὶ μὴ παρακούειν αὐτοῦ τῶν ἐντολῶν, καὶ μὴ μόνον χείλεσιν αὐτόν τιμᾶν, ἀλλὰ ἐξ ὅλης καρδίας καὶ ἐξ ὅλης τῆς διανοίας. 5. λέγει δὲ καὶ ἐν τῷ Ἰσαάκ. Ὁ λαὸς οὗτος τὸς χείλεσιν με τιμᾶ, ἢ δὲ καρδία αὐτῶν πόρρω ἀπεστίων ἄτριμόν.

IV

1. Μὴ μόνον οὖν αὐτὸν καλῶμεν κύριον· οὐ γὰρ τοῦτο σώσει ἡμᾶς. 2. λέγει γὰρ· Οὐ πᾶς ὁ λέγων μοι· Κύριε, κύριε, σωθήσεται, ἀλλ' ὁ ποιῶν τὴν δικαιοσύνην. 3. ὡστε οὖν, ἀδελφοί, εἰν τοῖς ἔργοις αὐτῶν ὀμολογῶμεν, ἐν τῷ ἁγαπᾷν έαυτοὺς, ἐν τῷ μὴ μουχάσθαι μηδὲ καταλαλεῖν ἀλλήλων μηδὲ ζηλοῦν, ἀλλ' ἐγκρατεῖς εἰναι, ἐλεήμονας, ἀγαθούς· καὶ συμπάσχειν ἀλλήλων ὀφείλομεν,
III

1. Seeing, then, that he has shewn such mercy towards us, first that we who are living do not sacrifice to the dead gods, and do not worship them, but through him know the father of truth, what is the true knowledge concerning him except that we should not deny him through whom we knew him? 2. And he himself also says, “Whosoever confessed me before men, I will confess him before my Father”; 3. this then is our reward, if we confess him through whom we were saved. 4. But how do we confess him? By doing what he says, and not disregarding his commandments, and honouring him not only with our lips, but “with all our heart and all our mind.” 5. And he says also in Isaiah, “This people honoureth me with their lips, but their heart is far from me.”

IV

1. Let us, then, not merely call him Lord, for this will not save us. 2. For he says, “Not everyone that saith to me Lord, Lord, shall be saved, but he that doeth righteousness.” 3. So then, brethren, let us confess him in our deeds, by loving one another, by not committing adultery, nor speaking one against another, nor being jealous, but by being self-controlled, merciful, good; and we ought to

1 The Greek is as ambiguous as the English, but this “him” no doubt refers to the “father of truth.”
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

καὶ μὴ φιλαργυρεῖν. ἐν τούτοις τοῖς ἔργοις ὁμολογῶμεν αὐτὸν καὶ μὴ ἐν τοῖς ἐναντίοις. 4. καὶ οὐ δεὶ ἡμᾶς φοβεῖσθαι τοὺς ἀνθρώπους μᾶλλον, ἀλλὰ τὸν θεόν. 5. διὰ τούτο, ταῦτα ὑμῶν πρασόντων, εἰπεν ὁ κύριος. 'Εὰν ἦτε μετ' ἐμοῦ συνηγμένοι ἐν τῷ κόλπῳ μου καὶ μὴ ποιήτε τὰς ἐντολάς μου, ἀποβαλῶ ὑμᾶς καὶ ἐρῶ ὑμῖν 'Ὑπάγετε ἀπ' ἐμοῦ, οὐκ οἶδα ὑμᾶς, πόθεν ἐστέ, ἐργάται ἄνομίας.

V

1. Ὅθεν, ἀδελφοί, καταλείψαντες τὴν παρω-κίαν τοῦ κόσμου τούτου ποιήσωμεν τὸ θέλημα τοῦ καλέσαντος ἡμᾶς, καὶ μὴ φοβηθῶμεν ἐξελθεῖν ἐκ τοῦ κόσμου τούτου. 2. λέγει γὰρ ὁ κύριος Ἐσεσθε ὡς ἁρνία ἐν μέσῳ λύκων. 3. ἀποκρεθεὶς δὲ ὁ Πέτρος αὐτῷ λέγει. Ἐὰν οὖν διασπαράξωσιν οἱ λύκοι τὰ ἁρνία; 4. εἰπεν ὁ Ἰησοῦς τῷ Πέτρῳ. Μή φοβεῖσθωσαν τὰ ἁρνία τοὺς λύκους μετὰ τὸ ἀποθανεῖν αὐτά· καὶ ὑμεῖς μὴ φοβεῖσθε τοὺς ἀποκτέννοντας υἱᾶς καὶ μηδὲν ὑμῖν δυναμένους ποιεῖν, ἀλλὰ φοβεῖσθε τὸν μετὰ τὸ ἀποθανεῖν ὑμᾶς ἐχοντα ἐξουσίαν ψυχῆς καὶ σώματος τοῦ βαλεῖν εἰς ἡσύχων πυρῶν. 5. καὶ γινώσκετε, ἀδελφοί, διὸ ἡ ἐπιτηδεία ἢ ἐν τῷ κόσμῳ τούτῳ τῆς σαρκὸς ταύτης μικρὰ ἐστιν καὶ ὅλουχρόνως, δὲ ἐπαγγελία τοῦ Χριστοῦ μεγάλη καὶ θαυμαστὴ ἐστιν, καὶ ἀνάπαυσις τῆς μελλούσης βασιλείας καὶ ζωῆς.
sympathise with each other, and not to be lovers of money. By these deeds we confess him, and not by the opposite kind. 4. And we must not fear men rather than God. 5. For this reason, if you do these things, the Lord said, "If ye be gathered together with me in my bosom, and do not my commandments, I will cast you out, and will say to you, Depart from me, I know not whence ye are, ye workers of iniquity." 1

V

1. Wherefore, brethren, let us forsake our sojourning in this world, and do the will of him who called us, and let us not fear to go forth from this world, 2. for the Lord said, "Ye shall be as lambs in the midst of wolves," 3. and Peter answered and said to him, "If then the wolves tear the lambs?" 4. Jesus said to Peter, "Let the lambs have no fear of the wolves after their death; and do ye have no fear of those that slay you, and can do nothing more to you, but fear him who after your death hath power over body and soul, to cast them into the flames of hell." 5. And be well assured, brethren, that our sojourning in this world in the flesh is a little thing and lasts a short time, but the promise of Christ is great and wonderful, and brings us rest, in the kingdom which is to come and in everlasting life. 6. What then shall

1 The source of this and the quotation in v. 2-4 is unknown; it is often supposed to have been the Gospel of the Egyptians, but there is no clear evidence of this.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

αἰωνίον. 6. τί σὺν ἐστὶν ποιήσαντας ἐπιτυχεῖν αὐτῶν, εἰ μὴ τὸ ὀσίως καὶ δικαίως ἀναστρέφεσθαι καὶ τὰ κοσμικὰ ταῦτα ὡς ἀλλότρια ἤγεισθαι καὶ μὴ ἐπιθυμεῖν αὐτῶν; 7. ἐν γὰρ τῷ ἐπιθυμείν ἡμᾶς κτήσασθαι ταῦτα ἀποπίπτομεν τῆς ὀδοῦ τῆς δικαίας.

VI

Luke 16, 13;
Mt. 6, 24
Mt. 16, 26;
Mk. 8, 36;
Luke 9, 25

1. Λέγει δὲ ὁ κύριος: Οὐδεὶς οἰκέτης δύναται δυσὶ κυρίοις δουλεύειν. εὰν ἡμεῖς θέλωμεν καὶ θεῷ δουλεύειν καὶ μαμώνα, ἀσύμφορον ἡμῖν ἐστίν. 2. τί γὰρ τὸ ὅφελος, εάν τις τῶν κόσμων ὄλων κερδήσῃ, τὴν δὲ ψυχὴν ζημιώθῃ; 3. ἐστιν δὲ οὗτος ὁ αἰῶν καὶ ὁ μέλλων δύο ἔχοντι. 4. οὗτος λέγει μοιχεῖαν καὶ φθορὰν καὶ φιλαργυρίαν καὶ ἀπάτην, ἐκείνος δὲ τούτως ἀποτάσσεται. 5. οὐ δυνάμεθα οὖν τῶν δύὸ φίλων εἶναι: δεῖ δὲ ἡμᾶς τούτῳ ἀποταξαμένους ἐκείνῳ χρᾶσθαι. 6. οἰόμεθα, ὅτι βέλτιον ἐστιν τὰ ἐνθάδε μισῆσαι, ὅτι μικρὰ καὶ ὀλυγοχρόνια καὶ φθαρτά, ἐκεῖνα δὲ ἀγαπησάσθαι, τὰ ἀγαθὰ τὰ ἀφθαρτά. 7. ποιούντες γὰρ τὸ θέλημα τοῦ Χριστοῦ εὐρίσομεν ἀνάπαυσιν: εἰ δὲ μήγε, οὐδεὶς ἡμᾶς ρύσεται ἐκ τῆς αἰωνίου κολάσεως, εάν παρακούσωμεν τῶν ἐντολῶν αὐτῶν.

8. Λέγει δὲ καὶ ἡ γραφὴ ἐν τῷ Ἰερουσαλήμ, ὅτι εὰν ἀναστή Νῶε καὶ Ἰωβ καὶ Δανιήλ, οὐ ρύσονται τὰ τέκνα αὐτῶν ἐν τῇ αἰχμαλωσίᾳ. 9. εἰ δὲ καὶ οἱ τουοῦτοι δικαιοὶ οὐ δύνανται τὰς ἐαυτῶν δικαιοσύνας ρύσασθαι τὰ τέκνα αὐτῶν, ἡμεῖς, εὰν μὴ

1 οἰόμεθα ACS, but Lightfoot emends to οἰόμεθα “Let -te.”
II. CLEMENT, v. 6–vi. 9

we do to attain these things save lead a holy and righteous life, and regard the things of this world as not our own, and not desire them? 7. For by desiring to obtain these things we fall from the way of righteousness.

VI

1. And the Lord says:—"No servant can serve two masters." If we desire to serve both God and Mammon it is unprofitable to us, 2. "For what is the advantage if a man gain the whole world but lose his soul?" 3. Now the world that is, and the world to come are two enemies. 4. This world speaks of adultery, and corruption, and love of money, and deceit, but that world bids these things farewell. 5. We cannot then be the friends of both; but we must bid farewell to this world, to consort with that which is to come. 6. We reckon that it is better to hate the things which are here, for they are little, and short-lived, and corruptible, but to love the things which are there, the good things which are incorruptible. 7. For if we do the will of Christ we shall gain rest; but if not, nothing shall rescue us from eternal punishment, if we neglect his commandments. 8. And the Scripture also says in Ezekiel that, "if Noah and Job and Daniel arise, they shall not rescue their children in the captivity." 9. But if even such righteous men as these cannot save their children by their own righteousness, with
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

τηρήσωμεν τὸ βάπτισμα ἀγνὸν καὶ ἀμέλατον, ποιὰ πεποιθῆσέ εἰσελευσόμεθα εἰς τὸ βασίλειον τοῦ θεοῦ; ἢ τίς ἡμῶν παράκλητος ἔσται, εἰ δὲν εὑρεθῶμεν ἔργα ἔχοντες ὅσια καὶ δίκαια;

VII

1. "Ωστε οὖν, άδελφοί μου, ἄγωνισώμεθα εἰδότες, ὅτι εἰν χεροῦν ὁ ἄγων καὶ ὅτι εἰς τοὺς φθαρτοὺς ἄγωνας καταπλέουσιν πολλοὶ, ἀλλ᾽ οὐ πάντες στεφανοῦνται, εἰ μὴ οἱ πολλὰ κοπιάσαντες καὶ καλῶς ἄγωνισάμενοι. 2. ἢμεῖς οὖν ἄγωνισώμεθα, ἵνα πάντες στεφανωθῶμεν. 3. ὡστε θέωμεν τὴν ὄδον τὴν εὐθείαν, ἄγωνα τὸν ᾠδηρόν, καὶ πολλοὶ εἰς αὐτὸν καταπλεύσωμεν καὶ ἄγωνισόμεθα, ἵνα καὶ στεφανωθῶμεν καὶ εἰ μὴ δυνάμεθα πάντες στεφανωθῆναι, κἀν ἐγγὺς τοῦ στεφάνου γενώμεθα. 4. εἰδέναι ἡμᾶς δεῖ, ὅτι ο ὁ τῶν φθαρτῶν ἄγωνα ἄγωνιζόμενος, εἰν εὑρεθῇ φθείρων, μαστύνωθείς αἴρεται καὶ ἔξω βάλλεται τοῦ σταδίου. 5. τί δοκεῖτε; ὁ τῶν τῆς ἀφθαρσίας ἄγωνα φθείρας τί παθεῖται; 6. τῶν γὰρ μὴ τηρησάντων, φησίν, τὴν σφραγίδα ὁ σκόλης αὐτῶν οὐ τελευτήσει καὶ τὸ πῦρ αὐτῶν οὐ σβεσθήσεται, καὶ ἔσονται εἰς ὅρασιν πάση σαρκὶ.

Is. 66, 24; cf. Mk. 9, 44; 46, 43

1 AC read θώμεν, but the Syriac implies θέωμεν and is probably right.
II. CLEMENT, vi. 9–vii. 6

what confidence shall we enter into the palace of God, if we keep not our baptism pure and undefiled? Or who shall be our advocate if we be not found to have pious and righteous works?

VII

1. So then, my brethren, let us contend, knowing that the contest is close at hand, and that many make voyages for corruptible prizes, but not all are crowned, save those who have toiled much, and contended well. 2. Let us then contend that we may all be crowned. 3. Let us run the straight course, the immortal contest, and let many of us sail to it, and contend, that we may also receive the crown, and if we cannot all receive the crown, let us at least come near to it. 4. We must remember that if he who takes part in the contest for a corruptible prize be detected in unfairness, he is flogged, taken up, and thrown off the course. 5. What do you think? What shall he suffer who cheats in the contest for that which is incorruptible? 6. For of those who have not kept the seal of baptism he says:—“Their worm shall not die, and their fire shall not be quenched, and they shall be a spectacle for all flesh.”
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

VIII

1. Ὡς οὖν ἐσμέν ἐπὶ γῆς, μετανοήσωμεν. 2. πηλὸς γὰρ ἐσμέν εἰς τὴν χεῖρα τοῦ τεχνίτου διὶ τρόπου γὰρ ὁ κεραμεύς, ἐὰν ποιῇ σκεῦος καὶ ἐὰν ταῖς χεραῖν αὐτοῦ διαστραφῇ ἡ συντριβή, πάλιν αὐτὸ ἀναπλάσσει, ἐὰν δὲ προφθάσῃ εἰς τὴν κάμινον τοῦ πυρὸς αὐτὸ βαλεῖν, οὐκέτι βοηθήσει αὐτῷ· οὕτως καὶ ἡμεῖς, ἐως ἐσμέν ἐν τούτῳ τῷ κόσμῳ, ἐν τῇ σάρκῃ ἡ ἐπράξαμεν πονηρὰ μετανοήσωμεν ἐξ ὅλης τῆς καρδίας, ἵνα σωθῶμεν ὑπὸ τοῦ κυρίου, ἐως ἔχομεν καιρὸν μετανοίας. 3. μετὰ γὰρ τὸ ἐξελθεῖν ἡμᾶς ἐκ τοῦ κόσμου οὐκέτι δυνάμεθα ἐκεῖ ἐξομολογήσασθαι ἡ μετανοεῖν ἐτι. 4. ὡστε, ἀδελφοί, ποιήσαντες τὸ θέλημα τοῦ πατρὸς καὶ τὴν σάρκα ἀγνῆν τηρήσαντες καὶ τὰς ἐντολὰς τοῦ κυρίου φυλάξαντες ληψόμεθα ζωὴν αἰώνιον. 5. λέγει γὰρ ὁ κύριος ἐν τῷ εὐαγγελίῳ· Ἐι τὸ μικρὸν οὐκ ἐτηρήσατε, τὸ μέγα τίς ὑμῖν δώσει; λέγω γὰρ ὑμῖν, ὅτι ὁ πιστὸς ἐν ἑλαχίστῳ καὶ ἐν πολλῷ πιστός ἔστιν. 6. ἀρα οὖν τούτῳ λέγει· τηρήσατε τὴν σάρκα ἀγνῆν καὶ τὴν σφραγίδα ἀσπιλον, ἵνα τὴν αἰώνιον ζωὴν ἀπολάβωμεν.

IX

1. Καὶ μὴ λεγέτω τις υμῶν, ὅτι αὕτη ἡ σάρξ οὐ κρίνεται οὐδὲ ἀνίσταται. 2. γνῶτε· ἐν τίνι ἐσώθητε, ἐν τίνι ἀνεβλέψατε, εἰ μὴ ἐν τῇ σάρκῃ ταύτῃ οὐντες· 3. δει οὖν ἡμᾶς ὡς ναὸν θεοῦ φυλάσσειν τὴν
VIII

1. Let us repent then while we are on the earth. Call to repentance and purity
2. For we are clay in the hand of the workman; for just as the potter, if he make a vessel, and it be bent or broken in his hand, models it afresh, but if he has come so far as to put it into the fiery oven, he can do nothing to mend it any more; so also let us, so long as we are in this world, repent with all our heart of the wicked deeds which we have done in the flesh, that we may be saved by the Lord, while we have a time for repentance. 3. For after we have departed from this world, we can no longer make confession, or repent any more in that place. 4. So then, brethren, if we do the will of the Father, if we keep the flesh pure, and if we observe the commandments of the Lord, we shall obtain eternal life. 5. For the Lord says in the Gospel, "If ye did not guard that which is small, who shall give you that which is great? For I tell you that he who is faithful in that which is least, is faithful also in that which is much." 6. He means, then, this:—Keep the flesh pure, and the seal of baptism undefiled, that we may obtain eternal life.

IX

1. And let none of you say that this flesh is not judged and does not rise again. 2. Understand: in what state did you receive salvation, in what state did you receive your sight, except in this flesh? 3. We
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

σάρκα: 4. διν τρόπον γὰρ ἐν τῇ σαρκὶ ἐκλήθητε, καὶ ἐν τῇ σαρκὶ ἐλεύσεσθε. 5. εἰ Χριστὸς, ὁ κύριος ὁ σώσας ὡμᾶς, διὶ μὲν τὸ πρῶτον πνεῦμα, ἐγένετο σαρξ καὶ ὡτῶς ὡμᾶς ἐκάλεσεν· ὡτῶς καὶ ὡμῆς ἐν ταύτῃ τῇ σαρκὶ ἀποληψόμεθα τὸν μισθὸν. 6. ἀγαπῶμεν οὖν ἀλλήλους, ὡτῶς ἔλθωμεν πάντες εἰς τὴν βασιλείαν τοῦ θεοῦ. 7. ὅσ ἔχομεν καιρὸν τοῦ ἱαθῆναι, ἐπιδῶμεν ἑαυτοὺς τῷ θεραπεύοντι θεῷ, ἀντιμισθίαν αὐτῷ διδόντες. 8. ποίαι; τὸ μετανοῆσαι ἔξοικρινοὺς καρδίας. 9. προγνώστησιν γὰρ ἐστὶν τῶν πάντων καὶ εἰδὼς ὡμῶν τὰ ἐν καρδίᾳ. 10. δῶμεν οὖν αὐτῷ αἶνον,1 μὴ ἀπὸ στόματος μόνον, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἀπὸ καρδίας, ἵνα ὡμᾶς προσδέξηται ως νιώται. 11. καὶ γὰρ εἶπεν οὗτος οὖν κύριος: Ἀδελφοί μου οὗτοί εἰσιν οἱ ποιοῦντες τὸ θέλημα τοῦ πατρὸς μου.

X

1. "Ωστε, ἀδελφοί μου, ποιήσωμεν τὸ θέλημα τοῦ πατρὸς τοῦ καλέσαντος ὡμᾶς, ἵνα ζήσωμεν, καὶ διάδωμεν μᾶλλον τὴν ἁρετήν, τὴν δὲ κακίαν καταλείψωμεν ὡς προσδοκήσωμεν τῶν ἀμαρτίων ὡμῶν, καὶ φύγωμεν τὴν ἀσέβειαν, μὴ ὡμᾶς καταλάβη κακά. 2. ἐὰν γὰρ σπουδάσωμεν ἀγαθοποιεῖν, διώκεται ὡμᾶς εἰρήνην. 3. διὰ ταύτην γὰρ τὴν αἰτίαν οὖν ἐστιν εὐρεῖν ἀνθρωπον, ὅτι εἰς

1 αἶνον CS, αἰώνιον A; Lightfoot thinks that the original text was αἰνον αἰώνιον (everlasting praise).
2 Lightfoot emends εὑρεῖν to εὐχερεῖν (to prosper), but even so the Greek is very obscure and probably there is a primitive corruption, perhaps the omission of a whole line.

142
must therefore guard the flesh as a temple of God,
4. for as you were called in the flesh, you shall also come in the flesh. 5. If Christ, the Lord who saved us, though he was originally spirit, became flesh and so called us, so also we shall receive our reward in this flesh. 6. Let us then love one another, that we may all attain to the kingdom of God.
7. While we have opportunity to be healed let us give ourselves to God, who heals us, giving him his recompense. 8. What recompense? Repentance from a sincere heart. 9. For he has knowledge of all things beforehand, and knows the things in our hearts. 10. Let us then give him praise, not only with our mouth, but also from our heart, that he may receive us as sons. 11. For the Lord said “My brethren are these who do the will of my Father.”

X

1. Wherefore, my brethren, let us do the will of the father who called us, that we may live, and let us rather follow after virtue, but give up vice as the forerunner of our sins, and let us flee from ungodliness lest evil overtake us. 2. For, if we are zealous to do good, peace will follow after us. 3. For this cause it is not possible for a man to find it, when they bring in human fears, and prefer the pleasures

1 i.e. peace.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

παράγουσι φόβους ἀνθρωπίνους, προηρημένου μᾶλλον τὴν εὐνάδε ἀπόλαυσιν ἢ τὴν μέλλουσαν ἑπαγγελίαν. 4. ἀγνοοῦσιν γὰρ ἡλίκην ἔχει βάσανον ἡ εὐνάδε ἀπόλαυσις, καὶ οἱ ὁμοι τρυφὴν ἔχει ἡ μέλλουσα ἑπαγγελία. 5. καὶ ἐὰν μὲν αὐτοὶ μόνοι ταῦτα ἐπρασσοῦν, ἀνεκτὸν ἢν· νῦν δὲ ἐπιμένουσιν κακοδιδασκαλούντες τὰς ἀναιτίους φυχάς, οὐκ εἰδότες, ὅτι δισσῆν ἐξουσιωθῆναι τὴν κρίσιν, αὐτοὶ τε καὶ οἱ ἀκούοντες αὐτῶν.

XI

1. Ἡμεῖς οὖν ἐν καθαρᾷ καρδίᾳ δουλεύσωμεν τῷ θεῷ, καὶ ἐσόμεθα δίκαιοι· εὰν δὲ μὴ δουλεύσωμεν διὰ τὸ μὴ πιστεύειν ἡμᾶς τῇ ἑπαγγελίᾳ τοῦ θεοῦ, ταλαίπωροι ἐσώμεθα. 2. λέγει γὰρ καὶ ὁ προφητικὸς λόγος· Ταλαίπωροι εἰσίν οἱ δίψυχοι, οἱ διστάζοντες τῇ καρδίᾳ, οἱ λέγοντες· Ταῦτα πάλαι ἡ κούσαμεν καὶ ἐπὶ τῶν πατέρων ἡμῶν, ἡμεῖς δὲ ἡμέρας ἐξ ἡμέρας προσδεχόμενοι οὐδὲν τούτων ἐωράκαμεν. 3. ἀνόητοι, συμβάλλετε ἑαυτοὺς εὕλως λάβετε ἀμπελοῦν πρῶτον μὲν φυλλοροεῖ, εἰτὰ βλαστῶσ γίνεται, μετὰ ταῦτα δημαξ, εἰτὰ σταφυλὴ παρεστηκυῖα. 4. οὕτως καὶ ὁ λαὸς μου ἀκαταστάσιας καὶ θλίψεις ἐσχεν· ἐπειτα ἀπολήσηται τὰ ἀγαθά. 5. ὥστε, ἀδελφοί μου, μὴ διψυχῶμεν, ἀλλὰ ἐπίσταντες ὑπομείνωμεν, ἕνα καὶ τὸν μισθὸν κομισώμεθα. 6. πιστῶς γὰρ ἐστὶν ὁ ἑπαγγειλάμενος τὰς ἀντιμισθίας ἀποδίδοναι ἐκάστῳ τῶν ἐργῶν αὐτοῦ. 7. ἐὰν οὖν

1 πάλαι CS, πάντα Δ.
II. CLEMENT, x. 3–xi. 7

of the present to the promises of the future. 4. For they do not know how great torment the pleasures of the present entail, and what is the joy of the promised future. 5. And if they did these things by themselves it could be endured, but, as it is, they are continuing in teaching evil to innocent souls, and do not know that they will incur a double judgment, both themselves and their hearers.

XI

1. Let us then serve God with a pure heart, and we shall be righteous, but if we do not serve him, because we do not believe the promise of God, we shall be miserable. 2. For the prophetic word also says:—“Miserable are the double-minded that doubt in their heart, who say, These things we heard long ago and in the time of our fathers, but we have waited from day to day, and have seen none of them. 3. O foolish men! compare yourselves to a tree; take a vine; first it sheds its leaves, then there comes a bud, after this the unripe grape, then the full bunch. 4. So also my people has had tumults and afflictions; afterwards it shall receive the good things.” 1 5. Therefore, my brethren, let us not be double-minded, but let us be patient in hope, that we may also receive the reward. 6. “For he is faithful who promised” to pay to each man the recompense of his deeds. 7. If then we do righteousness before

---

1 The additional clause at the end of this quotation seems to show that it is not derived from I. Clement, but directly from the “prophetic word,” cf. note on p. 51.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

ποιήσωμεν τὴν δικαιοσύνην ἐναντίον τοῦ θεοῦ, εἰσήξομεν εἰς τὴν βασιλείαν αὐτοῦ καὶ ληψόμεθα τὰς ἐπαγγελίας, ἄς οὐς οὐκ ἤκουσεν οὐδὲ ὀφθαλμὸς εἶδεν, οὔδὲ ἔπτι καρδίαν ἀνθρώπου ἄνεβη.

XII

1. Ἐκδεχόμεθα οὖν καθ’ ὅραν τὴν βασιλείαν τοῦ θεοῦ ἐν ἀγάπῃ καὶ δικαιοσύνῃ, ἐπειδὴ οὐκ οἴδαμεν τὴν ἡμέραν τῆς ἑπιφανείας τοῦ θεοῦ. 2. ἐπερωτθήσεται γὰρ αὐτὸς ὁ κύριος ὑπὸ τῶν, πότε ἦξει αὐτοῦ ἡ βασιλεία, εἶπεν. "Οταν ἔσται τὰ δύο ἐν, καὶ τὸ ἔξω ὡς τὸ ἔσω, καὶ τὸ ἄρσεν μετὰ τῆς θηλείας οὕτε ἄρσεν οὕτε θῆλυ. 3. τὰ δύο δὲ ἐν ἑστὶν, ὅταν λαλῶμεν ἐαυτοῖς ἀλήθειαν καὶ ἐν δυσὶ σώμασιν ἀνυποκρίτως εἰς μία ψυχή. 4. καὶ τὸ ἔξω ὡς τὸ ἔσω, τούτῳ λέγει τὴν ψυχὴν λέγει τὸ ἔσω, τὸ δὲ ἔξω τὸ σῶμα λέγει. ὃν τρόπον οὐν σου τὸ σῶμα φαίνεται, οὕτως καὶ ψυχὴ σου δῆλος ἐστὶν ἐν τοῖς καλοῖς ἔργοις. 5. καὶ τὸ ἄρσεν μετὰ τῆς θηλείας, οὕτε ἄρσεν οὕτε θῆλυ, τούτῳ λέγει· ἵνα ἀδελφὸς ἰδὼν ἀδελφὴν οὐδὲν φρονη σε περὶ

1 From this point A is wanting.
2 μηδὲν seems required by the grammar of the sentence, but οὐδὲν is probably a solecism of the writer rather than a corruption of the text.

146
II. CLEMENT, XI. 7–XII. 5

God we shall enter into his kingdom, and shall receive the promises “which ear hath not heard, nor hath eye seen, neither hath it entered into the heart of man.”

XII

1. Let us then wait for the kingdom of God, from hour to hour, in love and righteousness, seeing that we know not the day of the appearing of God. 2. For when the Lord himself was asked by someone when his kingdom would come, he said: “When the two shall be one, and the outside as the inside, and the male with the female neither male nor female.” 1

3. Now “the two are one” when we speak with one another in truth, and there is but one soul in two bodies without dissimulation. 4. And by “the outside as the inside” he means this, that the inside is the soul, and the outside is the body. Therefore, just as your body is visible, so let your soul be apparent in your good works. 5. And by “the male with the female neither male nor female” he means this, that when a brother sees a sister he should have no

1 The same saying, or very nearly so, is quoted from Cassianus by Clement of Alexandria (Strom. iii. 13), and the latter states that it is from the Gospel of the Egyptians. But the whole question has been complicated by the discovery of Grenfell and Hunt’s “Lost Gospel” (Oxyrhynchus papyri, vol. iv. pp. 22 ff.), which seems to refer to a similar saying, and the problem of the mutual relations between these documents is still unsolved.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

αὐτῆς θηλυκὸν, μηδὲ φρονήτερον περὶ αὐτοῦ ἀρσενικὸν. 6. ταῦτα ὑμῶν ποιοῦντων, φησίν, ἐλεύθεραι ἡ βασιλεία τοῦ πατρὸς μου.

XIII

1. Ἄδελφοι ὑμεῖς, ἣδη ποτὲ μετανοήσωμεν, νήψω-μεν ἐπὶ τὸ ἀγαθόν· μεστὸν γὰρ ἐςμεν πολλῆς ἀνοίας καὶ πονηρίας. ἐξαλείψωμεν ἀφ’ ἡμῶν τὰ πρῶτα ἀμαρτήματα καὶ μετανοῆσαντες ἐν θυσία σωθῶμεν, καὶ μὴ γυμνόμεθα ἀνθρωπότεροι νηδὲ θέλωμεν μόνον ἑαυτοῖς ἀρέσκειν, ἀλλὰ καὶ τοῖς ἑξω ἀνθρώποις ἐπὶ τῇ δικαιοσύνῃ, ἵνα τὸ ὄνομα δ’ ἡμᾶς μὴ βλασφημήται. 2. λέγει γὰρ ὁ κύριος· Ἰδὰ παντὸς τὸ ὄνομά μου βλασφημεῖται ἐν πᾶσιν τοῖς έδθεσιν, καὶ πάλιν. Οὐκ δὲ δι’ ἄνθρωπο-μεν τὸ ὄνομά μου· ἐν τίνι βλασφημεῖται· ἐν τῷ μὴ ποιεῖν ὑμᾶς ὁ βούλομαι. 3. τὰ ἐθνικαὶ γὰρ ἀκούοντα ἐκ τοῦ στόματος ἡμῶν τὰ λόγια τοῦ θεοῦ ὡς καλὰ καὶ μεγάλα θαυμάζειν· ἐπειτα καταμαθόντα τὰ ἔργα ἡμῶν ὁτι οὐκ ἔστων ἄξια τῶν ἰημάτων ὑμῶν λέγομεν, ἐνθὲν εἰς βλασφημίαν ὑπέτονται, λέγοντες εἶναι μὴν τινα καὶ πλάνην. 4. ὅταν γὰρ ἀκούσωσιν παρ’ ἡμῶν, ὃτι λέγει ὁ θεός· Οὐ χάρις ὑμῖν, εἰ ἀγαπάτε τοὺς ἀγαπώντας ὑμᾶς, ἀλλὰ χάρις ὑμῖν, εἰ ἀγαπάτε τοὺς ἐχθροὺς καὶ τοὺς μισοῦντας ὑμᾶς· ταῦτα ὅταν ἀκούσωσιν, θαυ-
II. CLEMENT, xii. 5–xiii. 4

thought of her as female, nor she of him as male.1 6. When you do this, he says, the kingdom of my Father will come.

XIII

1. Therefore, brethren, let us at last repent forthwith, and be sober for our good, for we are full of much folly and wickedness; let us wipe off from ourselves our former sins, and let us gain salvation by repenting with all our souls. Let us not be men-pleasers, and let us wish to please by our righteousness not ourselves alone, but also those who are without, that the name be not blasphemed on our account. 2. For the Lord says, "Every way is my name blasphemed among all the heathen," and again, "Woe unto him on whose account my name is blasphemed." 2 Wherein is it blasphemed? 3. In that you do not do what I desire. For when the heathen hear from our mouth the oracles of God, they wonder at their beauty and greatness; afterwards, when they find out that our deeds are unworthy of the words which we speak, they turn from their wonder to blasphemy, saying that it is a myth and delusion. 4. For when they hear from us that God says: "It is no credit to you, if ye love them that love you, but it is a credit to you, if ye love your enemies, and those that hate you";—when they hear this they wonder at this extra-

1 Or, if αὐτοῦ be read instead of αὐτοῦ, "nor have any thought of himself as male."

2 The source of this quotation is unknown.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

μάξουσιν τὴν ὑπερβολὴν τῆς ἀγαθότητος. ὅταν δὲ ἴδωσιν, ὅτι οὐ μόνον τοὺς μισοῦντας οὐκ ἀγαπᾶμεν, ἀλλά ὅτι οὐδὲ τοὺς ἀγαπῶντας, καταγελάσουν ἡμῶν, καὶ βλασφημεῖται τὸ ὄνομα.

XIV

"Ὡστε, ἀδελφοί, ποιοῦντες τὸ θέλημα τοῦ πατρὸς ἡμῶν θεοῦ ἐσόμεθα ἐκ τῆς ἐκκλησίας τῆς πρώτης, τῆς πνευματικῆς, τῆς πρὸ ἡλίου καὶ σελήνης ἐκτισμένης. ἐὰν δὲ μὴ ποιήσωμεν τὸ θέλημα κυρίου, ἐσόμεθα ἐκ τῆς γραφῆς τῆς λεγοῦσης. Ἐγενέθη ὁ οἶκός μου σπήλαιον ληστῶν. ὡστε οὐν αἱρετισώμεθα ἀπὸ τῆς ἐκκλησίας τῆς ζωῆς εἶναι, ἵνα σωθῶμεν. 2. οὐκ οἴομαι δὲ ὑμᾶς ἁγιοι νὸς τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ ἱώσα σώμα ἐστὶν Χριστοῦ· λέγει γὰρ ἡ γραφή· Ἐποίησεν ὁ θεὸς τὸν ἄνθρωπον ἂραν καὶ θῆλυ· τὸ ἄραν ἐστὶν ὁ Χριστὸς, τὸ θῆλυ ἡ ἐκκλησία· καὶ ἔτι τὰ βιβλία καὶ οἱ ἀπόστολοι τὴν ἐκκλησίαν οὐ νῦν εἶναι λέγουσιν ἀλλὰ ἀνωθέν. ἤν γὰρ πνευματική, ὡς καὶ ὁ Ἱσσοῦς ἡμῶν, ἐφανερώθη δὲ ἐπὶ ἑσχάτων τῶν ἡμερῶν, ἤν ἡμᾶς σώσῃ. 3. ἡ ἐκκλησία δὲ πνευματικὴ οὖσα ἐφανερώθη ἐν τῇ σαρκί Χριστοῦ, δηλούσα ἡμῖν, ὅτι εὰν τις ἡμῶν τηρήσῃ αὐτὴν ἐν τῇ σαρκὶ καὶ μὴ φθείρῃ, ἀπολήψεται αὐτὴν ἐν τῇ πνεύματι τῷ

1 ὅτι C, "and moreover" (ἐτι) S.
2 λέγουσι om. C. Some such word is necessary to the grammar of the sentence, and is implied by S, but whether it was λέγουσι or φασὶ, and its exact place in the sentence is of course uncertain. S also adds "of the prophets" after "the books."

150
ordinary goodness; but when they see that we not only do not love those that hate us, but not even those who love us, they laugh us to scorn, and the name is blasphemed.

XIV

1. Thus, brethren, if we do the will of our Father, God, we shall belong to the first Church, the spiritual one which was created before the sun and moon; but if we do not the will of the Lord, we shall fall under the scripture, which says, "My house became a den of brigands." Therefore let us choose to belong to the Church of life, that we may win salvation. 2. Now I imagine that you are not ignorant that the living "Church is the body of Christ." For the scripture says, "God made man male and female"; the male is Christ, the female is the Church. And moreover the books and the Apostles declare that the Church belongs not to the present, but has existed from the beginning; for she was spiritual, as was also our Jesus, but he was made manifest in the last days that he might save us; 3. and the Church, which is spiritual, was made manifest in the flesh of Christ, showing us that if any of us guard her in the flesh without corruption, he shall receive her back again in the Holy Spirit.

1 The translation "she was made... that she might save us" is grammatically more probable, but seems to be excluded both by the context and by the history of doctrine.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

ἀγίω· ἢ γὰρ σάρξ αὐτὴ ἀντίτυπος ἦστιν τοῦ πνεύματος· οὐδεὶς οὖν τὸ ἀντίτυπον φθέρας τὸ αὐθεντικὸν μεταλήφηται. ἄρα οὖν τοῦτο λέγει, ἀδελφοί· τηρήσατε τὴν σάρκα, ἵνα τοῦ πνεύματος μεταλάβητε. 4. εἰ δὲ λέγομεν εἶναι τὴν σάρκα τὴν ἐκκλησίαν καὶ τὸ πνεῦμα Χριστὸν, ἄρα οὖν ὁ ὑβρίσας τὴν σάρκα ὑβρίσει τὴν ἐκκλησίαν, ὁ τοιοῦτος οὖν οὐ μεταλήφηται τοῦ πνεύματος, ὁ ἐστιν ὁ Χριστὸς. 5. τοσαύτην δύναται ἡ σάρξ αὐτὴ μεταλαβεῖν ζωὴν καὶ ἀφθαρσίαν κολληθέντος αὐτῆς τοῦ πνεύματος τοῦ ἁγίου, οὔτε ἔξευτείν τις δύναται οὔτε λαλήσαι ἢ ήτοιμασεν ο κύριος τοῖς ἐκλεκτοῖς αὐτοῦ.

I Cor. 2, 9

XV

1. Οὐκ οἴομαι δὲ, ὅτι μικράν συμβουλίαν ἑποιησάμην περὶ ἐγκρατείας, ἣν ποιήσας τις οὐ μετανοήσει, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἑαυτὸν σώσει κἀκεῖ τὸν συμβουλεύσαντα. μισθὸς γὰρ οὐκ ἐστιν μικρὸς πλανωμένην ψυχὴν καὶ ἀπολλυμένην ἀποστρέψαι εἰς τὸ σωθῆναι. 2. τοσαύτην γὰρ ἔχομεν τὴν ἀντιμισθίαν ἀποδοῦναι τῷ θεῷ τῷ κτίσαντι ἡμᾶς, ἐὰν ὁ λέγων καὶ ἀκούων μετὰ πίστεως καὶ ἀγάπης καὶ λέγῃ καὶ ἀκούῃ. 3. ἐμμείνωμεν οὖν ἐφ’ οίς ἐπιστεύσαμεν δίκαιοι καὶ οὐσίαι, ἵνα μετὰ παρρησίας αἰτῶμεν τὸν θεὸν τῶν λέγοντα: "Εἴτε λαλοῦντος σοι ἐρῶ· ἵδον πάρειμι. 4. τοῦτο γὰρ τὸ ρήμα μεγάλης ἐστιν ἐπαγγελίας σημείου ἐτοιμότερον γὰρ ἑαυτὸν λέγει ὁ κύριος εἰς τὸ διδόναι τοῦ αἰτοῦτος. 5. τοσαύτης οὖν χρηστότητος μεταλαμβάνοντες μὴ φθονήσωμεν ἑαυτοῖς τυχεῖν

152
II. CLEMENT, xiv. 3-xv. 5

For this flesh is an anti-type of the Spirit; no one therefore who has corrupted the anti-type shall receive the reality. So, then, he means this, brethren: Guard the flesh, that you may receive the Spirit.

4. Now if we say that the flesh is the Church, and the Spirit is Christ, of course he who has abused the flesh, has abused the Church. Such a one therefore will not receive the Spirit, which is Christ.

5. So great a gift of life and immortality has this flesh the power to receive, if the Holy Spirit be joined to it, nor can any man express or speak of the things "which the Lord hath prepared" for his elect.

XV

1. Now I think that I have given no mean advice concerning self-control, and if any man follow it, he shall have no regret, but shall save both himself and me his counsellor; for it is no small reward to turn to salvation a soul that is wandering and perishing. 2. For this is the recompense which we can pay to God, who created us, if he who speaks and hears both speak and hear with faith and love. 3. Let us then remain righteous and holy in our faith, that we may pray with confidence to God, who says, "While thou art speaking I will say, Behold here am I."

4. For this saying is the sign of a great promise; for the Lord says that he is more ready to give than we to ask. 5. Let us then accept such great goodness, and not grudge ourselves the gaining of such benefits,

153
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

tosoútov ágathów, ósqh gáρ ἢδονὴν ἔχει τὰ ρήματα ταύτα τοῖς ποιήσασιν αὐτά, τοσαύτην κατάκρισιν ἔχει τοῖς παρακούσασιν.

XVI

1. Ὡστε, ἀδελφοί, ἄφορμὴν λαβόντες οὐ μικρὰν εἰς τὸ μετανοήσαί, καιρὸν ἔχοντες ἐπιστρέψωμεν ἐπὶ τὸν καλέσαντα ἡμᾶς θεόν, ἐως ἐτι ἔχομεν τὸν παραδεχόμενον ἡμᾶς. 2. ἐὰν γὰρ ταῖς ἡδυπαθείαις ταύταις ἀποταξώμεθα καὶ τὴν ψυχὴν ἡμῶν νυκήσωμεν ἐν τῷ μὴ ποιεῖν τὰς ἐπιθυμίας αὐτῆς τὰς πονηράς, μεταληψόμεθα τοῦ ἔλεους Ἰησοῦν.

Malach. 4, 1 3. γινώσκετε δὲ, ὅτι ἔρχεται ἡ ἡμέρα τῆς κρίσεως ὡς κλίβανος καλόμενος, καὶ ταχίσσονται τινες τῶν οὐρανῶν καὶ πᾶσα ἡ γῆ ὡς μόλις ἐπὶ πυρὶ τηκόμενος· καὶ τότε φανήσεται τὰ κρύφια καὶ φανερὰ ἔργα τῶν ἀνθρώπων. 4. καλὸν οὖν ἐλεημοσύνη ὡς μετάνοια ἀμαρτίας· κρείσσων νηστεία προσευχῆς, ἐλεημοσύνη δὲ ἀμφοτέρων ἀγάπη δὲ καλύπτει πλήθος ἀμαρτίων, προσευχῆς δὲ ἕκ καλῆς συνειδήσεως ἕκ θανάτου ρύεται. μακάριος πᾶς ὁ εὐρεθεὶς ἐν τούτοις πλήρης· ἐλεημοσύνη γὰρ κούφισμα ἀμαρτίας γίνεται.

1 Lightfoot conjectures δωνάμεις, which is found in the LXX text of Is. xxxiv. 4, to which the writer is alluding.

154
II. CLEMENT, xv. 5–xvi. 4

for as great joy as these words offer to those who do them so severe a condemnation do they threaten to the disobedient.

XVI

1. Seeing therefore, brethren, that we have received no small opportunity for repentance; let us, now that we have time, turn to the God who calls us, while we still have one who awaits us. 2. For if we bid farewell to these enjoyments, and conquer our soul, by giving up its wicked lusts, we shall share in the mercy of Jesus. 3. But you know that “the day” of judgment is already approaching as a burning oven, and some of the heavens shall melt,” and the whole earth shall be as lead melting in the fire, and then shall be made manifest the secret and open deeds of men. 4. Almsgiving is therefore good even as penitence for sin; fasting is better than prayer, but the giving of alms is better than both; and love “covers a multitude of sins,” but prayer from a good conscience rescues from death. Blessed is every man who is found full of these things; for almsgiving lightens sin.

1 Possibly the text is corrupt: Lightfoot’s conjecture would be translated, “the powers of heaven,” but the text may be defended as a reference to the early Christian belief in seven concentric heavens surrounding the Earth.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

XVII

1. Μετανοήσωμεν οὖν ἐξ ὅλης καρδίας, ἵνα μὴ τις ἡμῶν παρατόληται. εἰ γὰρ ἐντολάς ἔχομεν, ἵνα καὶ τούτο πράσσωμεν, ἀπὸ τῶν εἰδώλων ἀποσταῦναι καὶ κατηχεῖν, πόσῳ μᾶλλον ψυχὴν ἦδη γινώσκουσαι τὸν θεὸν οὐ δεῖ ἀπόλλυσθαι; 2. συλλάβωμεν οὖν ἐαυτοῖς καὶ τοὺς ἀσθενοῦντας ἀνάγειν περὶ τὸ ἀγαθὸν, ὡς τῶν σωθῶμεν ἀπαντεῖ καὶ ἐπιστρέψωμεν ἀλλήλους καὶ νοθετήσωμεν. 3. καὶ μὴ μόνον ἀρτί δοκῶμεν πιστεύειν καὶ προσέχειν ἐν τῷ γνωθεῖται ἡμᾶς ὑπὸ τῶν πρεσβυτέρων, ἀλλὰ καὶ θὰ εἰς οἶκον ἀπαλλαγόμεν, μνημονεύομεν τῶν τοῦ κυρίου ἐνταλμάτων καὶ μὴ ἀντιπαρελκόμεθα ἀπὸ τῶν κοσμικῶν ἐπιθυμιῶν, ἀλλὰ πυκνότερον προσφέρομεν πειρώμεθα προκόπτειν ἐν ταῖς ἐντολαῖς τοῦ κυρίου, ἵνα πάντες τὸ αὐτὸ φρονοῦντες συνηγμένοι ὑμεῖς ἐπὶ τὴν ζωὴν. 4. εἰπεν γὰρ ὁ κύριος Ἔρχομαι συναγαγεῖν πάντα τὰ ἐθνά, φυλάς καὶ γλώσσας τούτο ὑπὸ λέγει τὴν ἡμέραν τῆς ἐπιφανείας αὐτοῦ, ὅτε ἔλθων λυτρώσεται ἡμᾶς, ἐκαστὸν κατὰ τὰ ἔργα αὐτοῦ. 5. καὶ ὅσον ταῦτα δοξαίν αὐτοῦ καὶ τὸ κράτος οἱ ἀπιστοὶ, καὶ ἔνσωσθήσονται ἱδονές συν λασίλειον τοῦ κόσμου ἐν τῷ Ἰησοῦ, λέγοντες: Οὐαὶ ἡμῖν, ὅτι σὺ ἡς, καὶ οὐκ ἤδειμεν καὶ οὐκ ἐπιστεύομεν καὶ οὐκ ἔπειθόμεθα τοῖς πρεσβυτέροις τοῖς ἀναγγέλλουσιν ἡμῖν περὶ τῆς σωτηρίας ἡμῶν. καὶ ὁ σκόλις αὐτῶν οὐ τελευτήσει καὶ τὸ πῦρ αὐτῶν οὐ σβεσθησεται, καὶ ἔσονται εἰς ὄρασιν

Rom. 12, 16; cf. Phil. 2, 2
Is. 66, 18
Is. 66, 24
Is. 66, 24

1 S perhaps implies πρὸς “bring back to goodness.”
2 S adds “and have ceased from all.”

156
1. Let us then repent with our whole heart, that none of us perish by the way. For if we have commandments to do this also, to tear men away from idols and to instruct them, how much more is it our duty to save from perishing a soul that already knows God? 2. Let us then help one another, and bring back those that are weak in goodness, that we may all be saved, and convert and exhort one another. 3. And let us not merely seem to believe and pay attention now, while we are being exhorted by the Elders, but also when we have gone home let us remember the commandments of the Lord, and let us not be dragged aside by worldly lusts, but let us try to come here more frequently, and to make progress in the commands of the Lord; that we may "all have the same mind" and be gathered together unto life. 4. For the Lord said: "I come to gather together all the nations, tribes, and languages." Now by this he means the day of his appearing, when he will come and ransom each of us according to his works. 5. And the unbelievers "shall see his glory" and might, and they shall be amazed when they see the sovereignty of the world given to Jesus and shall say: Woe unto us, that it was thou, and we knew it not, and did not believe, and were not obedient to the Elders, when they told us of our salvation. "And their worm shall not die and their fire shall not be quenched, and they shall be a
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

πάσης σαρκί. 6. τὴν ἡμέραν ἐκείνην λέγει τῆς κρίσεως, ὅταν ὄψονται τοὺς ἐν ἡμῖν ἀσεβήσαντας καὶ παραλογισμαένους τὰς ἐντολὰς Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ. 7. οἱ δὲ δίκαιοι εὐπραγήσαντες καὶ ὑπομείναντες τὰς βασάνους καὶ μισήσαντες τὰς ἠδυπαθείας τῆς ψυχῆς, ὅταν θεάσονται τοὺς ἀστοχήσαντας καὶ ἀρνησαμένους διὰ τῶν λόγων ἢ διὰ τῶν ἔργων τῶν Ἰησοῦν, ὅτους κολάζονται δειναῖς βασάνοις πυρὶ ἀσβέστῳ, ἐσονταί δόξαν διδόντες τῷ θεῷ αὐτῶν λέγοντες, ὅτι ἔσται ἐλπὶς τῷ δεδουλευκότι θεῷ ἐξ ὅλης καρδίας.

Αρ. 11, 13

XVIII

1. Καὶ ἡμεῖς ὑμῖν γενώμεθα εἰ καὶ τῶν εὐχαριστοῦντων, δεδουλευκότων τῷ θεῷ, καὶ μὴ εἰ τῶν κρινομένων ἀσεβῶν. 2. καὶ γὰρ αὐτῶς πανθεμαρτωλὸς ὄν καὶ μὴ ὁ φυγὼν τῶν πειρασμῶν, ἀλλ’ ἐτι ὃν ἐν μέσοις τοῖς ὄργανοι τοῦ διαβόλου στουδάξω τὴν δικαιοσύνην διώκειν, ὅπως ἰσχύσω καὶ ἐγγύς αὐτής γενέσθαι, φοβοῦμενος τὴν κρίσιν τὴν μέλλονσαν.

XIX

1. Ὡστε, ἀδελφοί καὶ ἀδελφαί, μετὰ τὸν θεόν τῆς ἀληθείας ἀναγινώσκω ὑμῖν ἐντεῦξιν εἰς τὸ προσέχειν τοῖς γεγραμμένοις, ὅνα καὶ ἐαυτοὺς σώσητε καὶ τὸν ἀναγινώσκοντα ἐν ὑμῖν. μισθὸν γὰρ αἰτῶ ὑμᾶς τὸ μετανοήσαι εἰς ὅλης καρδίας, σωτηρίαν ἐαυτοῖς καὶ ζωὴν διδόντας. τοῦτο γὰρ ποιήσαντες σκοπὸν πᾶσιν τοῖς νέοις θήσομεν, τοῖς
II. CLEMENT, xvii. 5-xix. 1

spectacle to all flesh." 6. He means that day of judgment, when they shall see those who were ungodly among us and perverted the commandments of Jesus Christ. 7. But the righteous who have done good, and have endured torture, and have hated the indulgences of the soul, when they see how those who have done amiss, and denied Jesus by word or deed, are punished with terrible torture in unquenchable fire, shall give "glory to their God," saying, There shall be hope for him who has served God with all his heart.

XVIII

1. Let us then also belong to them who give thanks, who have served God, and not to the ungodly who are judged. 2. For I myself too am altogether sinful, and I have not yet escaped temptation, but I am still in the midst of the devices of the devil, yet I am striving to follow after righteousness, that I may have the strength at least to draw near to it, in fear of the judgment to come.

XIX

1. Therefore, brothers and sisters, following the God of truth, I am reading you an exhortation to pay attention to that which is written, that you may both save yourselves and him who is the reader among you. For as a reward I beg of you that you repent with all your heart, and give to yourselves salvation and life. For if we do this we shall set a mark for all the

1 It is probable though not quite certain that this refers to a definite order of "Readers" in the Church.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

βουλομένοις περὶ τὴν εὐσέβειαν καὶ τὴν χρηστότητα τοῦ θεοῦ φιλοσοφεῖν. 2. καὶ μὴ ἀποδεχώμεθα καὶ ἀγαπητοὶ οἱ ἁσοφοὶ, διὰ τὴν ἡμᾶς νοεθετὴ καὶ ἐπιστρέφῃ ἀπὸ τῆς ἁδικίας εἰς τὴν δικαιοσύνην. ἐνίοτε γὰρ πονηρὰ πράσσοντες οὐ γνώσκομεν διὰ τὴν διψυχίαν καὶ ἀπιστίαν τὴν ἐνοῦσαν ἐν τοῖς στήθεσιν ἡμῶν, καὶ ἐσκοτίσμεθα τὴν διάνοιαν ὑπὸ τῶν ἐπιθυμίων τῶν ματαιῶν. 3. πράξωμεν οὖν τὴν δικαιοσύνην, ἵνα εἰς τέλος σωθῶμεν. μακάριοι οἱ τούτοις ὑπακούοντες τοῖς προστάγμασιν καὶ ὁλίγον χρόνον κακοπαθήσωσιν ἐν τῷ κόσμῳ τούτῳ,1 τῶν ἀθώνων τῆς ἀνάστασεως καρπῶν τρυγήσουσιν. 4. μὴ οὖν λυπεῖσθω ὁ εὐσεβής, ἐὰν ἐπὶ τοῖς νῦν χρόνοις ταλαιπωρή· μακάριος αὐτὸν ἀναμένει χρόνος· ἐκεῖνος ἀνω μετὰ τῶν πατέρων ἀναβιώσας εὐφρανθήσεται εἰς τὸν ἀλήπητον αἰῶνα.

XX

1. Ἀλλὰ μὴ δὲ ἐκεῖνο τὴν διάνοιαν ὑμῶν ταρασσέτω, ὅτι βλέπομεν τοὺς ἁδίκους πλουτοῦντας καὶ στενοχωρομένους τοὺς τοῦ θεοῦ δούλους. 2. πιστεύομεν οὖν, ἀδελφοί καὶ ἀδελφαί· θεοῦ ἔτων πείραν ἀθλοῦμεν καὶ γυμναζόμεθα τῷ νῦν βίῳ, ἵνα τῷ μέλλοντι στεφανωθῶμεν. 3. οὕτε τῶν δικαιῶν ταχὺν καρπὸν ἔλαβεν, ἀλλὰ ἐκδέχεται αὐτόν. 4. εἰ γὰρ τῶν μισθῶν τῶν δικαιῶν ὁ θεὸς συντόμως ἀπεδίδοι, εὐθέως ἐμπορίαν ἴσκοῦμεν καὶ οὐ θεοσέβειαν ἔδοκοῦμεν γὰρ εἰναι δίκαιοι, οὐ τὸ εὐσεβές, ἀλλὰ τὸ κερδαλέον διώκοντες. καὶ

1 τοῦτο ὁμ. S, in Lightfoot's opinion correctly.
II. CIEMENT, xix. 1–xx. 4

younger, who wish to work in the cause of piety and the goodness of God. 2. And let us not be displeased or be vexed in our foolishness when any one admonishes us, and turns us from unrighteousness to righteousness. For sometimes when we do evil we do not know it because of the double-mindedness and unbelief which is in our breasts, and we are "darkened in our understanding" by vain desires. 3. Let us then do righteousness, that we may be saved at the end. Blessed are they who obey these instructions: though they suffer for a short time in this world, they shall gather the immortal fruit of the resurrection. 4. Let not, then, the pious grieve if he endure sorrow at this present time; a time of blessedness awaits him; he shall live again with the fathers above, and rejoice to an eternity wherein is no sorrow.

XX

1. But neither let it grieve your mind that we see the unrighteous enjoying wealth, and the servants of God oppressed. 2. Let us then have faith, brothers and sisters: we are contending in the contest of the living God, and we are being trained by the life which now is, that we may gain the crown in that which is to come. 3. None of the righteous has attained a reward quickly, but waits for it; 4, for if God should pay the recompense of the righteous speedily, we should immediately be training ourselves in commerce and not in godliness; for we should seem to be righteous when we were pursuing not
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

βουλομένους περὶ τὴν ευσέβειαν καὶ ἐπιστεῖαν μὴ ὅντα τὴν θεοῦ φιλοποιεῖν. 2. καὶ,
καὶ ἀγανακτῶμεν οἱ ἁσοφοὶ, ὅτι τῆς ἐπιστεῖας,
kαὶ ἐπιστρέφῃ ἀπὸ τῆς ἁδικίας. ἐν δὲ ἀρχηγοῦ
ἐνίστε γὰρ πονηρὰ πράσσοντες ἑαυτοῖς ἤμων τῆν
tὴν διψυχίαν καὶ ἀπιστίαν, ἵνα εἰ ἔρχεται ἡ δόξα
στήθεσιν ἡμῶν, καὶ ἔσκοποι· οἱ τῶν ἐπιθυμῶν τῶν ματωτῶν
tὴν δικαιοσύνην, ἵνα εἰ πρῶτα ἐπιστρέψοι.
οἱ τούτων υπακούοντες ὅλιγον χρόνον καὶ
tοῦτῳ, τὸν ἀθῶν
τρυγήσουσιν. 4.
εὰν ἐπὶ τοῖς ἀνω
αὐτῶν ἀναμένει
πατέρων ἄνα
ἀλώπητον αἶς

1. Ἀλλ' εἰ
σέτω, ὅτι
στενοχεία
πιστεύει
πείρα
ἵνα
δικαι
αἰ
σ.
II. CLEMENT, xx. 4–xx. 5

piety but gain. For this reason divine judgment punishes\(^1\) a spirit which is not righteous and loads it with chains.

5. To the only invisible God, the father of truth, Doxology who sent forth to us the Saviour and prince of immortality, through whom he also made manifest to us truth and the life of heaven, to him be the glory for ever and ever. Amen.

The Second Epistle of Clement to the Corinthians.

\(^1\) This translation takes the aorist as gnomic, and regards “spirit” as meaning a human spirit. But Harnack prefers to take the aorist as historical and refers the passage to the fall of Satan.
THE EPISTLES OF IGNATIUS
THE EPISTLES OF IGNATIUS

The epistles or letters of Ignatius are among the most famous documents of early Christianity, and have a curiously complicated literary history. Eusebius in *Historia Ecclesiastica* iii. 36 tells the story of Ignatius. He was the third bishop of Antioch in Syria, and was condemned to be sent to Rome to be killed by the beasts in the amphitheatre. His journey took him through various churches in Asia Minor and while he was in Smyrna he wrote letters to Ephesus, Magnesia, Tralles, and Rome, and later on, when he reached Troas he wrote to the Philadelphians, Smyrnaeans, and Polycarp the bishop of Smyrna. In his *chronicon* Eusebius fixes the date of his martyrdom in Rome in the tenth year of Trajan, i.e. 108 A.D.

Modern critics are by no means unanimous as to the correctness of this date, but, though each has his own special preferences, there is a general tendency to think that Ignatius was really a martyr in Rome in the time of Trajan (98–117 A.D.)

The immediate purpose of each of the letters, except that to the Romans, is to thank the recipients for the kindness which they had shown to Ignatius. The "Romans" has the object of preventing the

1 According to tradition Peter was the first and Euodius the second (*Eus. Hist. Eccl.* iii. 22).
IGNATIUS

Christians at Rome from making any efforts to save Ignatius from the beasts in the arena, and so robbing him of the crown of martyrdom. But besides this immediate purpose the writer is influenced by three other motives, all or some of which can be traced in each letter.

(1) Ignatius is exceedingly anxious in each community to strengthen respect for the bishop and presbyters. He ascribes the fullest kind of divine authority to their organisation, and recognises as valid no church, institution, or worship without their sanction.

(2) He protests against the form of heresy called docetism (δοκεῖν), which regarded the sufferings, and in some cases the life, of Jesus as merely an appearance. He also protests against any tendency to Judaistic practices, but it is disputed whether he means that this was an evil found in docetic circles, or that it was a danger threatening the church from other directions.

(3) He is also anxious to secure the future of his own church in Antioch by persuading other communities to send helpers.

Of the letters of Ignatius there are extant three recensions.

1. The long recension.—The most widely found contains not only the seven letters of which Eusebius speaks, but also six others. In this collection the chronological scheme (not however followed in the MSS.) is:

(1) From Antioch: A letter from a certain Mary of Cassobola (a neighbouring town) to Ignatius, and a letter from him in reply.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

(2) From Smyrna. Letters to Ephesus, Magnesia, Tralles, and Rome.
(3) From Troas. Letters to Philadelphia, Smyrna, and Polycarp.
(4) From Philippi. Letters to Tarsus, Antioch, and Hero (the successor of Ignatius as bishop of Antioch).
(5) From Italy. Letter to Philippi.

There is also an appendix in the Latin version of Grosseteste containing letters from and to S. John and the Virgin Mary.

2. The short recension.—It was early seen that the long recension contained several letters which were clearly not genuine, and that those which had the most claim to acceptance, as having been mentioned by Eusebius, were greatly corrupted by obvious interpolations. Fortunately the remnants of an early collection have been found which originally contained only the seven Eusebian letters. The text of this recension is nowhere extant in a pure form. All the known MSS. of Ignatius (with the possible exception of the Berlin papyrus) which contain the seven Eusebian letters belong to some degree to the "Long recension," but this degree varies. Two classes of MSS. must be distinguished. (1) MSS. containing the additional epistles of the "Long recension," but preserving the uninterpolated text of the seven Eusebian letters. (2) MSS. containing the additional epistles and the interpolated text of the Eusebian letters. It is obvious that the second class are genuine MSS. of the "Long recension," and that the former class are MSS. of the "Short recension," copied from originals.
IGNATIUS

containing only the Eusebian letters, to which the copyist has supplied the additional material of the "Long recension" from some other original, but luckily without correcting the text of the seven letters from this second source. Having, therefore, the information of Eusebius to define the extent of the original collection of letters we can use this class of MSS. to determine its text.

3. The Syriac abridgment.—In 1845 Dr. Cureton discovered a Syriac text of a collection of three epistles, Ephesians, Romans, and Polycarp, and there was for a time a tendency to think that this might be the original text. Lightfoot however and others showed it to be merely an abridgment from a Syriac text of the short recension. It has therefore more or less disappeared from the field of study except as evidence for the text of the short recension, in the same way as the 'long recension' is only valuable for the light which the interpolations throw on the doctrinal development of Christianity, and in a few places as a help to reconstructing the true text where the short recension has been corrupted.

The history of the discovery of the text of the short recension is worth mentioning, though it is here only possible to give it in outline. In the early middle ages the long recension was generally current, and in the west this included the correspondence between Ignatius and the Virgin Mary and St. John. This last addition was soon rejected as a forgery, but until the time of Archbishop Ussher only the long recension was known, though its genuineness was often doubted. In 1644 Ussher published an edition of Ignatius in which he restored
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

the text of the short recension by the aid of a Latin version made in 1250 A.D. by Robert Grosseteste of Lincoln from a lost Greek original which belonged to the long recension but had the uninterpolated text of the Eusebian epistles. In 1646 Isaac Vossius published a Greek text of the same kind from Cod. Medic. Laur. lxii. 7 at Florence, which is however not complete, and omits the epistle to the Romans. This deficiency was supplied in 1689 by Ruinart in his Acta Martyrum Sincera from a Paris MS. (Paris Graec. 1451) of the 10th century.

In 1783 an Armenian version was published in Constantinople by Bishop Minas from five Armenian MSS., some of which are now extant, and this was reprinted and translated by Petermann in 1849. It is not a version made directly from the Greek, but from a lost Syriac version, of which however some fragments were published in 1849 in Cureton’s Corpus Ignatianum, and some more by Lightfoot in his Ignatius (2nd edition) in 1889. In 1883 Ciasca, and in 1885 Lightfoot in his Ignatius (1st edition), published a Sahidic fragment containing part of the epistle to the Smyrnaeans, from MS. Borg. 248 in the Museo Nazionale at Naples. Finally, in 1910 a papyrus fragment of the 5th century (Berlin P. 10581) was published by C. Schmidt and W. Schubert in their Altchristliche Texte (Berliner Klassikertexte, heft vi.); this contains Smyrnaeans iii. 3-xii. 1. The text based on these sources may be regarded as fairly accurate, though it is probably by no means so good as that of I. Clement.

The symbols employed for referring to these MSS. and versions are as follows:—

170
IGNATIUS

\( G_1 = \text{Codex Mediceus Laurentius lxii. 7 (the Vossian MS.)} \)

\( g = \text{the text of the interpolated epistles in the long recension.} \)

\( L = \text{the Latin version of Grosseteste. (} L^o = \text{codex Caiensis,} L^w = \text{codex Montacutianus, known only from the collation of Ussher.)} \)

\( A = \text{the Armenian version.} \)

\( S = \text{the Syriac version (} S_{1,2,3,4} = \text{the various fragments of the unabridged texts,} S = \text{Cureton's abridgment).} \)

\( C = \text{the Sahidic version.} \)

\( B = \text{the Berlin papyrus.} \)

It is perhaps also desirable to note that Lightfoot and some other writers refer to the Syriac abridgment as the "short recension," and use the name of "middle recension" for the "short recension." The "Vossian epistles" is also a name sometimes used for the "short recension."
ΤΟΥ ΑΓΙΟΥ ΙΓΝΑΤΙΟΥ
ΕΠΙΣΤΟΛΑΙ

ΠΡΟΣ ΕΦΕΣΙΟΥΣ ΙΓΝΑΤΙΟΥΣ

'Ιγνατιος, ο καὶ Θεοφόρος, τῇ εὐλογημένῃ ἐν μεγέθει θεοῦ πατρὸς πληρώματι, τῇ προωρισμένῃ πρὸ αἰώνων εἶναι διὰ παντὸς εἰς δόξαν παράμονον ἀτρέπτου, ἡνωμένη καὶ ἐκλεεγμένη ἐν πάθει ἀληθινῷ, ἐν θελήματι τοῦ πατρὸς καὶ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ τοῦ θεοῦ ἡμῶν, τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ τῇ ἀξιομακαρίστῳ, τῇ ούσῃ ἐν Ἐφέσῳ τῆς Ἀσίας, πλεῖστα ἐν Ἰησοῦ Χριστῷ καὶ ἐν ἀμώμῳ χαρᾷ χαίρειν.

I

1. Ἀποδεξάμενος ἐν θεῷ τὸ πολυαγαπητὸν σου ὄνομα, δὲ κέκτησθε φύσει δικαίαν κατὰ πίστιν καὶ ἀγάπην ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ, τῷ σωτηρίῳ ἡμῶν μυρμητά δύνασθε θεοῦ, ἀναξιωτυπήσαντες ἐν αἵματι θεοῦ τὸ συγγενικὸν ἔργον τελείως ἀπηρτίσατε;

2. ἀκούσαντες γὰρ δεδεμένον ἀπὸ Συρίας ὑπὲρ

1 "Truly immaculate will," A(S).
THE EPISTLES OF SAINT IGNATIUS

I.—IGNATIUS TO THE EPHESIANS

Ignatius, who is also called Theophorus,1 to Greeting the Church, worthy of all felicitation, which is at Ephesus in Asia,—blessed with greatness by the fulness of God the Father, predestined from eternity for abiding and unchangeable glory, united and chosen through true suffering by the will of the Father and Jesus Christ our God,—abundant greeting in Jesus Christ and in blameless joy.

I

1. I became acquainted through God with your much beloved name, which you have obtained by your righteous nature, according to faith and love in Christ Jesus our Saviour. You are imitators of God, and, having kindled your brotherly2 task by the blood of God, you completed it perfectly. 2. For when you

1 i.e. "The God-bearer." In the 3rd century Acts of Ignatius the Emperor asks "And who is Theophorus?" and Ignatius replied "He who has Christ in his heart."

2 Or "natural," "congenial," as Lightfoot suggests: the translation given is that of Zahn.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

τοῦ κοινοῦ ὄνοματος καὶ ἐλπίδος, ἐλπίζοντα τῇ προσευχῇ ὕμων ἐπιτυχεῖν ἐν Ῥώμῃ θηρομαχῆσαι, ὅνα διὰ τοῦ ἐπιτυχεῖν δυνηθῶ μαθητής εἶναι, ἰδεῖν ἐσπονδάσατε. 1 Ἐπεὶ οὖν τὴν πολυπλῆθειαν ὕμων ἐν ὄνοματι θεοῦ ἀπείληφα ἐν Ὄνησίμῳ, τῷ ἐν ἀγάπῃ ἀδιηγητῷ, ὕμων δὲ ἐπισκόπῳ, 2 ἐν εὐχαρίστεις κατὰ Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν ὑμᾶς ἀγαπᾶν καὶ πάντας ὑμᾶς αὐτῷ ἐν ὁμοιότητι εἶναι. εὐλογητὸς γὰρ ὁ χαρισμαίνον ὑμῖν ἄξιος οὖσι τοιοῦτων ἐπίσκοπον κεκτήσαται.

II

1. Περὶ δὲ τοῦ συνδούλου μου Βούρρου, τοῦ κατὰ θεοῦ διακόνου ὑμῶν ἐν πᾶσιν εὐλογημένου, εὐχαρίστεις παραμεῖναί αὐτὸν εἰς τιμήν ὑμῶν καὶ τοῦ ἐπισκόπου καὶ Κρόκοσ δὲ, ὁ θεοῦ ἄξιος καὶ ὑμῶν, ὅν εξεμπλάριον τῆς ἀφ᾽ ὑμῶν ἀγάπης ἀπέλαβον, κατὰ πάντα με ἀνέπαυσεν, ὡς καὶ αὐτὸν ὁ πατὴρ Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν ἀναψύξαι, ἀμα Ὅνησίμῳ καὶ Βούρρῳ καὶ Εὐπλέῳ καὶ Φρόντου, δι᾽ ὅν πάντας ὑμᾶς κατὰ ἀγάπην εἶδον. 2. ὅναίμην ὑμῶν διὰ παντός, ἐάνπερ ἄξιος ὑμῶν πρέπον οὖν ἐστὶν κατὰ πάντα τρόπον δοξάζειν Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν τὸν δοξάσαντα ὑμᾶς, ὅλα ἐν μιᾷ ψυχῇ κατηρτισμένοι, ψυχοσώσομενοι τῷ ἐπισκόπῳ καὶ τῷ πρεσβυτερίῳ, κατὰ πάντα ἤτε ἡγιασμένοι.

1 ἰδεῖν ἐσπονδάσατε om. Gg, the text is restored from ALS, but Lightfoot prefers ἰστορῆσαι to ἰδεῖν.
2 ἐν σαρκὶ ἐπισκ. GL, “your bishop in the flesh.”

174
heard that I had been sent a prisoner from Syria for the sake of our common name and hope, in the hope of obtaining by your prayers the privilege of fighting with beasts at Rome, that by so doing I might be enabled to be a true disciple, you hastened to see me. 3. Seeing then that I received in the name of God your whole congregation in the person of Onesimus, a man of inexpressible love and your bishop, I beseech you by Jesus Christ to love him, and all to resemble him. For blessed is he who granted you to be worthy to obtain such a bishop.

II

1. Now concerning my fellow servant, Burrhus, your deacon by the will of God, who is blessed in all things, I beg that he may stay longer, for your honour and for that of the bishop. And Crocus also, who is worthy of God and of you, whom I received as an example of your love, has relieved me in every way,—may the Father of Jesus Christ refresh him in like manner,—together with Onesimus and Burrhus and Euplus and Fronto, in whose persons I have seen you all in love. 2. May I ever have joy of you, if I be but worthy. It is, therefore, seemly in every way to glorify Jesus Christ, who has glorified you, that you may be joined together in one subjection, subject to the bishop and to the presbytery, and may in all things be sanctified.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

III

1. Οὐ διατάσσομαι ὑμῖν ὡς ὄν τις. εἰ γὰρ καὶ δέδεμαι ἐν τῷ ὑμόματί, οὕτω ἀπείρτισμαι ἐν ᾿Ιησοῦ Χριστῷ· νῦν γὰρ ἀρχὴν ἔχω τοῦ μαθη- τεύσεις, καὶ προσλαλῶ ὑμῖν ὡς συνδιδασκαλίταις μου. ἐμὲ γὰρ ἔδει ύφ’ ὑμῶν ὑπαλειφθῆναι πίστει, νοῦθεσιά, ὑπομονή, μακροθυμία. 2. ἀλλ’ ἐπεὶ ἡ ἀγάπη ὑμῖν ἔδα με σιωπᾶν περὶ υμῶν, διὰ τούτο προέλαβον παρακαλεῖν ὑμᾶς, ὡς συντρέχητε τῇ γνώμῃ τοῦ θεοῦ. καὶ γὰρ ᾿Ιησοῦς Χριστός, τὸ ἀδιάκριτον ἡμῶν ζῆν, τοῦ πατρὸς ἡ γνώμη, ὡς καὶ οἱ ἐπίσκοποι, οἱ κατὰ τὰ πέρατα ὄρισθέντες, ἐν ᾿Ιησοῦ Χριστοῦ γνώμῃ εἰσίν.

IV

1. Ὠθεὶν πρέπει ὑμῖν συντρέχειν τῇ τοῦ ἐπισκόπου γνώμῃ, ὥσπερ καὶ ποιεῖτε. τὸ γὰρ ἀξιονό- μαστον ὑμῶν πρεσβυτέριον, τοῦ θεοῦ ἀξιόν, οὕτως συνήρμοσται τῷ ἐπισκόπῳ, ὡς χορδαί κιθάρα. διὰ τούτο ἐν τῇ ὁμονοίᾳ ὑμῶν καὶ συμφώνῳ ἀγάπῃ ᾿Ιησοῦς Χριστὸς ἂδεται. 2. καὶ οἱ κατ’ ἄνδρα δὲ χορὸς γίνεσθε, ᾿ἄνα σύμφωνοι ὄντες ἐν ὁμονοίᾳ, χρῶμα θεοῦ λαβόντες ἐν ἐνότητι, ἀδητε ἐν φωνῇ μιᾷ διὰ ᾿Ιησοῦ Χριστοῦ τῷ πατρί, ᾿ἄν ὑμῶν καὶ ἄκούσῃ καὶ ἐπιγνώσῃ, δι’ ὃν εὗ πράσσετε, μέλη

176
III

1. I do not give you commands as if I were some one great, for though I am a prisoner for the Name, I am not yet perfect in Jesus Christ; for now I do but begin to be a disciple, and I speak to you as to my fellow learners. For I needed to be prepared by you in faith, exhortation, endurance, long-suffering. 2. But since love does not suffer me to be silent concerning you, for this reason I have taken upon me to exhort you that you live in harmony with the will of God. For Jesus Christ, our inseparable life, is the will of the Father, even as the bishops, who have been appointed throughout the world, are by the will of Jesus Christ.

IV

1. Therefore it is fitting that you should live in harmony with the will of the bishop, as indeed you do. For your justly famous presbytery, worthy of God, is attuned to the bishop as the strings to a harp. Therefore by your concord and harmonious love Jesus Christ is being sung. 2. Now do each of you join in this choir, that being harmoniously in concord you may receive the key of God in unison, and sing with one voice through Jesus Christ to the Father, that he may both hear you and may recognise, through your good works, that you are

---

1 Literally "anointed." The allusion is to the preparation of a gymnast or gladiator.
2 Literally "run."
3 i.e. in the musical sense of the word.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

δύνας τοῦ νῦν αὐτοῦ. χρήσιμον οὖν ἐστὶν υμᾶς ἐν ἀμόμῳ ἐνότητι εἰναι, ἵνα καὶ θεοῦ πάντοτε μετέχητε.

V

1. Εἰ γὰρ ἔγω ἐν μικρῷ χρόνῳ τοιαύτην συμ- ἴθειαν ἐσχον πρὸς τὸν ἐπίσκοπον υμῶν, οὐκ ἀνθρωπίνην οὖσαν, ἆλλα πνευματικήν, πόσῳ μᾶλλον υμᾶς μακαρίζω τούς ἐγκεκραμένους οὕτως, ὡς ἡ ἐκκλησία Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, καὶ ὡς Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς τῷ πατρὶ, ἵνα πάντα ἐν ἐνότητι σύμφωνα ἦ; 2. μὴ δείξῃς πλανάσθως· εὰν μὴ τις ἡ ἑντός τοῦ θυσιαστήριον, ὑστερεῖται τοῦ ἁρτοῦ τοῦ θεοῦ. εἰ γὰρ ἐνός καὶ δευτέρου προσευχὴ τοσαύτην ἵσχυν ἔχει, πόσῳ μᾶλλον ἢ τε τοῦ ἐπισκόπου καὶ πάσης τῆς ἐκκλησίας; 3. ὁ οὖν μὴ ἐρχόμενος ἐπὶ τὸ αὐτὸ οὕτως ἢ ἣν ὑπερηφανεὶ καὶ ἑαυτὸν διέκρινεν. γέγραπται γὰρ Τερεμφάνους ὁ θεὸς ἀντιτάσσεται, σπουδάσωμεν οὖν μὴ ἀντιτάσσεσθαι τῷ ἐπι- σκόπῳ, ἵνα ὀμνεθεὶ ὑποτασσόμενοι.

VI

1. Καὶ ὅσον βλέπει τις συγώντα ἐπίσκοπον, πλεονος αὐτὸν φοβεῖσθω· πάντα γὰρ, ὅπως τεμπεῖ ὁ οἰκοδεσπότης εἰς ἑδιὰν ὁικονομίαν, οὕτως δεῖ

1 ἀνακεκραμένος g, which Lightfoot prefers.
2 θεοῦ is found in G and Lightfoot prefers it for transcriptional probability, but θεφ is supported by LS and some patristic quotations.

178
IGNATIUS TO THE EPHESIANS, iv. 2–vi. 1

members of his Son. It is therefore profitable for you to be in blameless unity, in order that you may always commune with God.

V

1. For if I in a short time gained such fellowship with your bishop as was not human but spiritual, how much more do I count you blessed who are so united with him as the Church is with Jesus Christ, and as Jesus Christ is with the Father, that all things may sound together in unison! 2. Let no man be deceived: unless a man be within the sanctuary he lacks the bread of God, for if the prayer of one or two has such might, how much more has that of the bishop and of the whole Church? 3. So then he who does not join in the common assembly, is already haughty, and has separated himself. For it is written “God resisteth the proud:” let us then be careful not to oppose the bishop, that we may be subject to God.

VI

1. And the more anyone sees that the bishop is silent, the more let him fear him. For every one whom the master of the house sends to do his

1 There is a curious mixture of tenses in the Greek: Lightfoot takes the final aorist as gnomic: but it is possible that Ignatius is, at least in part, referring to some special instance.

2 Or, with the alternative reading, “by our submission we may belong to God.”
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

ἡμᾶς αὐτὸν δέχεσθαι, ὡς αὐτὸν τὸν πέμψαντα. τὸν οὖν ἐπίσκοπον δῆλον ὅτι ὡς αὐτὸν κύριον δεῖ προσβηλέτειν. 2. αὐτὸς μὲν οὖν Ὄνησίμος ὑπερεπαινεῖ ὑμῶν τὴν ἐν θεῷ εὐταξίαν, ὅτι πάντες κατὰ ἀλήθειαν ἔχετε καὶ ὅτι ἐν ὑμῖν οὔδεμα αἴρεσις κατοικεῖ· ἀλλ' οὖδὲ ἀκούετε τινος πλέον, ἡ περὶ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ λαλοῦντος ἐν ἀληθείᾳ.

VII

1. Εἰώθασιν γὰρ τινὲς δόλῳ πονηρῷ τὸ ὅνομα περιφέρειν, ἀλλὰ τινὰ πράσσοντες ἀνάξια θεοῦ οὖσα δεὶ ὑμᾶς ὡς θηρία ἐκκλίνειν εἰσίν γὰρ κύνες λυσσώντες, λαθροδήκται· οὖσα δεὶ ὑμᾶς φυλάσσοντες, δυσθεραπεύοντος. 2. εἰς ἰατρός ἑστιν, σαρκικός τε καὶ πνευματικός, γεννητὸς καὶ ἀγέννητος, ἐν ἀνθρώπῳ θεός, ἐν θανάτῳ ζωὴ ἀληθινή, καὶ ἐκ Μαρίας καὶ ἐκ θεοῦ, πρῶτον παθῆτος καὶ τότε ἁπαθὴς, Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς ὁ κύριος ἡμῶν.

VIII

1. Μὴ οὖν τις ὑμᾶς ἐξαπατῶ, ἀλλ' ποτὲ οὐδὲ ἐξαπατάσθη, δόλοι οἵτε θεοῦ, ὅταν γὰρ μηδεμία ἔρις ἐνήρεισται ἐν ὑμῖν ἡ δυναμένη ὑμᾶς βασανίζει.

1 The reading of G is εἴπερ; the Latin is aliquem amplius quam Iesum Christum loquentem; the Armenian supports the text (ἡ περὶ) which is Lightfoot's emendation.
2 This reading is justified by early patristic quotation, and (slightly corrupted) by A. GL read εἰς σαρκὶ γενόμενος θεὸς "God become incarnate."
3 A Σ G read ἐπίθυμα, "lust," which Lightfoot accepts.

180
IGNATIUS TO THE EPHESIANS, VI. I—VIII. 1

business ought we to receive as him who sent him. Therefore it is clear that we must regard the bishop as the Lord himself. 2. Indeed Onesimus himself gives great praise to your good order in God, for you all live according to truth, and no heresy dwells among you; nay, you do not even listen to any unless he speak concerning Jesus Christ in truth.

VII

1. For there are some who make a practice of carrying about the Name with wicked guile, and do certain other things unworthy of God; these you must shun as wild beasts, for they are ravenous dogs, who bite secretly, and you must be upon your guard against them, for they are scarcely to be cured. 2. There is one Physician, who is both flesh and spirit, born and yet not born, who is God in man, true life in death, both of Mary and of God, first passible and then impassible, Jesus Christ our Lord.

VIII

1. Let none therefore deceive you, and indeed you have not been deceived, but belong wholly to God. For since no strife is fixed among you which might
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

σαι, ἀρα κατὰ θεοῦ κεῖτε. περὶψημα υμῶν καὶ ἀγνίζομαι υμῶν Ἐφεσίων, ἐκκλησίας τῆς διαβοή- 
Rom. 8, 5. 8 
tου τοῖς αἰώσιω. 2. οἱ σαρκικοὶ τὰ πνευματικὰ 
πράσσειν οὐ δύνανται, οὐδὲ οἱ πνευματικοὶ τὰ 
σαρκικά, ὡσπερ οὐδὲ ἡ πίστις τὰ τῆς ἀπιστίας 
οὐδὲ ἡ ἀπιστία τὰ τῆς πίστεως. ἀ δὲ καὶ κατὰ 
σάρκα πράσσετε, ταῦτα πνευματικά ἐστιν ἐν 
Ἰησοῦ γὰρ Χριστῷ πάντα πράσσετε.

IX

1. "Εγνων δὲ παροδεύσαντάς τινας ἐκεῖθεν, ἔχον- 
τας κακὴν διδαχὴν· οὐς οὐκ ἐισάσατε σπείραι εἰς 
ὑμᾶς, βύσαντες τὰ ὅτα, εἰς τὸ μὴ παραδέξασθαι 
tὰ σπειρόμενα ὑπ’ αὐτῶν, ὡς ὄντες λίθοι ναοῦ 
pατρός, ἡτοιμασμένοι 1 εἰς οἰκοδομήν θεοῦ πατρός, 
ἀναφέρομεν εἰς τὰ ὑψη διὰ τῆς μηχανῆς Ἰησοῦ 
Χριστοῦ, ὃς ἐστιν σταυρός, σχοινίω χρώμενοι τῷ 
pνεύματι τῷ ἀγίῳ. ἡ δὲ πίστις υμῶν ἀναγωγεῖς 
ὑμῶν, ἡ δὲ ἀγάπη ὄδος ἡ ἀναφέρουσα εἰς θεόν. 
2. ἐστὲ οὖν καὶ σύνοδοι πάντες, θεοφόροι καὶ 
nαοφόροι, χριστοφόροι, ἀγιοφόροι, κατὰ πάντα 
κεκοσμημένοι ἐντολαῖς Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ· οἰς

1 Lightfoot emends πατρὸς (written πρὸς) ἡτοιμασμένοι into 
προητοιμασμένοι,

183
torture you, you do indeed live according to God. I am dedicated\(^1\) and devoted to you Ephesians, and your Church, which is famous to eternity. 2. They who are carnal cannot do spiritual things, neither can they who are spiritual do carnal things, just as faith is incapable of the deeds of infidelity, and infidelity of the deeds of faith. But even what you do according to the flesh is spiritual, for you do all things in Jesus Christ.

IX

1. I have learnt, however, that some from elsewhere have stayed with you, who have evil doctrine; but you did not suffer them to sow it among you, and stopped your ears, so that you might not receive what they sow, seeing that you are as stones of the temple of the Father, made ready for the building of God our Father, carried up to the heights by the engine of Jesus Christ, that is the cross, and using as a rope the Holy Spirit. And your faith is your windlass and love is the road which leads up to God. 2. You are then all fellow travellers, and carry with you God, and the Temple, and Christ, and holiness, and are in all ways adorned by commandments of Jesus Christ. And I

---

\(^1\) Lit. "The refuse of": the word was used of criminals and others whose death was regarded as a piacular sacrifice, and so it came to mean a sacrifice of this kind. Ultimately it lost its meaning so far as to become merely a form of epistolary politeness.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

καὶ ἀγαλλιώμενος ἤξιῶθην δὲ ὁ γράφω
προσομιλήσαι ὑμῖν καὶ συγχαρῆσαι, ὅτι καὶ
ἀνθρώπων ἔπον οὐδὲν ἀγαπᾶτε εἰ μὴ μόνον τὸν
θεόν.

X

Thess. 5, 17 1. Καὶ ὑπὲρ τῶν ἄλλων δὲ ἀνθρώπων ἄδια-
λείπτως προσεύχεσθε, ἔστιν γὰρ ἐν αὐτοῖς ἐλπὶς
μετανοίας, ἵνα θεοῦ τύχωσιν. ἐπιτρέψατε οὖν
αὐτοῖς κἂν ἐκ τῶν ἔργων ὑμῶν μαθητευθῆναι.
2. πρὸς τὰς ὀργὰς αὐτῶν ὑμεῖς πραείς, πρὸς τὰς
μεγαλορημοσύνας αὐτῶν ὑμεῖς ταπεινόφρονες, πρὸς
τὰς βλασφημίας αὐτῶν ὑμεῖς τὰς προσευχὰς, πρὸς
τὴν πλάνην αὐτῶν ὑμεῖς ἐδραίοι τῇ πίστει, πρὸς
τὸ ἀγρίον αὐτῶν ὑμεῖς ἕμεροι, μὴ σπουδάζοντες
ἀντιμιμήσασθαι αὐτούς. 3. ἀδελφοὶ αὐτῶν εὑρε-
θῶμεν τῇ ἐπισκεψίᾳ· μιμηταὶ δὲ τοῦ κυρίου σπου-
δάζομεν εἶναι, τὸς πλέον ἀδικηθῇ, τὸς ἀποστερηθῇ,
tὸς ἀθετηθῇ· ἵνα μὴ τοῦ διαβόλου βοτάνη τῆς
eὐρεθῇ ἐν ὑμῖν, ἀλλὰ ἐν πάσῃ ἁγνείᾳ καὶ σωφρο-
σύνῃ μένυτε ἐν Ἰησοῦ Χριστῷ σαρκικὸς καὶ
πνευματικὸς.

XI

1. Ἐσχατοὶ καιροί. λοιπὸν αἰσχυνθῶμεν, φοβη-
θῶμεν τὴν μακροθυμίαν τοῦ θεοῦ, ἵνα μὴ ἤμιν εἰς

1 This is Lightfoot's emendation: GL read κατ' ἄλλον βλον. A seems to imply the same reading, but it gives no good meaning and g reads οὐδὲ κατὰ σάρκα ἀγαπᾶτε ἀλλὰ κατὰ θεόν (you do not love according to the flesh but according to God), a paraphrase which may be taken to imply Lightfoot's reading.

reads μένετε, “but remain.”
IGNATIUS TO THE EPHESIANS, Ix. 2–xi. 1

share in this joy, for it has been granted to me to speak to you through my writing, and to rejoice with you, that you love nothing, according to human life, but God alone.

X

1. Now for other men "pray unceasingly," for there is in them a hope of repentance, that they may find God. Suffer them therefore to become your disciples, at least through your deeds. 2. Be yourselves gentle in answer to their wrath; be humble minded in answer to their proud speaking; offer prayer for their blasphemy; be steadfast in the faith for their error; be gentle for their cruelty, and do not seek to retaliate. 3. Let us be proved their brothers by our gentleness and let us be imitators of the Lord, and seek who may suffer the more wrong, be the more destitute, the more despised; that no plant of the devil be found in you but that you may remain in all purity and sobriety in Jesus Christ, both in the flesh and in the Spirit.

XI

1. These are the last times. Therefore let us be modest, let us fear the long-suffering of God, that it
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

κρίμα γένηται. ἢ γὰρ τὴν μέλλουσαν ὁργὴν φοβηθῶμεν, ἢ τὴν ἐνεστῶσαν χάριν ἀγαπήσωμεν, ἐν τῶν δύο μονῶν ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ εὑρεθήναι εἰς τὸ ἀληθινὸν ἦν. 2. χωρὶς τούτου μηδὲν ὕμων πρεπέτω, ἐν οἷς δεσμά περιφέρω, τοὺς πνευματικοὺς μαργαρίτας, ἐν οἷς γένοιτο μοι ἀναστήναι τῇ προσευχῇ ὑμῶν, ἢ γένοιτό μοι ἀεὶ μέτοχον εἶναι, ἢν ἐν κλήρῳ Ἔφεσίων εὑρεθῶ τῶν Χριστιανῶν, οὐ καὶ τοῖς ἀποστόλοις πάντοτε συνήμεσαν ἐν δυνάμει Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ.

XII

1. Οἶδα, τίς εἰμὶ καὶ τίς ὁ γράφω. ἔγῳ κατακρίτος, ὑμεῖς ἠλεημένοι· ἔγῳ ύπὸ κίνδυνον, ὑμεῖς ἐστηριχμένοι. 2. πάροδος ἐστε τῶν εἰς θεὸν ἀναρρομένων, Παύλου συμμύσται τοῦ ἡγιασμένου, τοῦ μεμαρτυρημένου, ἀξιομακαρίστου, οὗ γένοιτό μοι ύπὸ τὰ ἱζειν εὑρεθήναι, ὅταν θεοῦ ἐπιτύχω, δε ἐν πάσῃ ἐπιστολῇ μνημονεύει ὑμῶν ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ.

XIII

1. Σπουδάζετε οὖν πυκνότερον συνέρχεσθαι εἰς εὐχαριστίαν θεοῦ καὶ εἰς δόξαν. όταν γὰρ πυκνός ἐπὶ τὸ αὐτὸ γίνεσθε, καθαροῦνται αἱ δυνάμεις τοῦ Σατανᾶ, καὶ λύεται ὁ ὀλέθρος αὐτοῦ ἐν τῇ ὁμονοίᾳ ὑμῶν τῆς πίστεως. 2. οὐδὲν ἐστιν ἅμειων εἰρήνης, ἐν ὃ πάσας πόλεμος καταργεῖται ἐπουρανίων καὶ ἐπιγεέων.
IGNATIUS TO THE EPHESIANS, XI. 1–XIII. 2

may not become our judgment. For let us either fear the wrath to come, or love the grace which is present,—one of the two,—only let us be found in Christ Jesus unto true life. 2. Without him let nothing seem comely to you, for in him I carry about my chains, the spiritual pearls in which may it be granted me to rise again through your prayers, which I beg that I may ever share, that I be found in the lot of the Christians of Ephesus, who also were ever of one mind with the Apostles in the power of Jesus Christ.

XII

1. I know who I am and to whom I write. I am condemned, you have obtained mercy; I am in danger, you are established in safety; 2. you are the passage for those who are being slain for the sake of God, fellow-initiates with Paul, who was sanctified, who gained a good report, who was right blessed, in whose footsteps may I be found when I shall attain to God, who in every Epistle makes mention of you in Christ Jesus.

XIII

1. Seek, then, to come together more frequently to give thanks and glory to God. For when you gather together frequently the powers of Satan are destroyed, and his mischief is brought to nothing, by the concord of your faith. 2. There is nothing better than peace, by which every war in heaven and on earth is abolished.

1 It is probable that there is here an allusion to the Eucharist.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

XIV

1. Ὡν οὐδὲν λανθάνει ύμᾶς, ἐὰν τελειῶσ εἰς Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν ἐχῆτε τὴν πίστιν καὶ τὴν ἀγάπην, ἦτις ἔστιν ἀρχή ζωῆς καὶ τέλος· ἀρχή μὲν πίστις, τέλος δὲ ἀγάπη. ὧς δὲ δύο ἐν ἑνὸτητι γενόμενα θεός ἔστιν, τὰ δὲ ἄλλα πάντα εἰς καλοκαγάθιαν ἀκολουθά ἔστιν. 2. οὐδεὶς πίστις ἐπαγγελλόμενος ἀμαρτάνει, οὐδὲ ἀγάπην κεκτημένος μισεῖ. φανερὸν τὸ δένδρον ἀπὸ τοῦ καρποῦ αὐτοῦ. οὕτως οἱ ἐπαγγελλόμενοι Χριστὸν εἶναι δι' ὃν πράσσοντων ὀφθάλμον, οὐ γὰρ νῦν ἐπαγγελία τὸ ἔργον, ἀλλ' ἐν δυνάμει πίστεως ἐὰν τις εὑρεθῇ εἰς τέλος.

XV

1. "Ἄμεινόν ἐστιν σιωπᾶν καὶ εἶναι, ἡ λαλοῦντα μὴ εἶναι. καλὸν τὸ διδάσκειν, ἐὰν ὁ λέγων ποιῇ. εἰς οὖν διδάσκαλος, ὃς εἰπεν, καὶ ἐγένετο· καὶ ἂ σιγῶν δὲ πεποίηκεν ἄξια τοῦ πατρὸς ἐστίν. 2. ὁ λόγον Ἰησοῦν κεκτημένος ἀληθῶς δύναται καὶ τῆς ἡσυχίας αὐτοῦ ἀκούειν, ἦν τελειος ἦ, ἦν δι' ὃν λαλεῖ πράσσῃ καὶ δι' ὃν σιγᾶ γινώσκεται. 3. οὐδὲν λανθάνει τοῦ κύριον, ἀλλὰ καὶ τὰ κρυπτὰ ἡμῶν ἐγγὺς αὐτῷ ἐστίν. πάντα οὖν ποιῶμεν ὡς αὐτὸν ἐν ἡμῖν κατοικοῦντος, ἦν ὃμεν αὐτοῦ ναι καὶ αὐτὸς ἐν ἡμῖν θεὸς ἡμῶν· ὅπερ καὶ ἐστὶν καὶ φανησάται πρὸ προσώπου ἡμῶν, ἐξ ὃν δικαίως ἀγαπῶμεν αὐτὸν.

1 ἐν ἡμῖν θεὸς ἡμῶν GL, ἐν ἡμῖν θεὸς Sg, θεὸς ἡμῶν A.

188
IGNATIUS TO THE EPHESIANS, xiv. 1–xv. 3

XIV

1. **None** of these things are unknown to you if you possess perfect faith towards Jesus Christ, and love, which are the beginning and end of life; for the beginning is faith and the end is love, and when the two are joined together in unity it is God, and all other noble things follow after them. 2. No man who professes faith sins, nor does he hate who has obtained love. “The tree is known by its fruits”: so they who profess to be of Christ shall be seen by their deeds. For the “deed” is not in present profession, but is shown by the power of faith, if a man continue to the end.

XV

1. Is better to be silent and be real, than to talk and to be unreal. Teaching is good, if the teacher does what he says. There is then one teacher who “spoke and it came to pass,” and what he has done even in silence is worthy of the Father. 2. He who has the word of Jesus for a true possession can also hear his silence, that he may be perfect, that he may act through his speech, and be understood through his silence. 3. Nothing is hid from the Lord, but even our secret things are near him. Let us therefore do all things as though he were dwelling in us, that we may be his temples, and that he may be our God in us. This indeed is so, and will appear clearly before our face by the love which we justly have to him.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

XVI

I Cor. 6, 9. 1. Μὴ πλανᾶσθε, ἀδελφοί μου· οἱ οἰκοφόροι βασιλεῖαν θεοῦ οὐ κληρονομήσουσιν. 2. εἰ οὐν οἱ κατὰ σάρκα ταύτα πράσσοντες ἀπέθανον, πόσῳ μᾶλλον, ἦν πίστιν θεοῦ ἐν κακῇ διδασκαλίᾳ φθείρῃ, ὑπὲρ ἢς Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς ἐσταυρώθη; ὁ τοιοῦτος ῥυτισμὸς γενόμενος, εἰς τὸ πῦρ τὸ ἀσβεστὸν χωρῆσει, ὡμοίως καὶ ὁ ἀκούων αὐτοῦ.

XVII

Mt. 26, 7; Joh. 12, 8

1. Διὰ τοῦτο μῦρον ἔλαβεν ἐπὶ τῆς κεφαλῆς αὐτοῦ ὁ κύριος, ἵνα πνέῃ τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ ἀφθαρσίαν. μὴ ἀλείφῃς δυσωδίαν τῆς διδασκαλίας τοῦ ἀρχοντος τοῦ αἰῶνος τούτου, μὴ αἰχμαλωτίζῃ ὑμᾶς ἐκ τοῦ προκειμένου ζην. 2. διὰ τί δὲ οὐ πάντες φρόνιμοι γινόμεθα λαβόντες θεοῦ γνῶσιν, ὃ ἐστιν Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς; τί μωρῶς ἀπολύμεθα, ἀγνοοῦντες τὸ χάρισμα, δὲ πέπομφεν ἀληθῶς ὁ κύριος;

XVIII

Gal. 5, 11
I Cor. 1, 20

1. Περίψημα τὸ ἐμὸν πνεῦμα τοῦ σταυροῦ, δὲ ἐστὶν σκάνδαλον τοῖς ἀποστόλοις, ἥμιν δὲ σωτηρία καὶ ζωὴ αἰώνιος. ποῦ σοφός; ποῦ συζητητής; ποῦ καύχησις τῶν λεγομένων συνετῶν; 2. ὁ γὰρ θεὸς ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦς ο Χριστὸς ἐκυψεῖται ὑπὸ

190
IGNATIUS TO THE EPHESIANS, xvi. 1–xviii. 2

XVI

1. Do not err, my brethren; they who corrupt families shall not inherit the kingdom of God. 2. If then those who do this according to the flesh suffer death, how much more if a man corrupt by false teaching the faith of God for the sake of which Jesus Christ was crucified? Such a one shall go in his foulness to the unquenchable fire, as also shall he who listens to him.

XVII

1. For this end did the Lord receive ointment on his head that he might breathe immortality on the Church. Be not anointed with the evil odour of the doctrine of the Prince of this world, lest he lead you away captive from the life which is set before you. 2. But why are we not all prudent seeing that we have received knowledge of God, that is, Jesus Christ? Why are we perishing in our folly, ignoring the gift which the Lord has truly sent?

XVIII

1. My spirit is devoted\(^1\) to the cross, which is an \textit{true}\textit{ doctrine}\textit{offence} to unbelievers, but to us salvation and eternal life. "Where is the wise? Where is the disputer?" Where is the boasting of those who are called prudent? 2. For our God, Jesus the Christ,

\(^1\) See note on viii. 1, p. 183.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

Μαρίας κατ’ οἰκονομίαν θεοῦ ἐκ σπέρματος μὲν Δανείδ, πνεύματος δὲ ἁγίου· δε γεννήθη καὶ ἐβαπτίσθη, ἵνα τῷ πάθει τὸ ὑδωρ καθαρίσῃ.

XIX

1. Καὶ ἔλαθεν τὸν ἄρχοντα τοῦ αἰῶνος τοῦτον ἡ παρθενία Μαρίας καὶ ὁ τοκετὸς αὐτῆς, ὁμοίως καὶ ὁ θάνατος τοῦ κυρίου· τρία μυστήρια κραυγῆς, ἀτιμα ἡ ἴσωχία θεοῦ ἐπτράχθη. 2. πῶς οὖν ἐφανερώθη τοῖς αἰῶνις; ἀστήρ ἐν οὐρανῷ ἠλαμψεν ὑπὲρ πάντας τοὺς ἀστέρας, καὶ τὸ φῶς αὐτοῦ ἀνεκλάλητο ἣν καὶ ξενισμὸν παρέίχεν ἡ καινότης αὐτοῦ, τὰ δὲ λοιπὰ πάντα ἀστρα ἀμα ἡλίῳ καὶ σελήνῃ χορὸς ἐγένετο τῷ ἀστερί, αὐτὸς δὲ ἦν ὑπερβάλλων τὸ φῶς αὐτοῦ ὑπὲρ πάντα· ταραχή τε ἦν, πόθεν ἡ καινότης ἡ ἀνόμοιος αὐτοῖς. 3. άθεν ἐλύετο πάσα μαγεία καὶ πᾶς δεσμὸς ἡπανίζετο κακίας· ἄγνοια καθηρεῖτο, παλαιὰ βασιλεία διεφθείρετο 2 θεὸν ἀνθρωπίνων φανερωμένου εἰς καινότητα αἰδίου ζωῆς· ἀρχὴν δὲ ἠλάμβανεν τὸ παρὰ θεῷ ἀπηρτισμένον. ἐνθεν τὰ πάντα συνεκυνεῖτο διὰ τὸ μελετᾶσθαι θανάτου κατάλυσιν.

1 Lightfoot omits θεοῦ on the authority of g and transcriptional probability.
2 Lightfoot omits διεφθείρετο, and readjusts the punctuation, on the authority of Λξ.

192
was conceived by Mary by the dispensation of God, "as well of the seed of David" as of the Holy Spirit: he was born, and was baptized, that by himself submitting he might purify the water.

XIX

1. And the virginity of Mary, and her giving birth were hidden from the Prince of this world, as was also the death of the Lord. Three mysteries of a cry which were wrought in the stillness of God. 2. How then was he manifested to the world? A star shone in heaven beyond all the stars, and its light was unspeakable, and its newness caused astonishment, and all the other stars, with the sun and moon, gathered in chorus round this star, and it far exceeded them all in its light; and there was perplexity, whence came this new thing, so unlike them. 3. By this all magic was dissolved and every bond of wickedness vanished away, ignorance was removed, and the old kingdom was destroyed, for God was manifest as man for the "newness" of eternal life, and that which had been prepared by God received its beginning. Hence all things were disturbed, because the abolition of death was being planned.

1 Or perhaps "by his suffering"; but the allusion seems to be to the Baptism, not to the Passion.

2 Cf. Ign. Rom. ii. The metaphor is probably from the chorus or choir which gathered round the altar in heathen ceremonial, and sang a sacrificial hymn.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

XX

1. Ἐὰν μὲ καταξιώσῃ Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς ἐν τῇ προσευχῇ ὑμῶν καὶ θέλημα ἢ, ἐν τῷ δευτέρῳ βιβλιδίῳ, δ ἐμὲλλο γράφειν ὑμῖν, προσδηλώσω ὑμῖν, ὥς ἡρξάμην οἰκονομίας εἰς τὸν καινὸν ἀνθρωπόν Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν, ἐν τῇ αὐτοῦ πίστει καὶ ἐν τῇ αὐτοῦ ἀγάπῃ, ἐν πάθει αὐτοῦ καὶ ἀναστάσει.

Rom. 1, 8

2. μάλιστα ἐὰν ὁ κύριος μοι ἀποκαλύψῃ, ὅτι οἱ κατὰ ἄνδρα κοινὴ πάντες ἐν χάριτι εἴς ὀνόματος συνερχέσθη ἐν μιᾷ πίστει καὶ ἐν Ἰησοῦ Χριστῷ, τῷ κατὰ σάρκα ἐκ γένους Δανείδ, τῷ νῦν ἀνθρώπου καὶ νῦν θεοῦ, εἰς τὸ ὑπακούειν ὑμᾶς τῷ ἐπισκόπῳ καὶ τῷ πρεσβυτερίῳ ἀπεριστατῶ διανοίᾳ, ἐνα ἀρτον κλάσθης, διὸ ἐστὶν φάρμακον ἀθανασίας, ἀντίδοτος τοῦ μὴ ἀποθανεῖν, ἀλλὰ ζῆν ἐν Ἰησοῦ Χριστῷ διὰ παντὸς.

XXI

1. Ἀντίψυχον ὑμῶν ἐγὼ καὶ ἐν ἑκάστοις εἰς θεοῦ τιμὴν εἰς Σμύρναν, οὗν καὶ γράφω ὑμῖν, εὐχαριστῶν τῷ κυρίῳ, ἀγαπῶν Πολύκαρπον ὡς καὶ ὑμᾶς, μημονεύετε μου, ὡς καὶ ὑμῶν Ἰησοῦς Χριστός. 2. προσεύχεσθε ὑπὲρ τῆς ἐκκλησίας

1 Zahn and, with some hesitation, Lightfoot emend ὅτι to τι, connecting it with ἀποκαλύψῃ. If so the translation would be “if the Lord reveal anything to me. Join in the common meeting, etc.”

2 Theodoret quotes this as ἐκ τοῦ Χ. “one Jesus Christ,” and Lightfoot accepts this reading.

194
IGNATIUS TO THE EPHESIANS, xx. i–xxi. 2

XX

1. If Jesus Christ permit me through your prayers, and it be his will, in the second book,1 which I propose to write to you, I will show you concerning the dispensation of the new man Jesus Christ, which I have begun to discuss, dealing with his faith and his love, his suffering and his resurrection; 2. especially if the Lord reveal 2 to me that you all severally join in the common meeting in grace from his name,3 in one faith and in Jesus Christ, "who was of the family of David according to the flesh," the Son of Man and the Son of God, so that you obey the bishop and the presbytery with an undisturbed mind, breaking one bread, which is the medicine of immortality, the antidote that we should not die, but live for ever in Jesus Christ.

XXI

1. May my soul be given for yours, and for them whom you sent in the honour of God to Smyrna, whence I also write to you, thanking the Lord and loving Polycarp as I do also you. Remember me as Jesus Christ also remembers you. 2. Pray for the

---

1 This second book was either never written, or at all events is not extant in the genuine recension: but a later editor has supplied a "second epistle to the Ephesians" which is undoubtedly not genuine.

2 This appears to be the only possible translation. But the text is not improbably corrupt.

3 Or possibly, as Lightfoot thinks, ἐνομάτος means "every individual of you." It is in any case a strange phrase.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

τής ἐν Συρίᾳ, θεοὶ καὶ θεοφόροι, τῇ εὐλογημένῃ ἐν χάριτι θεοῦ πατρός ἐν Χριστῷ Ιησοῦ τῷ σωτῆρι ἡμῶν, ἐν θείᾳ ἀσπάζομαι τὴν ἐκκλησίαν τὴν οὕσαν ἐν Μαγνησίᾳ τῇ πρὸς Μαμάνδρῳ καὶ εὐχόμαι ἐν θείῳ πατρὶ καὶ ἐν Ιησοῦ Χριστῷ πλείστα χαίρειν.

МАГНΗΣΙΕΥΣΙΝ ΙΓΝΑΤΙΟΣ

Ἰγνάτιος, ὁ καὶ Θεοφόρος, τῇ εὐλογημένῃ ἐν χάριτι θεοῦ πατρός ἐν Χριστῷ Ιησοῦ τῷ σωτῆρι ἡμῶν, ἐν θείᾳ ἀσπάζομαι τὴν ἐκκλησίαν τὴν οὕσαν ἐν Μαγνησίᾳ τῇ πρὸς Μαμάνδρῳ καὶ εὐχόμαι ἐν θείῳ πατρὶ καὶ ἐν Ιησοῦ Χριστῷ πλείστα χαίρειν.

I

1. Γνοὺς ἡμῶν τὸ πολυεύτακτον τῆς κατὰ θεοῦ ἀγάπης, ἀγαλλιώμενος προειλόμην ἐν πίστει Ιησοῦ Χριστοῦ προσκαλῆσαι ἡμῖν. 2. καταξιωθεῖς γὰρ ονόματος θεοπρεπεστάτου, ἐν οἷς περιφεροῦσας ἀξίω τὰς ἐκκλησίας, ἐν αἷς ἔνωσιν εὐχόμαι σαρκὸς καὶ πνεύματος Ιησοῦ Χριστοῦ, τοῦ διὰ παντὸς ἡμῶν ζῆν, πίστεως τε καὶ ἀγάπης, ἦς οὐδὲν προκέκριται, τὸ δὲ κυρίωτερον Ιησοῦ καὶ πατρὸς: ἐν ψυμένους τὴν πᾶσαν ἐπήρειαν τοῦ ἀρχοντος τοῦ αἰώνος τούτου καὶ διαφυγόντες θεοῦ τευξόμεθα.

196
IGNATIUS TO THE MAGNESIANS, xxi. 2-1. 2

Church in Syria, whence I am led a prisoner to Rome, being the least of the faithful who are there, even as I was thought worthy to show the honour of God. Farewell in God our Father and in Jesus Christ, our common hope.

II.—IGNATIUS TO THE MAGNESIANS.

Ignatius, who is also called Theophorus, to her Greetings who is blessed in the Grace of God the Father by Christ Jesus, our Saviour, in whom I greet the Church which is in Magnesia on the Maeander, and bid it in God the Father and in Christ Jesus abundant greeting.

I

1. Knowing the great orderliness of your love towards God I gladly determined to address you in the faith of Jesus Christ. 2. For being counted worthy to bear a most godly name I sing the praise of the Churches in the bonds which I carry about, and pray that in them there may be a union of the flesh and spirit of Jesus Christ, who is our everlasting life, a union of faith and love, to which is nothing preferable, and (what is more than all) a union of Jesus and the Father. If we endure in him all the evil treatment of the Prince of this world and escape, we shall attain unto God.

1 i.e. the Church.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

II

1. Ἐπεὶ οὖν ἡξιώθην ἰδεῖν ὑμᾶς διὰ Δαμᾶ τοῦ ἀξιοθέου ὑμῶν ἐπισκόπου καὶ πρεσβυτέρων ἄξιων Βάσσου καὶ Ἀπολλωνίου καὶ τοῦ συνδούλου μου διακόνου Ζωτίωνος, οὐ έγὼ ὀναίμην, ὅτι ὑποτάσσεται τῷ ἐπισκόπῳ ὡς χάριτι θεοῦ καὶ τῷ πρεσβυτερίῳ ὡς νόμῳ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ.

III

1. Καὶ ὑμῖν δὲ πρέπει μὴ συγχράσθαι τῇ ἡλικίᾳ τοῦ ἐπισκόπου, ἀλλὰ κατὰ δύναμιν θεοῦ πατρὸς πᾶσαν ἐντροπὴν αὐτῷ ἀπονέμεω, καθὼς ἔγνω καὶ τοὺς ἄγιους πρεσβυτέρους οὐ προσειληφώτας τὴν φαινομένην γεωτερικὴν τάξιν, ἀλλὰ ὡς φρονίμους ἐν θεῷ συγχρωσόντας αὐτῷ, οὐκ αὐτῷ δὲ, ἀλλὰ τῷ πατρὶ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, τῷ πάντων ἐπισκόπῳ. 2. εἰς τιμὴν οὖν ἐκείνῳ τοῦ θελήσαντος ἡμᾶς πρέπον ἐστὶν ἐπακούειν κατὰ μηδεμῶν ὑπόκρισιν ἐπεὶ οὐκ ὅτι τὸν ἐπίσκοπον τούτον τὸν βλεπόμενον πλανᾶ τις, ἀλλὰ τὸν ἀόρατον παραλογίζεται. τὸ δὲ τοιούτου οὐ πρὸς σάρκα ὁ λόγος, ἀλλὰ πρὸς θεόν τὸν τὰ κρύφια εἰδότα.

1 Lightfoot reads φρονίμῳ “as to one prudent in God” with Ag.: it certainly gives a better sense, but for that reason may be a correction.
2 ἡμᾶς GL, ὑμᾶς Ag.
IGNATIUS TO THE MAGNESIANS, II. 1–III. 2

II

1. Forasmuch then as I was permitted to see you in the person of Damas, your godly bishop, and the worthy presbyters Bassus and Apollonius, and my fellow servant the deacon Zotion, whose friendship I would enjoy because he is subject to the bishop as to the grace of God, and to the presbytery as to the law of Jesus Christ,—\[1\]

III

1. Now it becomes you not to presume on the youth of the bishop, but to render him all respect according to the power of God the Father, as I have heard that even the holy presbyters have not taken advantage of his outwardly youthful appearance, but yield to him in their godly prudence, yet not to him, but to the Father of Jesus Christ, to the bishop of all. 2. For the honour therefore of him who desired us, it is right that we yield obedience without hypocrisy, for a man does not merely deceive this bishop who is seen, but is dealing wrongly with him who is invisible. And in this matter his reckoning is not with flesh, but with God, who knows the secret things.

\[1\] The sentence is unfinished: possibly the text is corrupt.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

IV

1. Πρέπον οὖν ἔστιν μὴ μόνον καλεῖσθαι Χριστιανοῦς, ἀλλὰ καὶ εἶναι ὀσπερ καὶ τινὲς ἐπισκοποῦν μὲν καλοῦσιν, χωρὶς δὲ αὐτοῦ πάντα πρᾶσσον. οἱ τοιοῦτοι δὲ οὐκ εὗσυνείδητοι μοι εἶναι φαίνονται διὰ τὸ μὴ βεβαιῶς καὶ ἐντολὴν συναθροίζεσθαι.

V

1. Ἔστιν οὖν τέλος τὰ πράγματα ἔχει καὶ πρόκειται τὰ δύο ὅμως, δ' ὁ θάνατος καὶ ἡ ζωή, καὶ ἐκαστος εἰς τὸν ἴδιον τόπον μέλλει χωρεῖν.
2. ὀσπερ γὰρ ἔστιν νομίσματα δύο, δ' μὲν θεοῦ, δ' δὲ κόσμου, καὶ ἐκαστόν αὐτῶν ἴδιον χαρακτήρα ἐπικείμενον ἔχει, οἱ ἀπίστοι τοῦ κόσμου τούτου, οἱ δὲ πιστοὶ ἐν ἀγάπῃ χαρακτήρα θεοῦ πατρὸς διὰ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, δι' οὗ εἶ ὁ εὖ ἀπαθαιρετῶς ἔχομεν τὸ ἀποθεαίνα τις τὸ αὐτοῦ πάθος, τὸ ζῆν αὐτοῦ οὐκ ἔστω ἐν ἡμῖν.

VI

1. Ἐστὶν δὲν εὖ τοῖς προγεγραμμένοις προσώποις τὸ πᾶν πλῆθος θεώρησα ἐν πίστει καὶ ἡγάπησα, παραινῶ, ἐν ὑμοιοί θεοῦ σπουδάζετε πάντα πράσσειν, προκαθήμενον τοῦ ἐπισκόπου εἰς τόπον 1

1 τόπων GLg, τόπων SA, and so also in the next line. Cf. Trall. iii. Lightfoot prefers τόπων, but it seems to be more probably a softening of the rather startling τόπων by the Syriac translator,
IGNATIUS TO THE MAGNESIANS, IV. I–VI. I

IV

1. It is right, then, that we should be really Obedience Christians, and not merely have the name; even as there are some who recognize the bishop in their words, but disregard him in all their actions. Such men seem to me not to act in good faith, since they do not hold valid meetings according to the commandment.

V

1. Seeing then that there is an end to all, that the choice is between two things, death and life, and that each is to go to his own place; 2. for, just as there are two coinages, the one of God, the other of the world, and each has its own stamp impressed on it, so the unbelievers bear the stamp of this world, and the believers the stamp of God the Father in love through Jesus Christ, and unless we willingly choose to die through him in his passion, his life is not in us.

VI

1. Seeing then that I have looked on the whole congregation in faith in the persons mentioned above, and have embraced them, I exhort you:—Be zealous to do all things in harmony with God, with the bishop

1 This is perhaps a reference to Mt. xxii. 19.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

θεοῦ καὶ τῶν πρεσβυτέρων εἰς τόπον συνεδρίου
τῶν ἀποστόλων, καὶ τῶν διακόνων τῶν ἐμοὶ γενο-
kυτάτων πεπιστευμένων διακονίαν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ,
διὸ πρὸς αἰώνων παρὰ πατρὶ ἦν καὶ ἐν τέλει ἐφάνη.
2. πάντες οὖν ὁμοθειάν θεοῦ λαβόντες ἐντρέ-
pes the allήλους καὶ μηδεὶς κατὰ σάρκα βλέπετο
τὸν πλησίον, ἀλλ’ ἐν Ἰησοῦ Χριστῷ ἀλλήλους διὰ
παντὸς ἀγαπᾶτε. μηδὲν ἐστώ ἐν ύμῖν, ὃ δυνη-
σται ύμᾶς μερίσαι ἀλλ’ ἐνώθητε τῷ ἐπισκόπῳ
καὶ τοῖς προκαθημένοις εἰς τύπον καὶ διδαχήν
ἀφθαρσίας.

VII

1. Ὁσπερ οὖν ὁ κύριος ἀνευ τοῦ πατρὸς οὐδὲν
ἐποίησεν, ἡμωμένος οὖν, οὔτε δι’ ἔαυτον οὔτε διὰ
tῶν ἀποστόλων· οὔτως μηδὲ ὑμεῖς ἀνευ τοῦ ἐπι-
skópou καὶ τῶν πρεσβυτέρων μηδὲν πράσσετε;
μηδὲ πειράσητε εὐλογοῦν τι φανεσθαι ἰδίᾳ ύμῖν,
ἀλλ’ ἐπὶ τὸ αὐτὸ μία προσευχή, μία δέησις, εἴς
νοῦς, μία ἐλπὶς ἐν ἀγάπῃ, ἐν τῇ χαρᾷ τῇ ἀμώμῳ,
ὁ ἐστιν Ἰησοῦς Χριστός, οὐ ἁμαρτον οὐδέν ἐστιν.
2. πάντες ὡς εἰς ἑνα ναόν συντρέχετε θεοῦ, ὡς
ἐπὶ ἐν θυσιαστήριον, ἐπὶ ἑνα Ἰησοῦ Χριστόν, τὸν
ἁφ’ ἐνὸς πατρὸς προελθόντα καὶ εἰς ἑνα δύνα καὶ
χωρήσαντα.

208
IGNATIUS TO THE MAGNESIANS, VI. 1–VII. 2

presiding in the place of God and the presbyters in the place of the Council of the Apostles, and the deacons, who are most dear to me, entrusted with the service of Jesus Christ, who was from eternity with the Father and was made manifest at the end of time. 2. Be then all in conformity with God, and respect one another, and let no man regard his neighbour according to the flesh, but in everything love one another in Jesus Christ. Let there be nothing in you which can divide you, but be united with the bishop and with those who preside over you as an example and lesson of immortality.

VII

1. As then the Lord was united to the Father and did nothing without him, neither by himself nor through the Apostles, so do you do nothing without the bishop and the presbyters. Do not attempt to make anything appear right for you by yourselves, but let there be in common one prayer, one supplication, one mind, one hope in love, in the joy which is without fault, that is Jesus Christ, than whom there is nothing better. 2. Hasten all to come together as to one temple of God, as to one altar, to one Jesus Christ, who came forth from the one Father, and is with one, and departed to one.

The sentences seem to be unfinished: the Apostolic Constitutions ii. 26 say "Let the Deacon be honoured as a type of Holy Spirit."
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

VIII

1. Μὴ πλανᾶσθε ταῖς ἑτεροδοξίαις μηδὲ μυθεύμασι τοῖς παλαιοῖς ἀνωφελέσιν οὐσίων. εἰ γὰρ μέχρι νῦν κατὰ Ἰουδαϊσμὸν ζῶμεν, ὄμολογούμεν χάριν μὴ εἰληφέναι. 2. οἱ γὰρ θειοτατοὶ προφῆται κατὰ Χριστὸν Ἰησοῦν ἔζησαν. διὰ τοῦτο καὶ ἔδωκαν διὰ τὴν χάριτον αὐτοῦ, εἰς τὸ πληροφορθῆναι τοὺς ἀπειθοῦντας, διὶ εἰς θεὸν ἐστίν, δοκεῖν τὸν θεὸν διὰ Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν τοῦ νῦν αὐτοῦ, ὃς ἐστὶν αὐτοῦ λόγος ἀπὸ σιγῆς προελθὼν, 1 διὰ κατὰ πάντα εὐπλάσθησαν τῷ πεμψαντὶ αὐτῶν.

IX

1. Εἰ οὖν οἱ ἐν παλαιοῖς πράγμασιν ἀναστραφέντες εἰς καυνότητα ἐλπίδος ἦλθον, μηκετὶ σαββατιζούντες, ἀλλὰ κατὰ κυριακήν ζώντες, ἐν ἦ καὶ ἦ ζωή ἡμῶν ἀνέπτελεν δι᾿ αὐτοῦ καὶ τοῦ θανάτου αὐτοῦ, ὃν τινας 2 ἀρνοῦται, δι᾿ οὗ μυστηρίου ἐλάβομεν τὸ πιστεύειν, καὶ διὰ τοῦτο ὑπομένομεν, ἵνα εὐφρεθῶμεν μαθηταὶ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ τοῦ μόνου διδασκάλου ἡμῶν. 2. πῶς ήμεῖς δυνησόμεθα ζῆσαι χωρὶς αὐτοῦ, οὐ καὶ οἱ προφῆται μαθηταὶ

1 So A and a quotation in Severus. GL read λόγος ἄῤῥασιν ἀπὸ σιγῆς προελθὼν, but this is rightly regarded by recent editors as a doctrinal emendation due to fear of Gnostic theories in which Σιγή and Θεός were the original pair from which Λόγος emanated, cf. Clem. Alex. Ecl. Theol. ii. 9.

2 δὲ τινες L, οἱ τινες G, g paraphrases but has δι not δ, A is ambiguous. There is thus a slight balance in favour of οὐ τινας.

204
IGNATIUS TO THE MAGNESIANS, VIII. 1–IX. 2

VIII

1. Be not led astray by strange doctrines or by old fables which are profitless. For if we are living up to now according to Judaism, we confess that we have not received grace. 2. For the divine prophets lived according to Jesus Christ. Therefore they were also persecuted, being inspired by his grace, to convince the disobedient that there is one God, who manifested himself through Jesus Christ his son, who is his Word proceeding from silence, who in all respects was well-pleasing to him that sent him.

IX

1. If then they who walked in ancient customs came to a new hope, no longer living for the Sabbath, but for the Lord’s Day, on which also our life sprang up through him and his death,—though some deny him,—and by this mystery we received faith, and for this reason also we suffer, that we may be found disciples of Jesus Christ our only teacher; 2. if these things be so, how then shall we be able to live without him of whom even the prophets were disciples in the Spirit and to whom they looked
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

δύτες τῷ πνεύματι ὡς διδάσκαλοι αὐτῶν προσεδόκων; καὶ διὰ τούτο, δυν δικαίως ἀνέμενον, παρῶν ἠγείρεν αὐτοὺς ἐκ νεκρῶν.

Mt. 27, 52

X

1. Μὴ οὖν ἀνασθητῶμεν τῆς χρηστότητος αὐτοῦ. Ἐὰν γὰρ ἡμᾶς μιμῆσται καθὰ πρᾶσσομεν, οὐκέτι ἐσμέν. διὰ τούτο, μαθηταὶ αὐτοῦ γενόμενοι, μάθωμεν κατὰ Χριστιανισμὸν ζῆν. δς γὰρ ἄλλω ὦνόματι καλεῖται πλέον τούτου, οὐκ ἔστιν τοῦ θεοῦ. 2. ὑπέρθεσθε οὖν τὴν κακὴν ξύμην, τὴν παλαιωθείσαν καὶ ἐνοξίσασαν, καὶ μεταβάλεσθε εἰς νέαν ξύμην, ὁ ἐστιν Ἰησοῦς Χριστός. ἀλλισθήτε ἐν αὐτῷ, ἵνα μὴ διαφαρμῇ τις ἐν ύμῖν, ἐπεὶ ἀπὸ τῆς ὀσμῆς ἐλεγχθήσεσθε. 3. ἀτοπὸν ἔστιν, Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν λαλεῖν καὶ ίουδαίζειν. ὁ γὰρ Χριστιανισμὸς οὐκ εἰς Ἰουδαϊσμὸν ἐπίστευεν, ἀλλ’ Ἰουδαϊσμὸς εἰς Χριστιανισμὸν, ὁ οὸς ψάσα γλώσσα πιστεύσασα εἰς θεόν συνήχθη.

I Cor. 5, 7

Isa. 66, 18

1 ὁ S, οὐς GL, eis οὐ g (A).

206
forward as their teacher? And for this reason he whom they waited for in righteousness, when he came raised them from the dead.\(^1\)

X

1. Let us then not be insensible to his goodness, for if he should imitate us in our actions we are lost.\(^2\) For this cause let us be his disciples, and let us learn to lead Christian lives. For whoever is called by any name other than this is not of God. 2. Put aside then the evil leaven, which has grown old and sour, and turn to the new leaven, which is Jesus Christ. Be salted in him, that none among you may be corrupted, since by your savour you shall be tested. 3. It is monstrous to talk of Jesus Christ and to practise Judaism. For Christianity did not base its faith on Judaism, but Judaism on Christianity, and every tongue believing on God was brought together in it.

\(^1\) This is possibly a proleptic reference to final resurrection, but more probably to the belief, found in many documents of a later date, that Jesus by the descent into Hades set free, and took into Paradise, the righteous dead. Cf. especially the Gospel of Nicodemus or Acta Pilati.

\(^2\) The meaning appears to be “if God should treat us according to human standards none of us should see salvation.”
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

XI

1. Ταῦτα δὲ, ἀγαπητοί μου, οὐκ ἐπεὶ ἔγνων τινὰς εἴξ ὑμῶν οὕτως ἐχοντας, ἀλλ’ ὡς μικρότερος ὑμῶν θέλω προφυλάσσεσθαι ὑμᾶς, μὴ ἐμπεσέσθιν εἰς τὰ ἀγκιστρα τῆς κενοδοξίας, ἀλλὰ πεπληροφορήσθαι ἐν τῇ γεννήσει καὶ τῷ πάθει καὶ τῇ ἀναστάσει τῇ γενομένῃ ἐν καιρῷ τῆς ἡγεμονίας Ποντίου Πιλάτου πραχθέντα ἀληθῶς καὶ βεβαιῶς ὑπὸ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, τῆς ἐλπίδος ἡμῶν, ἣς ἐκτραπῆναι μηδενὶ ὑμῶν γένοιτο.

XII

1. Ὕναίμην ὑμῶν κατὰ πάντα, ἐἀντερ ἄξιος ὡς καὶ φάρ καὶ δέδεμαι, πρὸς ἐνα τῶν λελεμένων ὑμῶν οὐκ ἐμί. οἴδα ὅτι οὐ φυσιοῦσθε Ἰησοῦν γὰρ Χριστὸν ἐχέτε ἐν ἑαυτοῖς καὶ μᾶλλον, ὅταν ἑπανεὶ ὑμᾶς, οἴδα, ὅτι ἐντρέπεσθε, ὅς γέγραπται, ὅτι ὁ δίκαιος ἑαυτοῦ κατήγορος.

XIII

1. Σπουδάζετε οὖν βεβαιωθῆναι ἐν τοῖς δόγμασιν τοῦ κυρίου καὶ τῶν ἀποστόλων, ἵνα πάντα, ὡς ποιεῖτε, κατευναοθήτε σαρκὶ καὶ πνεύματι, πίστει καὶ ἀγάπῃ, ἐν νῷ καὶ πατρὶ καὶ ἐν πνεύματι, ἐν ἀρχῇ καὶ ἐν τέλει, μετὰ τοῦ ἀξιοπρεπεστάτου ἑπισκόπου ὑμῶν καὶ ἄξιοπλόκου πνευματικοῦ στεφάνου τοῦ πρεσβυτερίου ὑμῶν καὶ τῶν κατὰ θεὸν διακόνων. 2. ὑποτάγητε τῷ ἑπισκόπῳ καὶ
IGNATIUS TO THE MAGNESIANS, XI. 1–XIII. 2

XI

1. Now I say this, beloved, not because I know that there are any of you that are thus, but because I wish to warn you, though I am less than you, not to fall into the snare of vain doctrine, but to be convinced of the birth and passion and resurrection which took place at the time of the procuratorship of Pontius Pilate; for these things were truly and certainly done by Jesus Christ, our hope, from which God grant that none of you be turned aside.

XII

1. Let me have joy of you in all things, if I be but worthy. For even though I am in bonds I am not to be compared to one of you that have been set free. I know that you are not puffed up; for you have Jesus Christ in yourselves. And I know that when I praise you your modesty increases the more, as it is written, “The righteous man is his own accuser.”

XIII

1. Be diligent therefore to be confirmed in the ordinances of the Lord and the Apostles, in order that “you may prosper in all things whatsoever ye do” in the flesh and in the spirit, in faith and love, in the Son and the Father and the Spirit, at the beginning and at the end, together with your revered bishop and with your presbytery, that aptly woven spiritual crown, and with the godly deacons. 2. Be subject to the bishop and to one another, even
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

ἀλλήλοις, ὡς Ἰησοῦς Χριστός τῷ πατρὶ καὶ οἱ ἀπόστολοι τῷ Χριστῷ καὶ τῷ πατρὶ ἦν ἐνωσις ἡ σαρκικὴ τε καὶ πνευματικὴ.

XIV

1. Εἰδὼς, ὦ θεοί γέμετε, συντόμως παρεκέλευσα ὑμᾶς. μημονεύετε μοι ἐν ταῖς προσευχαῖς ὑμῶν, ἦνα θεόν ἐπιτύχω, καὶ τῆς ἐν Συρίᾳ ἐκκλησίας, ὁθεν οὐκ ἄξιός εἰμι καλεῖσθαι· ἐπιδείκνυμι γὰρ τῆς ἡμομένης ὑμῶν ἐν θεῷ προσευχῆς καὶ ἀγάπης, εἰς τὸ ἄξιωθηναι τῷ ἐν Συρίᾳ ἐκκλησίαν διὰ τῆς ἐκκλησίας ὑμῶν δροσισθῆναι.

XV

1. Ἀσπάζονται ὑμᾶς Ἑφέσιοι ἀπὸ Σμύρνης, οθεν καὶ γράφω ὑμῖν, παρόντες εἰς δόξαν θεοῦ, ὡσπερ καὶ ὑμεῖς οἱ κατὰ πάντα με ἀνέπαυσαν ἀμα Πολυκάρπῳ, ἐπισκόπῳ Σμυρναίῳ. καὶ αἱ λοιπὲς δὲ ἐκκλησίαι ἐν τῷ Ἰησοῦ Χριστῷ ἀσπάζονται ὑμᾶς. ἔρρωσθε ἐν ὁμονοίᾳ θεοῦ, κεκτημένοι ἀδιά-κριτον πνεύμα, ὅστις ἦν Χριστὸς Χριστός.

1 πατρὶ A(g), add κατὰ σάρκα “according to the flesh” GL.
2 πατρὶ A, add καὶ τῷ πνεύματι, “and the spirit” GL.
3 παρεκέλευσα G, παρεκάλεσα g which Lightfoot adopts on the ground that it is a common Ignatian word, while παρε-κελεὐθεῖν is not found elsewhere in the Epistles.
4 Lightfoot reads ἐκτενεῖας “of your fervent supplication” on the authority of A.

210
IGNATIUS TO THE MAGNESIANS, xiii. 2–xv. 1

as Jesus Christ was subject to the Father, and the Apostles were subject to Christ and to the Father, in order that there may be a union both of flesh and of spirit.

XIV

1. I know that you are full of God, and I have exhorted you briefly. Remember me in your prayers, that I may attain to God, and remember the Church in Syria, of which I am not worthy to be called a member. For I need your united prayer in God and your love, that the Church which is in Syria may be granted refreshment from the dew of your Church.

XV

1. The Ephesians greet you from Smyrna, whence also I am writing to you; they, like yourselves, are here for the glory of God and have in all things given me comfort, together with Polycarp the bishop of the Smyrnaeans. And the other Churches also greet you in honour of Jesus Christ. Farewell in godly concord and may you possess an unhesitating spirit, for this is Jesus Christ.

1 The translation “a spirit that knows no division” is possible, and perhaps suits the context here better than “unhesitating,” but the latter rendering seems to be justified by Trallians i, 1. A somewhat different shade of meaning is found in Ignatius, Ephesians iii, 2.
ΤΡΑΔΙΑΝΟΙΩΣ ΙΓΝΑΤΙΟΣ

Ἰγνάτιος, ὁ καὶ Θεοφόρος, ἡγαπημένη θεῷ, πατρὶ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, ἐκκλησίᾳ ἁγίᾳ τῇ οὐσίᾳ ἐν Τράκλαισι τῆς Ἀσίας, ἐκλεκτῇ καὶ ἀξιοθέῳ, εἰρηνευόντῃ ἐν σαρκὶ καὶ πνεύματι τῷ πάθει Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, τῆς ἐλπίδος ἡμῶν ἐν τῇ εἰς αὐτὸν ἀναστάσει ἦν καὶ ἀσπάζομαι ἐν τῷ πληρώματι ἐν ἀποστολικῷ χαρακτηρί καὶ εὐχομαι πλείος χαῖρειν.

I

1. Ἀμωμοῦ διάνοιαν καὶ ἀδιάκριτον ἐν ὑπομονῇ ἔγνων ὑμᾶς ἔχοντας, οὔ κατὰ χρῆσιν ἀλλὰ κατὰ φύσιν, καθὼς ἐδήλωσέν μοι Πολύβιος, ὁ ἐπίσκοπος ὑμῶν, ὃς παρεγένετο θελήματι θεοῦ καὶ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ ἐν Σμύρνῃ καὶ οὕτως μοι συνεχάρη δεδεμένῳ ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ, ὥστε με τὸ πάν πλῆθος ὑμῶν ἐν αὐτῷ θεωρεῖσθαι. 2. ἀποδεξάμενος οὖν τὴν κατὰ θεὸν εὖνοιαν δὴ αὐτοῦ ἐδοξασά, εὑρὼν ὑμᾶς, ὡς ἔγνων, μιμητὰς ὅντας θεοῦ.

II

1. Ὑποτάσσησθε ὡς Ἰησοῦ Χριστῷ, φαίνεσθε μοι οὔ κατὰ ἀνθρωπὸν ζώντες, ἀλλὰ κατὰ Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν τῶν δὲ ἡμῶν

1 θεωρεῖσθαι G, θεωρήσαι g.
IGNATIUS TO THE TRALLIANS. I. 1-11. 1

III.—IGNATIUS TO THE TRALLIANS.

Ignatius, who is also called Theophorus, to the Holy Church which is at Tralles in Asia, beloved of God the Father of Jesus Christ, elect and worthy of God, having peace in the flesh and in the Spirit through the passion of Jesus Christ, who is our hope through our resurrection unto him. Which Church I also greet in the Divine fulness after the apostolic fashion, and I bid her abundant greeting.

I

1. I have learned that you possess a mind free from blame and unhesitating in endurance, not from habit, but by nature, as Polybius your bishop showed me, when he visited me in Smyrna by the will of God and of Jesus Christ, and so greatly rejoiced with me, prisoner for Jesus Christ as I was, that I saw your whole congregation in his person. 2. I received therefore your godly benevolence through him, and gave God glory that I found you, as I had learnt, imitators of God.

II

1. For when you are in subjection to the bishop as to Jesus Christ it is clear to me that you are living not after men, but after Jesus Christ, who died for...
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

ἀποθανόντα, ἵνα πιστεύσαντες εἰς τὸν θάνατον αὐτοῦ τὸ ἀποθανεῖν ἐκφύγητε. 2. ἀναγκαῖον οὖν ἐστὶν, ὡσπερ ποιεῖτε, ἀνευ τοῦ ἐπισκόπου μηδὲν πράσειν ὑμᾶς, ἀλλ’ ὑποτάσσεσθαι καὶ τῷ πρεσβυτερίῳ ὡς τοῖς ἀποστόλοις Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ τῆς ἐλπίδος ἡμῶν, ἐν δὲ διάγοντες εὑρεθησόμεθα. 3. δεῖ δὲ καὶ τοὺς διακόνους ὅταν μυστήριον Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ κατὰ πάντα τρόπον πᾶσιν ἄρεσκειν. οὐ γὰρ βρωμάτων καὶ ποτῶν εἰσὶν διάκονοι, ἀλλ’ ἐκκλησίας θεοῦ ὑπηρέταιν. δέον οὖν αὐτοῖς φυλάσσεσθαι τὰ ἐγκλήματα ὡς πῦρ.

III

1. Ὄμοιός πάντες ἐντρεπέσθωσαν τοὺς διακόνους ὡς Ἰησοῦν Χριστόν, ὡς καὶ τὸν ἐπίσκοπον ὄντα τύπον τοῦ πατρὸς, τοὺς δὲ πρεσβυτέρους ως συνέδριον θεοῦ καὶ ως σύνδεσμον ἀποστόλων. χωρὶς τούτων ἐκκλησία οὐ καλεῖται. 2. περὶ δὲ τὸν πεπεισμαί υμᾶς οὗτος ἔχειν. τὸ γὰρ ἐξεμπλάριον τῆς ἀγάπης υμῶν ἠλαβον καὶ ἔχω μεθ’ ἐαυτοῦ ἐν τῷ ἐπισκόπῳ υμῶν, σουταυτοῦ τὸν κατάστημα μεγάλη μαθητεία, ἡ δὲ πραότης αὐτοῦ δύναμις. δι’ λογίζομαι καὶ τοὺς ἄθεους ἐντρέπεσθαι. 3. ἀγαπῶν υμᾶς φείδομαι, συντονώτερον δυνάμενος γράφειν υπὲρ τοῦτον. οὐκ εἰς τοῦτο ὑήθην, ἵνα δὲ κατάκριτος ὡς ἀπόστολος υμῶν διατάσσωμαι.

1 εὑρεθησόμεθα GL, ἐν αὐτῷ εὑρεθ. Sg.
2 The text is here confused and corrupt in all the authorities. Lightfoot prefers to read οὗτος φείδομαι, and adds [ἀλλ’ οὖς ἵκανδ’ ἐν αὐτοῖς] εἰς τοῦτο κ.τ.λ.
IGNATIUS TO THE TRALLIANS, II. I–III. 3

our sake, that by believing on his death you may escape death. 2. Therefore it is necessary (as is your practice) that you should do nothing without the bishop, but be also in subjection to the presbytery, as to the Apostles of Jesus Christ our hope, for if we live in him we shall be found in him. 3. And they also who are deacons of the mysteries of Jesus Christ must be in every way pleasing to all men. For they are not the ministers of food and drink, but servants of the Church of God; they must therefore guard against blame as against fire.

III

1. Likewise let all respect the deacons as Jesus Christ, even as the bishop is also a type of the Father, and the presbyters as the council of God and the college of Apostles. Without these the name of “Church” is not given. 2. I am confident that you accept this. For I have received the example of your love, and I have it with me in the person of your bishop, whose very demeanour is a great lesson, and whose meekness is a miracle,¹ and I believe that even the godless pay respect to him. 3. I am sparing you in my love, though I might write more sharply on his behalf: I did not think myself competent, as a convict, to give you orders like an Apostle.

¹ Or, possibly, “is his power.”
ΤΗΣ ΑΠΟΣΤΟΛΙΚΗΣ ΜΑΣΤΡΑΤΗΣ

IV

1. Πολλά φρονώ ἐν θεῷ, ἀλλ' ἐμαυτὸν μετρῶ, ἵνα μὴ ἐν καυχήσει ἀπόλωμαι. νῦν γάρ με δεῖ πλέον φοβεῖσθαι καὶ μὴ προσέχειν τοῖς φυσιούσιν με. οἱ γὰρ λέγουσί μοι μαστιγούσιν με. 2. ἀγαπῶ μὲν γὰρ τὸ παθεῖν, ἀλλ' οὐκ οἶδα, εἰ ἀξίος εἰμὶ. τὸ γὰρ ξῆλος πολλοῖς μὲν οὐ φαίνεται, ἐμὲ δὲ πλέον πολεμεῖ. χρήζω οὖν πραότητος, ἐν ᾗ καταλύεται ὁ ἁρχων τοῦ αἰῶνος τοῦτον.

V

1. Μή οὐ δύναμαι ύμίν τὰ ἔποιράνια γράψαι; ἀλλὰ φοβοῦμαι, μή νηπίως οὕσιν ύμίν βλάβην παραθῶ καὶ συγγνωμονεῖτέ μοι, μῆποτε οὐ δυνηθέντες χωρίσαι στραγγαλωθῆτε. 2. καὶ γὰρ ἑγώ, οὐ καθότι δέδεμαι καὶ δύναμαι νοεῖν τὰ ἔποιράνια καὶ τᾶς τοποθεσίας· τὰς ἀγγελικὰς καὶ τὰς συστάσεις τὰς ἀρχοντικὰς, ὄρατά τε καὶ ἀόρατα, παρὰ τούτο ἡδη καὶ μαθητής εἰμὶ. πολλά γὰρ ἡμῖν λείπει, ἵνα θεοῦ μὴ λειτύμεθα.

VI

1. Παρακαλῶ οὖν ύμᾶς, οὐκ ἑγώ, ἀλλ' ἡ ἀγάπη Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ· μόνῃ τῇ χριστιανῇ τροφῇ χρῆσθε, ἀλλοτρίαις δὲ βοτάνης ἀπέχεσθε, ἥτις ἔστιν
IGNATIUS TO THE TRALLIANS, IV. I–VI.  2

IV

1. I have many thoughts in God, but I take the measure of myself that I perish not through boasting, for at present it is far better for me to be timid, and not to give heed to them who puff me up. For they who speak thus are a scourge to me. 2. For I desire to suffer, but I know not if I am worthy, for the jealousy of the devil is to many not obvious, but against me it fights the more. I have need therefore of meekness, by which the prince of this world is brought to nothing.

V

1. Am I not able to write to you heavenly things? Yes, but I am afraid that I should do you harm "seeing you are babes." Pardon me, for I refrain lest you be choked by what you cannot receive. 2. For I myself, though I am in bonds and can understand heavenly things, and the places of the angels and the gatherings of principalities, and "things seen and unseen," not for this am I a disciple even now, for much is lacking to us, that we may not lack God.

VI

1. I beseech you therefore (yet not I but the love of Jesus Christ) live only on Christian fare, and refrain from strange food, which is heresy. 2. For

1 This is probably the meaning: an alternative translation would be: "Ambition is not obvious, etc." But cf. the letter to the Romans v. 3.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

αἵρεσις. 2. οὗ ἐαυτοῖς ἑπεμπλέκοντων Ἰησοῦν Χριστόν καταξιοπιστεύμενοι, ὡσπερ θανάσιμων φάρμακον διδόντες μετὰ οἰνομέλιτος, οπερ ὁ ἄγνωστος ἠδέως λαμβάνει ἐν ἡδονῇ κακῇ ὁ ἀποθανεῖν.

VII

1. Φυλάττεσθε οὖν τοὺς τοιούτους. τούτο δὲ ἐστιν ὡμίν μὴ φυσιομνέους καὶ οὐσιν ἄχωρίστους θεοῦ Ἰησοῦν Χριστόν καὶ τοῦ ἐπισκόπου καὶ τῶν διαταγμάτων τῶν ἀποστόλων. 2. ὁ ἐντὸς θυσιαστηρίου ὑπὸ καθαρός ἐστιν ὁ δὲ ἐκτὸς θυσιαστηρίου ὑπὸ οὗ καθαρός ἐστιν. τούτῳ ἐστιν, τὸ χωρίς ἐπισκόπου καὶ πρεσβυτερίου καὶ διακόνων πράσσον τι, οὗτος οὐ καθαρός ἐστιν τῇ συνειδήσει.

VIII

1. Οὐκ ἔτει ἐγνών τοιούτων τι ἐν ὑμῖν, ἀλλὰ προφυλάσσω ὑμᾶς ὡντας μοῦ ἁγαπητοὺς, προορῶν τὰς ἐνέδρας τοῦ διαβόλου. ὑμεῖς οὖν τὴν πραυπάθειαν ἀναλαβόντες ἀνακτήσασθε ἐαυτοῖς ἐν πίστει ὁ ἐστὶν σὰρξ τοῦ κυρίου, καὶ ἐν ἁγάπῃ, ὁ ἐστὶν ἁλμα Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ. 2. μηδεὶς ὑμῶν κατὰ τοῦ

1 of ἐαυτοίς παρεμπλέκουσιν seems to be the text implied by the translations of SA, but G(L) read οἱ καποὶ παρεμπλέκουσιν and g has καὶ τὸν ἵδι προσπλέκοντες. The text is clearly corrupt, and Lightfoot suggests καὶ ἐν παρεμπλέκουσιν κ τ. τ. λ. "for they even mingle poison with Jesus Christ."

2 κακῇ L, om. SA, κακεὶ τὸ ἀποθανεῖν "and therein is death" G.

3 The text is doubtful. A omits θεοῦ: probably there is some corruption though it is impossible to be sure what it is.

218
IGNATIUS TO THE TRALLIANS, VI. 2–VIII. 2

these men mingle Jesus Christ with themselves in specious honesty, mixing as it were a deadly poison with honeyed wine, which the ignorant takes gladly in his baneful pleasure, and it is his death.

VII

1. Beware therefore of such men; and this will be possible for you, if you are not puffed up, and are inseparable from God, from Jesus Christ and from the bishop and the ordinances of the Apostles.
2. He who is within the sanctuary is pure, but he who is without the sanctuary is not pure; that is to say whoever does anything apart from the bishop and the presbytery and the deacons is not pure in his conscience.

VIII

I. It is not that I know that there is anything of this kind among you, but I warn you because you are dear to me, and I foresee the snares of the devil. Therefore adopt meekness and be renewed in faith, which is the flesh of the Lord, and in love, which is the blood of Jesus Christ. 2. Let none of you have a

1 Or possibly "from our God Jesus Christ."
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

πλησίου ἐχέτω. μη ἄφορμὰς δίδοτε τοῖς ἐθνεσιν, ἢν μὴ δι’ ὀλίγους ἄφορνας τὸ ἐν θεῷ πλήθος βλασφημήται. Οὐαὶ γὰρ, δι’ οὐ ἐπὶ ματαιώτητι τὸ ὄνομα μου ἐπὶ τινῶν βλασφημεῖται.

IX

1. Κωφώθητε οὖν, ὅταν ὑμῖν χωρίς Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ λαλῇ τις, τοῦ ἐκ γένους Δανείδ, τοῦ ἐκ Μαρίας, δς ἀληθῶς ἐγεννήθη, ἐφαγέν τε καὶ ἐπιευ, ἀληθῶς ἐδιώχθη ἐπὶ Ποντίου Πιλᾶτον, ἀληθῶς ἐσταυρώθη καὶ ἀπέθανεν, βλεπόντων τῶν ἐποπανίων καὶ ἐπιγείων καὶ ὑποχθοιῶν.

2. δς καὶ ἀληθῶς ἠγέρθη ἀπὸ νεκρῶν, ἐγείραντος αὐτὸν τοῦ πατρὸς αὐτοῦ, κατὰ τὸ ὄμοιον δς καὶ ἡμᾶς τοὺς πιστεύοντας αὐτῷ οὕτως ἐγερεῖ ό πατὴρ αὐτοῦ ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ, οὕτως τὸ ἀληθινὸν ζῆν οὐκ ἔχομεν.

X

1. Εἰ δὲ, ὃσπερ τινὲς ἄθεοι οὖντες, τουτέστιν ἀπιστοῖ, λέγουσιν, τὸ δοκεῖν πεπονθέναι αὐτὸν, αὐτὸί οὖν τὸ δοκεῖν, ἐγὼ τι δέδεμαι, τι δὲ καὶ εὔχομαι θηριομαχήσαι; δωρεὰν οὐν ἀποθνῄσκω. ἀρα οὖν καταψεύδομαι τοῦ κυρίου.

1 κατὰ τὸ ὄμοιον δς καὶ G, qui et secundum similitudinem L. SA perhaps imply ὡς καὶ κατὰ τὸ ὄμοιον.
IGNATIUS TO THE TRALLIANS, viii. 2–x. 1

grudge against his neighbour. Give no occasion to the heathen, in order that the congregation of God may not be blasphemed for a few foolish persons. For "Woe unto him through whom my name is vainly blasphemed among any."

IX

1. Be deaf therefore when anyone speaks to you apart from Jesus Christ, who was of the family of David, and of Mary, who was truly born, both ate and drank, was truly persecuted under Pontius Pilate, was truly crucified and died in the sight of those in heaven and on earth and under the earth; 2. who also was truly raised from the dead, when his Father raised him up, as in the same manner his Father shall raise up in Christ Jesus us who believe in him, without whom we have no true life.

X

1. But if, as some affirm who are without God, —that is, are unbelievers—his suffering was only a semblance (but it is they who are merely a semblance), why am I a prisoner, and why do I even long to fight with the beasts? In that case I am dying in vain. Then indeed am I lying concerning the Lord.
XI

1. Φεύγετε οὖν τὰς κακὰς παραφυάδας τὰς γεννώσας καρπὸν θανατηφόρον, οὐ ἔαν γεύσηται τις, παρ’ αὐτὰ ἀποθνήσκει. οὐτοὶ γὰρ οὐκ εἰσὶν φυτεία πατρός. 2. εἰ γὰρ ἦσαν, ἐφαίνοντο ἀν κλάδοι τοῦ σταυροῦ, καὶ ἂν ἂν ὁ καρπὸς αὐτῶν ἀφθαρτος· δι’ οὗ ἐν τῷ πάθει αὐτοῦ προσκαλεῖται υμᾶς δυναμενέλη αὐτοῦ. οὐ δύναται οὖν κεφαλῆ χωρὶς γεννηθήναι ἄνευ μελῶν, τοῦ θεοῦ ἐνωσιν ἐπαγγελλομένου, δ’ ἐστιν αὐτός.

XII

1. Ἄσπαξομαι υμᾶς ἀπὸ Σμύρνης ἀμα τὰς συμπαρουσίας μοι ἐκκλησίας τοῦ θεοῦ, οὐ κατὰ πάντα με ἀνέπαυσαν σαρκὶ τε καὶ πνεύματι. 2. παρακαλεῖ υμᾶς τὰ δεσμά μου, δέ ἐνεκεν Ἰησοῦ χριστοῦ περιφέρω, αἰτούμενος θεοῦ ἐπιτυχείν· διαμένετε ἐν τῇ ὁμονοίᾳ υμῶν καὶ τῇ μετ’ ἀλλήλων προσευχῇ. πρέπει γὰρ υμῖν τοῖς καθ’ ἐνα, ἐξαιρέτως καὶ τοῖς πρεσβυτέρως, ἀναψυχεῖν τὸν ἐπίσκοπον εἰς τιμὴν πατρός, Ἰησοῦ χριστοῦ καὶ τῶν ἀποστόλων. 3. εὐχόμαι υμᾶς ἐν ἀγάπῃ ἀκούσαι μου, ἵνα μὴ εἰς μαρτύριον ὦ ἐν υἱῶν γράψαι. καὶ περὶ ἐμοῦ δὲ προσευχεσθε, τῆς ἀφ’ υμῶν ἀγάπης χρηζοντος ἐν τῷ ἐλείς τοῦ θεοῦ, εἰς τὸ καταξιωθῆναι με τοῦ κλῆρου, οὗ περίκειμαι ἐπιτυχεῖν, ἵνα μὴ ἀδόκιμος εὑρεθῶ.

1 Lightfoot thinks περίκειμαι impossible and accepts Bunsen's emendation οὕτε πρόκειμαι.
IGNATIUS TO THE TRALLIANS, xi. 1–xii. 3

XI

1. Fly from these wicked offshoots, which bear deadly fruit, which if a man eat he presently dies. For these are not the planting of the Father. 2. For if they were they would appear as branches of the Cross (and their fruit would be incorruptible) by which through his Passion he calls you who are his members. The head therefore cannot be borne without limbs, since God promises union, that is himself.

XII

1. I greet you from Smyrna together with the Churches of God that are present with me, men who in all things have given me rest in the flesh and in the spirit. 2. My bonds exhort you, which I carry about for the sake of Jesus Christ, praying that I may attain to God; continue in your present harmony and in prayer with one another. For it is right that each of you, and especially the presbyters, should refresh the bishop, to the honour of the Father, of Jesus Christ, and of the Apostles. 3. I entreat you to listen to me in love, that I become not by my writing a witness against you. And pray for me also, for I have need of your love in the mercy of God, that I may be granted the lot which I am set to obtain, that I be not found reprobate.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

XIII

1. Ἀσταξέται ὑμᾶς ἡ ἁγάπη Σμυρναίων καὶ Ἐφεσίων. μημονεύετε ἐν ταῖς προσευχαῖς ὑμῶν τῆς ἐν Συρίᾳ ἐκκλησίας, δόθην καὶ οὐκ ἄξιός εἰμι λέγεσθαι, δῶν ἐσχατος ἐκείνων. 2. ἔρρωσθε ἐν Ἰησοῦ Χριστῷ, ὑποτασσόμενοι τῷ ἐπισκόπῳ ὡς τῇ ἐντολῇ, ὁμοίως καὶ τῷ πρεσβυτερίῳ. καὶ οἱ κατ' ἄνδρα ἀλλήλους ἀγαπάτε ἐν ἀμερίστῳ καρδίᾳ.
3. ἀγνίζεται ὑμῶν τὸ ἐμὸν πνεῦμα οὐ μόνον νῦν, ἀλλὰ καὶ ὅταν θεοῦ ἐπιτυχώ. ἔτι γὰρ ὑπὸ κίν- δυνον εἰμὶ ἀλλὰ πιστῶς ὁ πατήρ ἐν Ἰησοῦ Χριστῷ πληρώσας μοι τὴν αἰτήσιν καὶ ὑμῶν, ἐν ὃ εὑρε- θείητε ἑνμοι.

ΡΩΜΑΙΟΙΣ ἩΓΝΑΙΟΙΣ

Ἰγνάτιος, ὁ καὶ Θεοφόρος, τῇ ἡλεμένῃ ἐν μεγαλείνητῃ πατρὸς υψίστου καὶ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ τοῦ μόνου νῦν αὐτοῦ ἐκκλησία ἡγαπημένη καὶ περιῳκεμένη ἐν θελήματι τοῦ θελήσαντος τὰ πάντα, ἄ ἔστιν, κατὰ ἁγάπην Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, τοῦ θεοῦ ἡμῶν, ἢτις καὶ προκάθηται ἐν τόπῳ χωρίον Ῥωμαιών, ἄξιόθεος, ἄξιοπροπής, ἄξιομακά- ριστος, ἄξιεπαίνος, ἄξιεπιτευκτος, ἄξιαγ- νος καὶ προκαθημένη τῆς ἁγάπης, χριστό- νυμος, πατρώνυμος, ἦν καὶ ἀσπάζομαι ἐν

1 The Armenian and g read εὑρεθείημεν “may we be found.”
2 ALS read χριστόνυμος “having the law of Christ.”

224
IGNATIUS TO THE ROMANS

XII

1. The love of the Smyrnaeans and Ephesians greet you: remember in your prayers the Church in Syria, in which I am not worthy to be reckoned, being the least of its members. 2. Farewell in Jesus Christ. Submit yourselves to the bishop as to the commandment, and likewise to the presbytery. Let each of you individually love one another with an undivided heart. 3. My spirit is consecrated to you not only now, but also when I attain to God. For I am still in peril, but the Father is faithful in Jesus Christ to fulfil both your and my prayer, in which may you be found blameless.

IV.—IGNATIUS TO THE ROMANS.

Ignatius, who is also called Theophorus, to her who has obtained mercy in the greatness of the Most High Father, and of Jesus Christ his only Son; to the Church beloved and enlightened by the will of him who has willed all things which are, according to the love of Jesus Christ, our God, which also has the presidency in the country of the land of the Romans, worthy of God, worthy of honour, worthy of blessing, worthy of praise, worthy of success, worthy in its holiness, and pre-eminent in love, named after Christ, named after the Father, which also I greet in the name of
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

δυόματι Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, νίκου πατρὸς κατὰ σάρκα καὶ πνεῦμα ἡνωμένου πάση ἐντολῇ αὐτοῦ, πεπληρωμένους χάριτος θεοῦ ἀδιακρίτως καὶ ἀποδυναμούμενους ἀπὸ παντὸς ἀλ- λοτρίου χρόματος πλείστα ἐν Ἰησοῦ Χριστῷ, τῷ θεῷ ἡμῶν, ἀμώμως χαίρειν.

I

1. Ἐπεις εὐξάμενος θεῷ ἐπέτυχον ἰδεῖν ὑμῶν τὰ ἀξιόθεα πρόσωπα, ως καὶ πλέον ἡτούμην λαβεῖν. δεδεμένως γὰρ ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ ἐλπίζω ὑμᾶς ἀσπάσασθαι, εάνπερ θέλημα ἐτοῦ ἀξιωθῆναι μὲ εἰς τέλος εἶναι. 2. ἢ μὲν γὰρ ἄρχῃ εὐνοικονομητός ἔστιν, εάνπερ χάριτος 1 ἑπιτύχως εἰς τὸ τῶν κληρῶν μου ἀνεμποδίστως ἀπολαβεῖν. φοβοῦμαι γὰρ τὴν ὑμῶν ἀγάπην, μὴ αὐτῇ μὲ ἀδικήσῃ. ὑμῖν γὰρ εὐχερὲς ἔστιν, ὁ θέλετε, ποιῆσαι ἐμοὶ δὲ δύσκολον ἔστιν τοῦ θεοῦ ἑπιτυχεῖν, εάνπερ ὑμεῖς μὴ φει- σησθεῖ μου.

II

I Thess. 2, 4 1. Οὐ γὰρ θέλω ὑμᾶς ἀνθρωπαρεσκῆσαι, ἀλλὰ θεῷ ἀρέσαι, ὡσπερ καὶ ἀρέσκετε. οὔτε γὰρ ἕγω ποτε ἐξω καιρὸν τοιοῦτον θεοῦ ἑπιτυχεῖν, οὔτε ὑμεῖς, ἕταν σιωπήσατε, κρείττου ἐγρώ ἐχετε ἑπιγραφῆσαι. ἕταν γὰρ σιωπήσατε ἀπ’ ἕμου, ἕγω λόγος θεοῦ· ἕταν δὲ ἐρασθῆτε τῆς σαρκός μου,

1 A, with partial support in other authorities, reads πέρατος "may reach the goal."

226
IGNATIUS TO THE ROMANS, I. I-II. 1

Jesus Christ, the Son of the Father; to those who are united in flesh and spirit in every one of his commandments, filled with the grace of God without wavering, and filtered clear from every foreign stain, abundant greeting in Jesus Christ, our God, in blamelessness.

I

1. Forasmuch as I have gained my prayer to God to see your godly faces, so that I have obtained more than I asked,—for in bondage in Christ Jesus I hope to greet you if it be his will that I be found worthy to the end. 2. For the beginning has been well ordered, if I may obtain grace to come unhindered to my lot. For I am afraid of your love, lest even that do me wrong. For it is easy for you to do what you will, but it is difficult for me to attain to God, if you do not spare me.

II

1. For I would not have you “men-pleasers” but “God-pleasers,” even as you do indeed please him. For neither shall I ever have such an opportunity of attaining to God, nor can you, if you be but silent, have any better deed ascribed to you. For if you are silent concerning me, I am a word of God; but if
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

πάλιν ἔσομαι φωνή. 2. πλέον μοι μὴ παρά-
σχησθε τοῦ σπουδισθήναι θεῷ, ὡς ἐτι θυσιαστή-
ριον ἑτοιμὸν ἔστιν, ἵνα ἐν ἀγάπῃ χορὸς γενόμενοι
ἀσητε τῷ πατρὶ ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ, ὅτι τὸν ἐπί-
σκοπον Συρίας ὁ θεὸς κατηξίωσεν εὐρεθήναι εἰς
dύσιν ἀπὸ ἀνατολῆς μεταπεμψάμενος. καλὸν τὸ
dύνατα ἀπὸ κόσμου πρὸς θεὸν, ἵνα εἰς αὐτὸν ἀνα-
teίλω.

III

1. Οὐδέποτε ἐβασκάνατε οὐδενί, ἄλλους ἐδιδά-
ξατε. ἔγω δὲ θέλω, ἵνα κἀκεῖνα βέβαια ἢ ἃ
μαθητεύσατε ἐντέλλεσθε. 2. μόνον μοι δύναμιν
αιτεῖσθε ἐσώθεν τε καὶ ἔξωθεν, ὥσα μὴ μόνον
λέγω ἄλλα καὶ θέλω, ἵνα μὴ μόνον λέγωμεν
Χριστιανὸς ἄλλα καὶ εὐρεθῶ. ἦν γὰρ εὐρεθῶ,
καὶ λέγεσθαι δύναμαι, καὶ τότε πιστὸς εἶναι, ὅταν
κόσμῳ μὴ φαίνωμαι. 3. οὐδὲν φαινόμενον καλὸν·
ὁ γὰρ θεὸς ἤμῶν Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς ἐν πατρὶ ἀν
μᾶλλον φαίνεται. οὐ πεισμοῦ ὑπὸ ἔργον, ἄλλα
μεγέθους ἐστὶν ὁ Χριστιανισμός, ὅταν μισήται
ὑπὸ κόσμου.
IGNATIUS TO THE ROMANS, II. i–iii. 3

you love my flesh, I shall again be only a cry. 2. Grant me nothing more than that I be poured out to God, while an altar is still ready, that forming yourselves into a chorus¹ of love, you may sing to the Father in Christ Jesus, that God has vouchsafed that the bishop of Syria shall be found at the setting of the sun, having fetched him from the sun's rising. It is good to set to the world towards God, that I may rise to him.

III

1. You never have envied anyone, you taught others. But I desire that those things may stand fast which you enjoin in your instructions. 2. Only pray for me for strength, both inward and outward, that I may not merely speak, but also have the will, that I may not only be called a Christian, but may also be found to be one. For if I be found to be one, I can also be called one, and then be deemed faithful when I no longer am visible in the world. 3. Nothing visible is good, for our God, Jesus Christ, being now in the Father, is the more plainly visible.² Christianity is not the work of persuasiveness, but of greatness, when it is hated by the world.

² The sentence is clumsily expressed: apparently Ignatius means "nothing directly visible is good, and Jesus Christ, who is no longer visible, being in the Father, is more clearly perceived by the eye of faith," but he has sacrificed clearness to a paradoxical playing with the words.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

IV

1. Ἕγω γράφω πάσαις ταῖς ἐκκλησίαις, καὶ ἔντελλομαι πᾶσιν, ὅτι ἐγὼ ἐκών ὑπὲρ θεοῦ ἀποθυνήσας, ἐάνπερ ύμεῖς μὴ κωλύσητε. παρακαλῶ ύμᾶς, μὴ εὕνοια ἀκαίρος γένησθέ μοι. ἀφετέ με θηρίων εἶναι βορὰν, δι’ ὅν ἔνεστιν θεοῦ ἐπιτυχεῖν. σίτος εἰμὶ θεοῦ καὶ δι’ ὄντων θηρίων ἄλθομαι, ἵνα καθαρὸς ἄρτος εὑρεθῶ τοῦ Χριστοῦ. 1 2. μᾶλλον κολακεύσατε τὰ θηρία, ἵνα μοι τάφος γένωνται καὶ μηθὲν καταλύσωσι τῶν τοῦ σώματός μου, ἵνα μὴ κοιμηθεῖς βαρύς τινι γένωμαι. τότε ἔσομαι μαθητής ἀληθῶς Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, ὅτε ούδε τὸ σῶμά μου ὁ κόσμος ὄψεται. λυτανεύσατε τὸν Χριστὸν 2 ὑπὲρ ἔμοι, ἵνα διὰ τῶν ὄργανων τούτων θυσία 3 εὑρεθῶ. 3. οὐχ ὡς Πέτρος καὶ Παῦλος διατάσσομαι ύμῖν. ἔκεινοι ἀπόστολοι, ἐγὼ κατάκριτος· ἔκεινοι ἐλεύθεροι, ἐγὼ δὲ μέχρι νῦν δοῦλος. ἀλλ’ ἐὰν πάθος, ἀπελεύθερος γενήσομαι Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ καὶ ἀναστήσομαι εὖ αὐτῷ ἐλεύθερος. νῦν μανθάνω δεδεμένος μηδὲν ἐπιθυμεῖν.

V

1. Ἀπὸ Συρίας μέχρι Ῥώμης θηριομαχῶ, διὰ γῆς καὶ θαλάσσης, νυκτὸς καὶ ἡμέρας, δεδεμένος

1 τοῦ Χριστοῦ GL, θεοῦ Sg Iren.lat., om. Iren.gr. Hieron.
2 τὸν Χριστὸν GL, τὸν Κύριον SA.
3 θεοὺ (θεοῦ) θυσία LSA.
IGNATIUS TO THE ROMANS, iv. 1–v. 1

IV

1. I am writing to all the Churches, and I give injunctions to all men, that I am dying willingly for God’s sake, if you do not hinder it. I beseech you, be not “an unseasonable kindness”\(^\text{1}\) to me. Suffer me to be eaten by the beasts, through whom I can attain to God. I am God’s wheat, and I am ground by the teeth of wild beasts that I may be found pure bread of Christ. 2. Rather entice the wild beasts that they may become my tomb, and leave no trace of my body, that when I fall asleep I be not burdensome to any. Then shall I be truly a disciple of Jesus Christ, when the world shall not even see my body. Beseech Christ on my behalf, that I may be found a sacrifice through these instruments.\(^\text{2}\)

3. I do not order you as did Peter and Paul; they were Apostles, I am a convict; they were free, I am even until now a slave. But if I suffer I shall be Jesus Christ’s freedman, and in him I shall rise free. Now I am learning in my bonds to give up all desires.

V

1. From Syria to Rome I am fighting with wild beasts, by land and sea, by night and day, bound to

\(^{1}\) Apparently a partial quotation from the proverb preserved by Zenobius ἀκαρπός εἶνοι οὐδὲν ἐξηθας διαφέρει “an unseasonable kindness is nothing different from hostility.”

\(^{2}\) I.e. the wild beasts.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

déka leopárdóis, ó Ístoi ston stratowtikón tágmà; Íi kai eüergetoümenoi xíleous gínontai. Ën dé tois ádikísmasun áutów mállov mabheteúomai, állo ou parà toúto dèdikaiósmai. 2. Ínaímen tóns òhriwv tón Ímow iðtoimasménon kai eúxhóimai sýntomá mói eüreòntai: Ë kai kolakeúsw, súntomós me kata-

Cor. 4, 4

faygeín, oux Ísper tinnw deilainómena oux Ífýánto. kán autà dé Íkounta 1 mú Íhleísh, Ëgów prósxbí-

saísmoi. 3. súngynwimên mou Íxete tî múi sýmferei, Íge Ímínwsko, nów Írkhóimai máthtís eínai. múbèn me Íxilówai tóns Írátów kai Íarátów, Ína Ínsoú Íchristov Ípipítichw. Ípr kai stauroú òhriwv te

Cor. 9, 15

sústásieis, ánatómamai, diayréseis, skórfwswi moí oðstéw, súngkpti meidwv, álleswmo Ílou tòu sò-

1 Íkounta G Íuseb, Íkounta Lg, (om. SA ?). Lightfoot prefers Íkounta Ï willing,” which must be an accusative referring to Ignatiuvs.

matoí, kakaí koláseis toû Ídavbólon Íp' émè Írkh-

síwswan, múnon Ína Ínsoú Íchristov Ípipítichw.

síwswan.

VI

Cor. 9, 15

1. Íoudén múi Íphleíssei tâ pérate tòu kósrmov

oude ai basileíai tòu aíwono toûton. kalów múi

apothawów eis Íchristov Ínsoû, Í basileúwov tòn

peratóv tês Íhês. Íkeínov Ízetò, tòn Ípèr Ímów

apothawwota: Íkeínov Íthelw, tòn Íd' Íhmas ãnastánta.

ó dé toketó múi Ípíkeítaí. 2. súngynwte múi,

232
IGNATIUS TO THE ROMANS, v. i–vi. 2

ten "leopards" (that is, a company of soldiers), and they become worse for kind treatment. Now I become the more a disciple for their ill deeds, "but not by this am I justified." 2. I long for the beasts that are prepared for me; and I pray that they may be found prompt for me; I will even entice them to devour me promptly; not as has happened to some whom they have not touched from fear; even if they be unwilling of themselves, I will force them to it. 3. Grant me this favour. I know what is expedient for me; now I am beginning to be a disciple. May nothing of things seen or unseen envy me my attaining to Jesus Christ. Let there come on me fire, and cross, and struggles with wild beasts, cutting, and tearing asunder, rackings of bones, mangling of limbs, crushing of my whole body, cruel tortures of the devil, may I but attain to Jesus Christ!

VI

1. The ends of the earth and the kingdoms of this world shall profit me nothing. It is better for me to die in Christ Jesus than to be king over the ends of the earth. I seek Him who died for our sake. I desire Him who rose for us. The pains of birth are upon me. 2. Suffer me, my brethren; hinder me

1 The first impression made by this passage is that "leopards" was the name of some regiment, and that the following words are an explanatory gloss; but there is no evidence for this use of "leopard." Ῥαγὺς is perhaps the equivalent of "manipulus" in the later sense of "ten men." The whole passage is rendered stranger still by the fact that it is the first instance of the word "leopard" in Greek or Latin literature.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

ἀδελφοί· μὴ ἐμπτωτισθέτε μοι ζησαι, μὴ θελήσητε μὲ ἀποθανεῖν· τὸν τοῦ θεοῦ θέλοντα εἶναι κόσμῳ μὴ χαρίσησθε, μηδὲ ὕλη ἐξαπατήσῃ· ἀφετέ με καθαρὸν φῶς λαβεῖν· ἐκεῖ παραγενόμενος ἀνθρώπος ἐσομαι. 3. ἐπιτρέψατε μοι μιμητὴν εἶναι τοῦ πάθους τοῦ θεοῦ μου· εἰ τις αὐτὸν ἐν ἑαυτῷ ἔχει, νοησάτω ὦ θέλω, καὶ συμπαθείτω μοι εἰδὼς τὰ συνέχοντά με.

VII

1. ὁ ἄρχων τοῦ αἰώνος τούτου διαρπάζαι μὲ βουλεῖται καὶ τὴν εἰς θεοῦ μου γνώμην διαφθείραι. μηδὲς οὐν τῶν παρόντων ὑμῶν βοηθεῖτο αὐτῷ· μᾶλλον ἐμοῦ γίνεσθε, τούτῳ τῷ θεῷ. μὴ λαλεῖτε Ἰησοῦν Χριστόν, κόσμον δὲ ἐπιθυμεῖτε.

2. βασκανία ἐν υἱίν μὴ κατοικεῖτω. μηδὲ ἄν ἐγὼ παρὼν παρακαλῶ υἱίας, πείσθητε μοι· τούτοις δὲ μᾶλλον πείσθητε, ὅσ γράφω υἱίν. ἥν γὰρ γράφω υἱίν, ἐρῶν τοῦ ἀποθανεῖν. ὁ ἐμὸς ἔρως ἐστάυρωσεν, καὶ οὐκ ἔστιν ἐν ἐμοὶ πῦρ φιλοῦλον· ὕδαρ δὲ ἥν καὶ λαλοῦν ² ἐν ἐμοί, ἐσωθὲν μοι λέγων· Δεῦρο πρὸς τὸν πατέρα. 3. οὐχ ἦδομαι τροφῆ φθορᾶς οὐδὲ ἦδοναῖς τοῦ βίου τούτου. ἄρτον θεοῦ θέλω, ὦ ἐστιν σάρξ Ἰησοῦ ³ Χριστοῦ, τοῦ ἐκ σπέρματος Δανείδ, καὶ πόμα θέλω τὸ αἷμα αὐτοῦ, ὦ ἐστιν ἀγάπη ἀφθαρτος.

¹ μηδὲ δλη ἐξαπατήσῃ· is omitted in Gg; Lightfoot thinks that LSA imply κολακεύσῃ rather than ἐξαπατήσῃ.
² The text is much expanded in the later authorities: Lightfoot is inclined to emend καὶ λαλοῦν to ἀλλόμενον, which is found in g, as a reference to Joh. 4, 14.
³ Ἰησοῦ GLA, om. Ζg.

234
IGNATIUS TO THE ROMANS, vi. 2–vii. 3

not from living, do not wish me to die. Do not give to the world one who desires to belong to God, nor deceive him with material things. Suffer me to receive the pure light; when I have come thither I shall become a man. 3. Suffer me to follow the example of the Passion of my God. If any man have him within himself, let him understand what I wish, and let him sympathise with me, knowing the things which constrain me.

VII

1. The Prince of this world wishes to tear me in pieces, and to corrupt my mind towards God. Let none of you who are present help him. Be rather on my side, that is on God's. Do not speak of Jesus Christ, and yet desire the world. 2. Let no envy dwell among you. Even though when I come I beseech you myself, do not be persuaded by me, but rather obey this, which I write to you: for in the midst of life I write to you desiring death. My lust has been crucified, and there is in me no fire of love for material things; but only water living and speaking in me, and saying to me from within, "Come to the Father." 3. I have no pleasure in the food of corruption or in the delights of this life. I desire the "bread of God," which is the flesh of Jesus Christ, who was "of the seed of David," and for drink I desire his blood, which is incorruptible love.¹

¹ There is here perhaps a play on the words: the word translated "love" was also used either as a synonym for the Eucharist, or, as some think, as the name of a religious meal originally connected with the Eucharist.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

VIII

1. Οὐκέτι θέλω κατὰ ἀνθρώπους ζῆν. τούτο δὲ ἔσται, ἐὰν ὤμεις θελήσητε. θελήσατε, ἵνα καὶ ὤμεις θελήσητε. 2. δι’ ὀλίγων γραμμάτων αἴτοι· μαί ὤμᾶς πιστεύσατε μοι. Ἰησοῦς δὲ Χριστὸς ὤμῶν ταῦτα φανερώσει, ὁτι ἀληθῶς λέγω· τὸ ἀφευθεῖν στόμα, ἐν ὃ δὲ πατήρ ἐξαλάθη άληθῶς. 3. αἰτήσασθε περὶ ἐμοῦ, ἵνα ἐπιτύχω. οὐ κατὰ σάρκα ὤμων ἔγραψα, ἀλλὰ κατὰ γνώμην θεοῦ. ἔὰν πάθω, ἥθελήσατε· ἐὰν ἀποδοκιμασθῶ, ἐμισήσατε.

IX

1. Μνημονεύετε ἐν τῇ προσευχῇ ὤμῶν τῆς ἐν Συρίᾳ ἐκκλησίας, ἣς ἀντὶ ἐμοῦ ποιμένι τῷ θεῷ χρήται· μόνος αὐτὴν Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς ἐπισκοπήσει καὶ ἡ ὤμοι ἀγάπη. 2. ἐγὼ δὲ αἰσχύνομαι εὖ αὐτῶν λέγεσθαι· οὖδε γὰρ ἀξίος εἰμι, ἐὰν ἐσχατοί αὐτῶν καὶ ἐκτρωμα· ἀλλ’ ἡλέγμα τις εἶναι, ἕαν θεοῦ ἐπιτύχω. 3. ἀσπάζεται ὤμαι τὸ ἐμὸν πνεῦμα καὶ ἡ ἀγάπη τῶν ἐκκλησίων τῶν δεξαμένων με εἰς δόμον Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, οὐχ ὡς παροδεύοντα. καὶ γὰρ αἱ μὴ προσήκουσαι μοι τῇ ὁδῷ τῇ κατὰ σάρκα, κατὰ πόλιν με προήγουν.

X

1. Γράφω δὲ ὤμων τὰῦτα ἀπὸ Σμύρνης δι’ Ἐφεσίων τῶν ἀξιομακράστων. ἔστιν δὲ καὶ ἄμα ἐμοὶ σὺν ἄλλοις πολλοῖς καὶ Κρόκος, τὸ ποθητὸν

236
IGNATIUS TO THE ROMANS, viii. i–x. i

VIII

1. I no longer desire to live after the manner of men, and this shall be, if you desire it. Desire it, in order that you also may be desired. 2. I beg you by this short letter; believe me. And Jesus Christ shall make this plain to you, that I am speaking the truth. He is the mouth which cannot lie, by which the Father has spoken truly. 3. Pray for me that I may attain. I write to you not according to the flesh, but according to the mind of God. If I suffer, it was your favour: if I be rejected, it was your hatred.

IX

1. REMEMBER in your prayers the Church in Syria which has God for its Shepherd in my room. Its bishop shall be Jesus Christ alone,—and your love. 2. But for myself I am ashamed to be called one of them, for I am not worthy; for I am the least of them, and "born out of time;" but I have obtained mercy to be someone, if I may attain to God. 3. My spirit greets you, and the love of the Churches which have received me in the Name of Jesus Christ, not as a mere passer by, for even those which did not lie on my road according to the flesh went before me from city to city.

X

1. Now I am writing these things to you from Smyrna by the blessed Ephesians, and Crocus, a name very dear to me, is also with me, and many
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

μοι ὄνομα. 2. περὶ τῶν προελθόντων με ἀπὸ Συρίας εἰς Ῥώμην εἰς δόξαν τοῦ θεοῦ πιστεύω ὡμᾶς ἐπεγνωκέναι, οἷς καὶ δηλώσατε ἐγγύς με ὄντα. πάντες γὰρ εἰσὶν ἄξιοι τοῦ θεοῦ καὶ ὑμῶν οὓς πρέπον ὑμῖν ἐστίν κατὰ πάντα ἀναπαύσαι. 3. ἐγραψά δὲ ὑμῖν ταῦτα τῇ πρὸ ἐννέα καλανδῶν Σεπτεμβρίων. ἔρρωσθε εἰς τέλος ἐν ὑπομονῇ
II Thess 3, 5 Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ.

ΠΙΛΑΤΕΛΦΕΥΣΙΝ ἸΓΝΑΤΙΟΣ

Ἰγνάτιος, ὁ καὶ Θεοφόρος, ἐκκλησία θεοῦ πατρὸς καὶ κυρίου Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ τῇ οὐσῃ ἐν Φιλαδέλφειᾳ τῆς Ἀσίας, ἠλεημένη καὶ ἡδρασμένη ἐν ὁμονοίᾳ θεοῦ καὶ ἀγαλλιωμένη ἐν τῷ πάθει τοῦ κυρίου ἡμῶν ἄδικοτός καὶ ἐν τῇ ἀναστάσει αὐτοῦ πεπληρωμένη ἐν παντὶ ἔλεει, ἢν ἀσπάζομαι ἐν αἴματι Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, ἤτοι ἐστὶν χαρὰ αἰώνιος καὶ παράμονος, μάλιστα ἐὰν ἐν ἐνὶ ὅσιν σὺν τῷ ἐπισκόπῳ καὶ τοῖς σὺν αὐτῷ πρεσβυτέροις καὶ διακόνοις ἀποδεδειγμένους ἐν γνώμῃ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, οὐς κατὰ τὸ ἰδίον θέλημα ἐστήριξεν ἐν βεβαιωσūν τῷ ἀγίῳ αὐτοῦ πνεύματι.

I

1. Ὁν ἐπίσκοπον ἐγνών οὐκ ἀφ’ ἑαυτοῦ οὐδὲ δι’ ἀνθρώπων κεκτήσθαι τὴν διακονίαν τὴν εἰς τὸ

238
IGNATIUS TO THE PHILADELPHIANS, i. 1

others. 2. Concerning those who have preceded me from Syria to Rome to the glory of God, I believe that you have received information; tell them that I am close at hand; for they are all worthy of God and of you, and it is right for you to refresh them in every way. 3. I write this to you on the 24th of August. Farewell unto the end, in the endurance of Jesus Christ.

V.—IGNATIUS TO THE PHILADELPHIANS.

IGNATIUS, who is also called Theophorus, to the Greetings Church of God the Father and of the Lord Jesus Christ, which is in Philadelphia in Asia, which has obtained mercy, and is established in the harmony of God, and rejoices in the Passion of our Lord without doubting, and is fully assured in all mercy in his resurrection; I greet her in the blood of Jesus Christ, which is eternal and abiding joy, especially if men be at one with the bishop, and with the presbyters and deacons, who together with him have been appointed according to the mind of Jesus Christ, and he established them in security according to his own will by his Holy Spirit.

I

1. I know that your bishop obtained the ministry, The Bishop which makes for the common good, neither from of Phila-delphia

239
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

κοινὸν ἀνήκουσαν οὐδὲ κατὰ κενοδοξίαν, ἀλλ’ ἐν ἀγάπῃ θεοῦ πατρὸς καὶ κυρίου Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ. οὗ καταπέταλημαι τὴν ἐπεικείαν, δὲ σιγῶν πλείονα δύναται τῶν μάταια1 λαλοῦντων. 2. συνευρύθμισται γὰρ ταῖς ἐντολαίς ὡς χορδαῖς κιθάρα. διὸ μακαρίζει μοι ἡ ψυχὴ τὴν εἰς θεόν αὐτοῦ γνώμην, ἐπιγνον ἐνάρετον καὶ τέλειον οὖσαν, τὸ ἀκίνητον αὐτοῦ καὶ τὸ ἀόργητον αὐτοῦ ἐν πάσῃ ἐπιεικείᾳ θεοῦ ζῶντος.

II

1. Τέκνα οὖν φωτὸς ἀληθείας,2 φεύγετε τὸν μερισμὸν καὶ τὰς κακοδιδασκαλίας ὅπου δὲ ὁ ποιμὴν ἐστών, ἐκεῖ ὡς πρόβατα ἀκολουθείτε. 2. πολλοὶ γὰρ λύκοι ἄξιοπιστοὶ ἡδονὴ κακῆς αἰχμαλωτίζουσι τοὺς θεοδρόμους ἀλλ’ ἐν τῇ ἐνότητι ὑμῶν οὐχ ἔξουσιν τόπον.

III

1. Ἀπέχεσθε τῶν κακῶν βοτανῶν, ἀστινας οὗ γεωργεῖ Ἰησοῦς Χριστός, διὰ τὸ μὴ εἰναι αὐτοῦς φυτεῖαν πατρός. οὐχ ὅτι παρ’ ὑμῖν μερισμὸν εὑρον, ἀλλ’ ἀποδιώκλεσον. 2. ὁσιοί γὰρ θεοῦ εἰσιν καὶ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, οὐτοὶ μετὰ τοῦ ἐπισκόπου εἰσίν. καὶ ὁσιοὶ ἄν μετανοῆσαντες ἔλθωσιν ἐπὶ τὴν ἐνότητα τῆς ἐκκλησίας, καὶ οὐτοὶ θεοῦ ἔσονται,

1 μάταια GL, om. A, πλεῖον g. Lightfoot favours the reading of A.
2 φωτός καὶ ἀληθεία A "light and truth"; Lightfoot thinks that φωτός is an early gloss.

240
IGNATIUS TO THE PHILADELPHIANS, I. i—iii

himself nor through men, nor for vain-glory, but in the love of God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ. And I was amazed at his gentleness, and at his ability to do more by silence than those who use vain words. 2. For he is attuned to the commandments as a harp to its strings. Therefore my soul blesses his godly mind, recognising its virtue and perfection, and the unmoveable and passionless temper by which he lives in all godly gentleness.

II

1. Therefore as children of the light of truth flee from division and wrong doctrine. And follow as sheep where the shepherd is. 2. For there are many specious wolves who lead captive with evil pleasures the runners in God's race, but they will find no place if you are in unity.

III

1. Abstain from evil growths, which Jesus Christ does not tend, because they are not the planting of the Father. Not that I have found division among you but 'filtering.' 2. For as many as belong to God and Jesus Christ,—these are with the bishop. And as many as repent and come to the unity of the Church,—these also shall be of God, to be living according to

1 The meaning is that the Christians at Philadelphia had "filtered out" the impurity of heresy from their church.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

I Cor. 6, 9, 10 ἦνα δῶσιν κατὰ Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν ζῶντες. 3. μὴ πλανᾶσθε, ἀδελφοί μου· εἰ τις σχίζοντι ἀκολουθεῖ, βασιλείαν θεοῦ οὐ κληρονομεῖ· εἰ τις ἐν ἄλλητι γηνῆμεν περιπατεῖ, οὗτος τῷ πάθει οὐ συγκατατίθεται.

IV

I Cor. 10, 16, 17 Σπουδάσατε οὖν μιᾶς εὐχαριστία χρησθαί· μία γὰρ σάρξ τοῦ κυρίου ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ καὶ ἐν ποτῆριον εἰς ἐνώσιν τοῦ αἵματος αὐτοῦ, ἐν θυσιαστήριῳ, ὡς εἰς επίσκοπος ἄμα τῷ πρεσβυτερίῳ καὶ διακόνοις τοῖς συνδούλοις μου· ἢνα, δὲ ἐὰν πράσῃτε, κατὰ θεοῦ πράσῃτε.

V

1. Ἀδελφοί μου, λίγαν ἐκκέχυμαι ἀγαπῶν ὑμᾶς καὶ ὑπεραγαλλόμενος ἀσφαλίζομαι ὑμᾶς· οὐκ ἐγὼ δὲ, ἀλλ' Ἰησοῦς Χριστός, ἐν δὲ δεδεμένος φοβοῦμαι μᾶλλον, ὡς ἐτὶ ἡ ἀναπάρτιστος· ἀλλ' ἐπὶ προσευχή ὑμῶν εἰς θεοῦ με ἀπαρτίσει, ἢν ἐν δὲ κλήρῳ ἡλείθην ἐπιτύχω, προσφυγών τῷ εὐαγγελίῳ ὡς σαρκὶ Ἰησοῦ, καὶ τοῖς ὑποστόλοις ὡς πρεσβυτερίῳ ἐκκλησίας. 2. καὶ τοὺς προφήτας δὲ ἀγαπῶμεν, διὰ τὸ καὶ αὐτοὺς εἰς τὸ εὐαγγέλιον κατηγγελκέναι καὶ εἰς αὐτὸν ἐκπίσειν καὶ αὐτὸν ἀναμένειν, ἐν δὲ καὶ πιστεύσαντες ἐσώθησαν, ἐν ἐνότητι Ἰησοῦ

1 eis theon Gg, om. L(A).

242
IGNATIUS TO THE PHILADELPHIANS, III. 2–V. 2

Jesus Christ. 3. "Be not deceived," my brethren, if any one follow a maker of schism, "he does not inherit the kingdom of God;" if any man walk in strange doctrine he has no part in the Passion.

IV

1. Be careful therefore to use one Eucharist (for there is one flesh of our Lord Jesus Christ, and one cup for union with his blood, one altar, as there is one bishop with the presbytery and the deacons my fellow servants), in order that whatever you do you may do it according unto God.

V

1. Brethren, I am overflowing with love to you, and exceedingly joyful in watching over your safety. Yet not I, but Jesus Christ, whose bonds I bear, but am the more fearful in that I am not yet perfected; but your prayer will make me perfect for God, that I may attain the lot wherein I found mercy, making the Gospel my refuge as the flesh of Jesus, and the Apostles as the presbytery of the Church. 2. And the prophets also do we love, because they also have announced the Gospel, and are hoping in him and waiting for him, by faith in whom they also obtain salvation, being united with Jesus Christ, for

1 He probably means the Christian prophets: cf. the Didache and Hermas.
2 An alternative translation is "let us love."
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

VII

1. Εἰ γὰρ καὶ κατὰ σάρκα μὲ τινὲς ἡθέλησαν πλανῆσαι, ἀλλὰ τὸ πνεῦμα οὐ πλανᾶται ἀπὸ θεοῦ ὅν. οἶδεν γὰρ, πόθεν ἔρχεται καὶ ποῦ ὑπάγει, καὶ τὰ κρυπτὰ ἐλέγχει. ἔκραυγασα μεταξὺ ὅν, ἐλάλουν μεγάλη φωνῆ, θεοῦ φωνῆ. Τῷ ἐπισκόπῳ προσέχετε καὶ τῷ πρεσβυτερῷ καὶ διακόνους.

244
IGNATIUS TO THE PHILADELPHIANS, v. 2–vii. 1

they are worthy of love and saints worthy of admiration, approved by Jesus Christ, and numbered together in the Gospel of the common hope.

VI

1. But if anyone interpret Judaism to you do not listen to him; for it is better to hear Christianity from the circumcised than Judaism from the uncircumcised. But both of them, unless they speak of Jesus Christ, are to me tombstones and sepulchres of the dead, on whom only the names of men are written. 2. Flee then from the wicked arts and snares of the prince of this world, lest you be afflicted by his device, and grow weak in love; but come all together with undivided heart. 3. But I thank my God that I have, a good conscience towards you, and that no one can boast either secretly or openly that I was a burden to anyone in small or in great matters. And I pray for all among whom I spoke, that they may not turn it to a testimony against themselves.

VII

1. For even if some desired to deceive me after the flesh, the spirit is not deceived, for it is from God. For it "knoweth whence it comes and whither it goes" and tests secret things. I cried out while I was with you, I spoke with a great voice,—with God's own voice,—"Give heed to the bishop,
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

2. οἱ δὲ ὑποπτεύσαντες μὲ ὡς προειδότα τὸν μερισμόν τινων λέγειν ταῦτα· μάρτυς δὲ μοι, ἐν δὲ δεδεμαι, ὅτι ἀπὸ σαρκὸς ἀνθρωπίνης ὦν κἀγὼν. τὸ δὲ πνεῦμα ἐκήρυσσεν λέγων τάδε: Ἡωρίς τοῦ ἐπισκόπου μὴ δὲν ποιεῖτε, τὴν σάρκα ὑμῶν ὡς ναὸν θεοῦ τηρεῖτε, τὴν ἐνώσιν ἀγαπᾶτε, τοὺς μερισμοὺς φεύγετε, μιμητικα γίνεσθε Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, ὡς καὶ αὐτὸς τοῦ πατρὸς αὐτοῦ.

VIII

1. Ἡγὼ μὲν οὖν τὸ ἱδιον ἐποίουν ὡς ἀνθρώπος εἰς ἐνώσιν καθηρτισμένος. οὐ δὲ μερισμός ἐστιν καὶ ὄργη, θεὸς οὐ κατοικεῖ. πάσιν οὖν μετανο- 

ούσιν ἑβίει ὁ κύριος, ἐὰν μετανοήσωσιν εἰς 

ἐνότητα θεοῦ καὶ συνέδριον τοῦ ἐπισκόπου. πισ- 


tεύω τῇ χάριτι Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, ὃς λύσει ἀφ' 

ὑμῶν πάντα δεσμών. 2. παρακαλῶ δὲ ὑμᾶς μηδὲν 

κατ' ἑρμηνεῖαν πράσσειν, ἀλλὰ κατὰ χριστομαθίαν. 

ἐπεὶ ἡκουσά τινων λεγόντων, ὅτι ἐὰν μὴ ἐν τοῖς 

ἀρχείοις εὑρὼ ἐν τῷ εὐαγγελίῳ οὐ πιστεῦω καὶ 

λέγοντός μοι αὐτοὺς ὅτι γέγραπται, ἀπεκρίθησάν 

μοι ὅτι πρόκειται. ἔμοι δὲ ἀρχεία ἐστών Ἰησοῦς 

Χριστοῦ, τὰ ἄθικτα ἄρχεια ὁ ἱσταρὸς αὐτοῦ καὶ 

ὁ θάνατος καὶ ἡ ἀνάστασις αὐτοῦ καὶ ἡ πίστις 

ἡ δ' αὐτοῦ, ἐν οἷς θέλω ἐν τῇ προσευχῇ ὑμῶν 

δικαιωθῆναι.

1 Πράσσειν GL, πράσσετε GA.
and to the presbytery and deacons.”

2. But some suspected me of saying this because I had previous knowledge of the division of some persons: but he in whom I am bound is my witness that I had no knowledge of this from any human being, but the Spirit was preaching, and saying this, “Do nothing without the bishop, keep your flesh as the temple of God, love unity, flee from divisions, be imitators of Jesus Christ, as was he also of his Father.”

VIII

1. I then did my best as a man who was set on unity. But where there is division and anger God does not dwell. The Lord then forgives all who repent, if their repentance lead to the unity of God and the council of the bishop. I have faith in the grace of Jesus Christ, and he shall loose every bond from you. 2. But I beseech you to do nothing in factiousness, but after the teaching of Christ. For I heard some men saying, “if I find it not in the charters in the Gospel I do not believe,”¹ and when I said to them that it is in the Scripture, they answered me, “that is exactly the question.” But to me the charters are Jesus Christ, the inviolable charter is his cross, and death, and resurrection, and the faith which is through him;—in these I desire to be justified by your prayers.

¹ The Greek, without punctuation, is as ambiguous as the English: “If I find it not in the charters,—in the Gospel I do not believe,” or “If I find it not in the charters, in the Gospel, I do not believe.” Probably the former should be preferred on the ground that “the charters” probably means the Old Testament.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

IX

1. Καλοὶ καὶ οἱ ἱερεῖς, κρεῖσσοι δὲ ὁ ἄρχιερεὺς ὁ πεπιστευμένος τὰ ἁγία τῶν ἁγίων, διὸ μόνος πεπίστευται τὰ κρυπτὰ τοῦ θεοῦ· αὐτὸς ὁυθύρα τοῦ πατρός, δι' ἑσείσαρχονται Ἀβραὰμ καὶ Ἰσαὰκ καὶ Ἰακὼβ καὶ οἱ προφήται καὶ ἀπὸ στολῶν καὶ ἡ ἐκκλησία. πάντα ταύτα εἰς ἐνότητα θεοῦ.
2. ἐξαίρεσθαι δὲ τι ἔχει τὸ εὐαγγέλιον, τὴν παρουσίαν τοῦ σωτῆρος, κυρίου ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, τὸ πάθος αὐτοῦ, καὶ τὴν ἀνάστασιν. οἱ γὰρ ἀγαπητοὶ προφήται κατήγγειλαν εἰς αὐτὸν· τὸ δὲ εὐαγγέλιον ἀπάρτισμα ἐστὶν ἀφθαρσίας. πάντα ὁμοῦ καλὰ ἐστὶν, ἕαν ἐν ἀγάπῃ πιστεύετε.

X

1. Ἐπειδὴ κατὰ τὴν προσευχὴν ὑμῶν καὶ κατὰ τὰ σπλάγχνα, δὲ ἔχετε ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ, ἀπεγγέλη μοι εἰρήνευεν τὴν ἐκκλησίαν τὴν ἐν Ἀντιοχείᾳ τῆς Συρίας, πρέπον ἔστιν ὑμῖν ὡς ἐκκλησία θεοῦ, χειροτονήσαι διάκονον εἰς τὸ πρεσβεῖαν ἐκεῖθεν πρεσβεῖαν, εἰς τὸ συγχαρήσῃ αὐτοῖς ἐπὶ τὸ αὐτὸ γενομένους καὶ δοξάσαι τὸ ὄνομα. 2. μακάριος ἐν Ἰησοῦ Χριστῷ, ὃς καταξιωθῆσῃ τῆς τοιαύτης διακονίας, καὶ ὑμεῖς δοξασθήσεσθε. θέλουσιν δὲ ὑμῖν οὖν ἔστιν ἄδυνατον ὑπὲρ ὑμῶν ἄνωτα τὸ πρεσβύτερον καὶ διακόνοις.
IGNATIUS TO THE PHILAELPHIANS, IX. 1–X. 2

IX

1. The priests likewise are noble, but the High Priest who has been entrusted with the Holy of Holies is greater, and only to him have the secret things of God been entrusted. He is the door of the Father, through which enter Abraham and Isaac and Jacob and the Prophets and the Apostles and the Church. All these things are joined in the unity of God. 2. But the Gospel has somewhat of pre-eminence, the coming of the Saviour, our Lord Jesus Christ, his passion, and the resurrection. For the beloved prophets had a message pointing to him, but the Gospel is the perfection of incorruption. All things together are good if you hold the faith in love.

X

1. Since it was reported to me that the Church which is in Antioch in Syria is in peace, in accordance with your prayers, and the compassion which you have in Christ Jesus, it is proper for you, as a Church of God, to appoint a deacon to go as the ambassador of God to it, to congratulate those who are gathered together, and to glorify the Name. 2. Blessed in Jesus Christ is he who shall be found worthy of such a ministry, and you yourselves shall be glorified. And if you have the will it is not impossible for you to do this for the sake of the Name of God, even as the neighbouring Churches have sent bishops, and others presbyters and deacons.

249
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

XI

1. Περὶ δὲ Φίλωνος τοῦ διακόνου ἀπὸ Κηλικίας, ἀνδρὸς μεμαρτυρημένου, δὲ καὶ νῦν ἐν λόγῳ θεοῦ ὑπηρετεῖ μοι ἡμᾶς ῾Ρέφiliation. ᾿Αγαθόποδι, ἀνδρὶ ἐκλεκτῷ, δὲ ἀπὸ Συρίας μοι ἀκολουθεῖ ἀποταξάμενος τῷ βίῳ, ὦ καὶ μαρτυροῦσιν ὑμῖν, καὶ πώ τῷ θεῷ εὐχαριστῶ ὑπὲρ ὑμῶν, ὅτι ἐδέχασθε αὐτούς, ὡς καὶ ὑμᾶς ὁ κύριος· οἱ δὲ ἀτιμάσαντες αὐτοὺς αὐτροθείησαν ἐν τῇ χάριτι τοῦ ῾Ιησοῦ Χριστοῦ.
2. ἀσπάζεται ὑμᾶς ἡ ἁγάπη τῶν ἀδελφῶν τῶν ἐν Τρωάδι· οἶδεν καὶ γράφω ὑμῖν διὰ Βουρροῦ πεμφθέντος ἡμᾶς ἐμοὶ ἀπὸ ῾Εφεσίων καὶ ῾Σμύρναιῶν εἰς λόγον τιμῆς. τιμήσει αὐτοὺς ὁ κύριος ῾Ιησοῦς Χριστός, εἰς δὲ ἐλπίζουσιν σαρκί, ψυχῇ, πνεύματι, πίστει, ἁγάπῃ, ὁμοιοῖα. ἔρρωσθε ἐν Χριστῷ ῾Ιησοῦ, τῇ κοινῇ ἑλπίδι ὑμῶν.

ΣΜΥΡΝΑΙΟΙΣ ΙΓΝΑΤΙΟΣ

῾Ιγνάτιος, ὁ καὶ Θεοφόρος, ἐκκλησία θεοῦ πατρὸς καὶ τοῦ ἡγαπημένου ῾Ιησοῦ Χριστοῦ,
ηλεημένη ἐν παντὶ χαρίσματι, πεπληρωμένη ἐν πίστει καὶ ἁγάπῃ, ἀνυστέρητῳ ὤσῃ παντὸς χαρίσματος, θεοπρεπεστάτῃ καὶ ἁγιο-

1 Lightfoot emends to ῾Ράφ on the grounds that this form is justified by inscriptions, while ῾Ρέφ is unknown, and g which has ῾Ραφ implies this reading.

250
IGNATIUS TO THE SMYRNAEANS

XI

1. But concerning Philo, the deacon from Cilicia, a man of good report, who is at present serving me in the word of God, with Rheus Agathopous, an elect man who is following me from Syria, and has renounced this life;—these bear you witness (and I also thank God on your behalf) that you received them even as the Lord received you;¹ but may those who treated them with disrespect be redeemed by the grace of Jesus Christ. 2. The love of the brethren at Troas salutes you; and I am writing thence to you by the hand of Burrhus, who was sent with me by the Ephesians and Smyrnaeans as a mark of honour. The Lord Jesus Christ shall reward them, on whom they hope in flesh and soul and spirit, in faith, in love and in harmony. Farewell in Christ Jesus, our common hope.

VI.—IGNATIUS TO THE SMYRNAEANS.

Ignatius, who is also called Theophorus, to the Church of God the Father and the Beloved Jesus Christ, which has obtained mercy in every gift, and is filled with faith and love, and comes behind in no gift, most worthy of God, and

¹ Or possibly “even as may the Lord receive you.”
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

φόρον, τῇ οὖσῃ ἐν Σμύρνῃ τῆς Ἀσίας, ἐν ἀμώμῳ πνεύματι καὶ λόγῳ θεοῦ πλείστα χαίρειν.

I

1. Δοξάζῳ Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν τὸν θεὸν τὸν οὕτως ὑμᾶς σοφίσαντα· ἐνόησα γὰρ ὑμᾶς κατηρτισμένους ἐν ἀκινήτῳ πίστει, ὥσπερ καθηλωμένους ἐν τῷ σταυρῷ τοῦ κυρίου Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ σαρκί τε καὶ πνεύματι καὶ ἡδρασμένους ἐν ἀγάπῃ ἐν τῷ αἵματι Χριστοῦ, πεπληρωφορμένους εἰς τὸν κυρίον ἡμῶν, ἀληθῶς δύνας ἑκ τῶν Δανείδ κατὰ σώρκα, νῦν θεοῦ κατὰ θέλημα καὶ δύναμιν θεοῦ, ἡγεμονευμένου ἀληθῶς ἐκ παρθένου, βεβαπτισμένου ὑπὸ Ἰωάννου, ἦν πληρωθεὶς πάσα δικαιοσύνη ὑπὸ αὐτοῦ. 2. ἀληθῶς ἐπὶ Ποντίου Πιλάτου καὶ Ἡρώδου τετράρχου καθηλωμένου ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν ἐν σαρκί, ἀφ' ὧν καρπὸν ἡμεῖς ἀπὸ τοῦ Θεομακαρίστου αὐτοῦ πάθους, ἦν ἀρχή σύσσωμον εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας διὰ τῆς ἀναστάσεως εἰς τοὺς ἀγίους καὶ πιστοὺς αὐτοῦ, εἰπτε ἐν Ἰουδαίοις εἰπε ἐν ἑθεσεῖν, ἐν ἐνι σώματι τῆς ἐκκλησίας αὐτοῦ.

II

1. Ταῦτα γὰρ πάντα ἑπαθέν δι' ἡμᾶς, ἦν σωθῶμεν καὶ ἀληθῶς ἑπαθέν, ὡς καὶ ἀληθῶς ἀνέστησεν ἑαυτῶν, οὐχ ὥσπερ ἀπιστοῖ τινες

1 A Theodoret omit θεοῦ and are followed by Lightfoot.
2 ἦν σωθῶμεν om. C.

252
IGNATIUS TO THE SMYRNAEANS, I. I–II. I

1. I give glory to Jesus Christ, the God who has thus given you wisdom; for I have observed that you are established in immovable faith, as if nailed to the cross of the Lord Jesus Christ, both in flesh and spirit, and confirmed in love by the blood of Christ, being fully persuaded as touching our Lord, that he is in truth of the family of David according to the flesh, God's son by the will and power of God, truly born of a Virgin, baptised by John that "all righteousness might be fulfilled by him," 2. truly nailed to a tree¹ in the flesh for our sakes under Pontius Pilate and Herod the Tetrarch, (and of its fruit are we from his divinely blessed Passion) that "he might set up an ensign" for all ages through his Resurrection, for his saints and believers, whether among the Jews, or among the heathen, in one body of his Church.

II

1. For he suffered all these things for us that we might attain salvation, and he truly suffered even as he also truly raised himself, not as some unbelievers.

¹ "Tree" is not expressed in the Greek: but seems to be implied by the "fruit" in the next sentence, though the exact meaning of the passage is obscure.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

λέγουσιν, τὸ δοκεῖν αὐτὸν πεπονθέναι, αὐτῷ τὸ δοκεῖν ὄντες· καὶ καθὼς φρονοῦσιν, καὶ συμβῆσεται αὐτοῖς, οὕσω ἀσώματοι καὶ δαίμονικοίς.

III

1. Ἐγὼ γὰρ καὶ μετὰ τὴν ἀνάστασιν ἐν σαρκὶ αὐτὸν οἴδα καὶ πιστεύω ὄντα. 2. καὶ ὅτε πρὸς τοὺς περὶ Πέτρου ἤλθεν, ἐφῃ αὐτοῖς: Λάβετε, ψυλαφήσατε με καὶ ἰδεῖτε, ὅτι οὐκ εἰμὶ δαίμονιον ἀσώματον. καὶ εὐθὺς αὐτὸν ἠγάπατο καὶ ἐπιστεύσαν, κραδέντες τῇ σαρκὶ αὐτοῦ καὶ τῷ πνεύματι.1 διὰ τούτο καὶ θανάτου κατεφρόνησαν, ηὐρέθησαν δὲ ὑπὲρ θάνατον. 3. μετὰ δὲ τὴν ἀνάστασιν συνέφαγεν αὐτοῖς καὶ συνέπειν ὡς σαρκικὸς, καὶ παρενεχθῆσον τῷ πατρί.

IV

1. Ταῦτα δὲ παραινῶ ὑμῖν, ἀγαπητοί, εἰδὼς ὅτι καὶ ὑμεῖς ὄντως ἔχετε. προφυλάσσω δὲ ὑμᾶς ἀπὸ τῶν θηρίων τῶν ἀνθρωπομόρφων, οὓς οὐ μόνον δεὶ ὑμᾶς μὴ παραδέχεσθαι, ἀλλ’ εἰ δυνατὸν μηδὲ συναντῶν, 2 μόνον δὲ προσεύχεσθε3 ὑπὲρ αὐτῶν, εἰών πως μετανοήσωσίν, ὑπὲρ δύσκολον, τούτον δὲ ἔχει ἐξουσίαν Ἰησοῦς Χριστός, τὸ

1 πνεύματι GLC, αἵματι A.
2 συναντῶν BG, συναντῶν αὐτοῖς LAC.
3 προσεύχεσθε BC(S), προσεύχεσθαι GLA.

254
IGNATIUS TO THE SMYRNAEANS, ii. i–iv. 1

say, that his Passion was merely in semblance,—but it is they who are merely in semblance, and even according to their opinions it shall happen to them, and they shall be without bodies and phantasmal.

III

1. For I know and believe that he was in the flesh even after the Resurrection. 2. And when he came to those with Peter he said to them: "Take, handle me and see that I am not a phantom without a body." And they immediately touched him and believed, being mingled both with his flesh and spirit. Therefore they despised even death, and were proved to be above death. 3. And after his Resurrection he ate and drank with them as a being of flesh, although he was united in spirit to the Father.

IV

1. Now I warn you of these things, beloved, knowing that you also are so minded. But I guard you in advance against beasts in the form of men, whom you must not only not receive, but if it is possible not even meet, but only pray for them, if perchance they may repent, difficult though that be,—but Jesus Christ who is our true life has the
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

άληθινον ἡμῶν ἥγην. 2. εἰ γὰρ τὸ δοκεῖν1 ταῦτα ἐπράξῃ ὑπὸ τοῦ κυρίου ἡμῶν, κἀγὼ τὸ δοκεῖν δεδεμαι. τί δὲ καὶ εαυτὸν ἐκδοτον δέδωκα τῷ θανάτῳ, πρὸς πῦρ, πρὸς μάχαιραν, πρὸς θηρία; ἀλλὰ ἐγγὺς μαχαίρας ἐγγὺς θεοῦ, μεταξὺ θηρίων μεταξὺ θεοῦ; μόνον ἐν τῷ ὄνοματι Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ εἰς τὸ συμπαθεῖν αὐτῷ πάντα ὑπομένω, αὐτοῦ μὲ ἐνδυναμοῦντος τοῦ τελείου ἀνθρώπου.2

V

1. "Οὐ τινὲς ἀγνοοῦντες ἀρνοῦνται, μᾶλλον δὲ ἤρνηθησαν ὑπ' αὐτοῦ, οὕτως συνήγοροι τοῦ θανάτου μᾶλλον ἢ τῆς ἀληθείας· οὔς οὐκ ἔπεισαν αἱ προφητείαι οὔδε ὁ νόμος Μωϋσεως, ἀλλ' οὔδε μέχρι νῦν τὸ εὐαγγέλιον, οὔδε τὰ ἡμέτερα τῶν κατ' ἄνδρα παθήματα. 2. καὶ γὰρ περὶ ἡμῶν τὸ αὐτὸ φρονοῦσιν. τί γὰρ με ὧφελεί τις, εἰ ἐμὲ ἐπαινεῖ, τὸν δὲ κύριον μου Βλασφημεῖ, μὴ ὁμολογῶν αὐτοῦ σαρκοφόρον; ὁ δὲ τούτῳ λέγων3 τελείως αὐτοῦ ἀπήρνηται, ὅω νεκροφόρος. 3. τὰ δὲ ὄνοματα αὐτῶν, οὕτω ἀπίστα, οὐκ ἔδοξέν μοι ἐγγράψαι. ἀλλὰ μηδὲ γένοιτό μοι αὐτῶν μνημονεύειν, μέχρις οὐ μετανοήσωσιν εἰς τὸ πάθος, ὁ ἐστιν ἡμῶν ἀνάστασισ.

1 Here and elsewhere Bg read τῷ δοκεῖν against G which has τὸ δοκεῖν.
2 add. γενομένου GL.
3 λέγων BC, μὴ λέγων GLA.

256
power over this. 2. For if it is merely in semblance that these things were done by our Lord I am also a prisoner in semblance. And why have I given myself up to death, to fire, to the sword, to wild beasts? Because near the sword is near to God, with the wild beasts is with God; in the name of Jesus Christ alone am I enduring all things, that I may suffer with him, and the perfect man himself gives me strength.

V

1. There are some who ignorantly deny him, but rather were denied by him, being advocates of death rather than of the truth. These are they whom neither the prophecies nor the law of Moses persuaded, nor the gospel even until now, nor our own individual sufferings. 2. For they have the same opinion concerning us. For what does anyone profit me if he praise me but blaspheme my Lord, and do not confess that he was clothed in flesh? But he who says this has denied him absolutely and is clothed with a corpse. 3. Now I have not thought right to put into writing their unbelieving names; but would that I might not even remember them, until they repent concerning the Passion, which is our resurrection.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

VI

1. Μηδεὶς πλανάσθω καὶ τὰ ἐπουράνια καὶ ἡ
dόξα τῶν ἁγγέλων καὶ οἱ ἀρχοντες ὅρατοι τε καὶ
ἀφατοι, ἐὰν μὴ πιστεύσωσιν εἰς τὸ αἷμα Χριστοῦ,
κακείνους κρίσις ἔστιν· ὁ χωρῶν χωρεῖτω. τόπος
μηδένα φυσιούτω· τὸ γὰρ ὅλου ἔστιν πίστις καὶ
ἀγάπη, ὃν οὐδὲν προκέκριται. 2. καταμάθετε δὲ
τοὺς ἑτεροδοξοῦτας εἰς τὴν χάριν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ
τὴν εἰς ἡμᾶς ἐλθοῦσαν, πῶς ἐναντίοι εἰς ὑ̣
γνώμη τοῦ θεοῦ. περὶ ἀγάπης οὐ μέλει αὐτοῖς,
οὐ περὶ χῆρας, οὐ περὶ ὀρφανοῦ, οὐ περὶ θλιβο-
μένου, οὐ περὶ δεδεμένου ἡ λελυμένου, ¹ οὐ περὶ
πεινῶντος ἡ διψῶντος.

VII

1. Εὐχαριστίας καὶ προσευχῆς ἀπέχονται, διὰ
τὸ μὴ ὁμολογεῖν τὴν εὐχαριστίαν σάρκα εἶναι τοῦ
σωτῆρος ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ τὴν ὑπὲρ τῶν
ἀμαρτιῶν ἡμῶν παθοῦσαν, ἣν τῇ χρηστότητι ὁ
πατὴρ ἤγειρεν. οἱ οὖν ἀντιλέγοντες τῇ δωρεᾷ τοῦ
θεοῦ συζητοῦντες ἀποθνῄσκουσιν· συνέφερεν δὲ
αὐτοῖς ἀγαπᾶν, ἵνα καὶ ἀναστῶσιν. 2. πρέπον Ῥ
ἔστιν ἀπέχεσθαι τῶν τοιούτων καὶ μήτε κατ’
идιαν περὶ αὐτῶν λαλεῖν μήτε κοινῆ, προσέχειν δὲ

¹ λελυμένου BGL, om. AC.
² πρέπον BA(L), πρέπον oūn Gg.
VI.

1. Let no one be deceived; even things in heaven and the glory of the angels, and the rulers visible and invisible, even for them there is a judgment if they do not believe on the blood of Christ. "He that receiveth let him receive." Let not office exalt anyone, for faith and love is everything, and nothing has been preferred to them. 2. But mark those who have strange opinions concerning the grace of Jesus Christ which has come to us, and see how contrary they are to the mind of God. For love they have no care, none for the widow, none for the orphan, none for the distressed, none for the afflicted, none for the prisoner, or for him released from prison, none for the hungry or thirsty.

VII

1. They abstain from Eucharist and prayer, because they do not confess that the Eucharist is the flesh of our Saviour Jesus Christ who suffered for our sins, which the Father raised up by his goodness. They then who deny the gift of God are perishing in their disputes; but it were better for them to have love, that they also may attain to the Resurrection. 2. It is right to refrain from such men and not even to speak about them in private or in public, but to give heed to the prophets and especially to the
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

toίς προφήταις, ἐξαιρέτως δὲ τῷ εὐαγγελίῳ, ἐν ὑμῖν διδήλωται καὶ ἡ ἀνάστασις τετελείωται. τούς δὲ μερισμούς φεύγετε ὡς ἀρχὴν κακῶν.

VIII

1. Πάντες τῷ ἐπίσκοπῳ ἀκολουθείτε, ὡς Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς τῷ πατρί, καὶ τῷ πρεσβυτερῷ ὡς τοῖς ἀποστόλοις τοὺς δὲ διακόνους ἐντρέπεσθε ὡς θεοῦ ἐνυπόλειν. μηδὲς χωρὶς τοῦ ἐπίσκοπον τι πρασσέτω τῶν ἀνήκοντων εἰς τὴν ἐκκλησίαν. ἐκείνη βεβαια ἐυχαριστίᾳ ἤγείρον, ἢ ὡσπὸ ἐπισκόπου οὕσα ἡ φῶς ἐν αὐτῶς ἐπιτρέψῃ. 2. ὅτου ἀν φανή ὁ ἐπίσκοπος, ἐκεί τὸ πλήθος ἦτω, ὡσπέρ ὅτου ἀν Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς, ἐκεί ἡ καθολικὴ ἐκκλησία. οὐκ ἔξων ἐστών χωρίς τοῦ ἐπισκόπου οὕτε βαπτίζειν οὕτε ἀγάπην ποιεῖν ἀλλ' ὅ ἀν ἐκείνος δοκιμάσῃ, τούτῳ καὶ τῷ θεῷ εὐάρεστον, ἵνα ἀσφαλὲς ἦ καὶ βέβαιον πᾶν ὁ πράσσετε.

IX

1. Εὐλογοῦν ἐστών λοιπῶν ἀνανηψαῖ ἡμᾶς, ὡς ἄν ἐν καιρὸν ἔχομεν εἰς θεοῦ μετανοεῖν. καλῶς ἔχει θεοῦ καὶ ἐπίσκοπον εἰδέναι ὁ τιμῶν ἐπισκόπου ὑπὸ θεοῦ τετίμηται ὁ λάθρα ἐπισκόπου τι πρᾶσσων

1 ἦτω B, ἦστω Gg.
2 ὁ Ιησ. Χρ. BA, Ἱσ. Ἰησ. GL.
3 πράσσετε BSA(g), πράσσεται GL.
4 ἡμᾶς Bg(SA) καὶ GL, “it is reasonable to return to sobriety, and . . . to repent.”

260
IGNATIUS TO THE SMYRNAEANS, vii. 2–ix. 1

Gospel, in which the Passion has been revealed to us and the Resurrection has been accomplished. But flee from divisions as the beginning of evils.

VIII

1. See that you all follow the bishop, as Jesus Christ follows the Father, and the presbytery as if it were the Apostles. And reverence the deacons as the command of God. Let no one do any of the things appertaining to the Church without the bishop. Let that be considered a valid Eucharist which is celebrated by the bishop, or by one whom he appoints. 2. Wherever the bishop appears let the congregation be present; just as wherever Jesus Christ is, there is the Catholic Church. It is not lawful either to baptise or to hold an “agapé”¹ without the bishop; but whatever he approve, this is also pleasing to God, that everything which you do may be secure and valid.

IX

1. Moreover it is reasonable for us to return to soberness, while we still have time to repent towards God. It is good to know God and the bishop. He who honours the bishop has been honoured by God; he who does anything without the knowledge of the

¹ Agapé means “love”: the name was given to some kind of religious meal. The context here suggests that it is a synonym for the Eucharist, but the point is doubted by some scholars. In the A.V. of Jud. 12 it is translated “Love feasts.”
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

tò διαβόλῳ λατρεύει. 2. πάντα οὖν ύμῖν ἐν χάριτι περισσευέτων: ἀξίοι γὰρ ἐστε. κατὰ πάντα με ἀνεπαύσατε, καὶ ύμᾶς Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς. ἀπόντα με καὶ πάροντα ἡγαπήσατε. ἀμοιβῇ ὑμῖν ὁ θεός, δι’ αὐτοῦ πάντα ὑπομένοντες αὐτοῦ τεῦξεσθε.

X

1. Φλωνα καὶ 'Ρέον, οὖ ἐπηκολοῦθησάν μοι εἰς λόγον θεοῦ, καλῶς ἐποιήσατε ὑποδεξάμενοι ὡς διακόνους θεοῦ. οὐκ ἐκ χαρίστοις τῷ κυρίῳ ὑπὲρ ύμῶν, ὅτι αὐτοῖς ἀνεπαύσατε κατὰ πάντα τρόπον. οὐδὲν ὑμῖν οὐ μὴ ἀπολείται.

2. ἀντίψυχον ύμῶν τὸ πνεῦμά μου καὶ τὰ δεσμά μου, ἀ ὑπερηφανίσατε οὐδὲ ἐπισκύνθητε, οὐδὲ ύμᾶς ἐπαίσχυνθησαί ἡ τελεία ἐλπίς.

Ἰησοῦς Χριστός.

XI

1. Ἡ προσευχὴ ύμῶν ἀπήλθεν ἐπὶ τὴν ἐκκλησίαν τῆς ἐν Ἀντιοχείᾳ τῆς Συρίας, ὅτεν δεδεμένος θεοπρεπεστάτους δεσμοῖς πάντας ἀστάξομαι, οὐκ ὑπὲρ ἄξιος ἐκείθεν εἶναι, ἐσχάτος αὐτῶν ὑπὸ κατὰ θέλημα δὲ κατηξιώθην, οὐκ ἐκ συνειδότος ἀλλ’ ἐκ χάριτος θεοῦ ἦν εὐχομαί τελείαν μοι.

1 ἀμοιβῇ B, ἀμοιβεὶ G, ἀμείβεται g(A), retribuat (= ἀμείβοι?) L.
2 Ἁβίον and it is possible that this, also found in g, is right, but Ἁβίον is transcriptionally more probable.
3 θεοῦ BA, Χριστοῦ θεοῦ G(L).
4 ἐλπίς BAg, πίστες GL.
IGNATIUS TO THE SMYRNAEANS, ix. i–xi. 1

bishop is serving the devil. 2. Let all things then abound to you in grace, for you are worthy. In all respects you have refreshed me, and may Jesus Christ give refreshment to you. You have loved me in my absence, and in my presence. God is your reward, and if for his sake you endure all things, you shall attain to him.

X

1. You did well to receive as deacons of God, Philo and Rheus Agathopous, who followed me in the cause of God; and they also give thanks to the Lord for your sake that you refreshed them in every way. Assuredly shall nothing be lost for you. 2. May my spirit be for your life, and my bonds, which you treated neither with haughtiness nor shame. And he who is perfect hope, Jesus Christ, shall not be ashamed of you.

XI

1. Your prayer reached the Church which is in Antioch in Syria, and I greet all men as one who comes thence in bonds which are most seemly in God's sight, though I am not worthy to be from thence, for I am the least of them; but by the will of God I have been thought worthy, not that I am conscious of deserts,1 but by the grace of God, and

1 Or, possibly, "by my own complicity"

263
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

δοθήναι, ίνα ἐν τῇ προσευχῇ οὕμων θεοῦ ἐπιτύχω. 2. ίνα οὖν οὕμων τέλειον γένηται τὸ ἐργον καὶ ἐπὶ γῆς καὶ ἐν υἱονασι, πρέπει εἰς τιμὴν θεοῦ χειροτονήσαι τὴν ἐκκλησίαν ὦμῶν θεοπρεσβεύτην, εἰς τὸ γενόμενον ἐν Συρίᾳ. 1 δυναχρῆναι αὐτοῖς, ὅτι εἰρημενουσιν καὶ ἀπέλαβον τὸ ἱδίον μέγεθος καὶ ἀπεκατεστάθη αὐτοῖς τὸ ἱδίον σωματείον. 3. ἑφάνη μοι οὖν θεοῦ 2 ἄξιον πράγμα, πέμψαι τινὰ τῶν ὑμετέρων μετ’ ἐπιστολῆς, ίνα συνδοξάσῃ τὴν κατὰ θεοῦ αὐτοῖς γενομένην εὐδίαν, καὶ ὅτι λιμένος ἡ ἐτύγχανον 3 τῇ προσευχῇ οὕμων. τέλειοι ὄντες τέλεια καὶ φρονεῖτε. θέλουσιν γὰρ οὕμων εἰ πράσσειν θεὸς ἔτοιμος εἰς τὸ παρέχειν. 4

Phl. 8, 15

XII

1. Ἀσπάζεται ὦμᾶς ἡ ἀγάπη τῶν ἁδελφῶν τῶν ἐν Τρωάδι, θευ καὶ γράφω ὦμῖν διὰ Βούρρου, 5 ὅν ἀπεστειλατε’μετ’ ἐμοῦ ἀμα Ἐφεσίους, τοῖς ἁδελφοῖς ὦμῶν, ὅσα κατὰ πάντα με ἀνέπαυσεν. καὶ ὄφελον πάντες αὐτῶν ἐμικρύντο, ὅταν ἐξεμπλάριον θεοῦ διακονίας. ἀμείβεται αὐτῶν ἡ χάρις κατὰ πάντα. 2. Ἀσπάζομαι τῶν ἁξίοθεν ἐπίσκοπον καὶ θεοπρεπὲς πρεσβυτέριον καὶ τοὺς συνδούλους μου διακόνους καὶ τοὺς κατ’ ἄνδρα καὶ κοινῆ πάντας ἐν ὀνόματι Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ καὶ τῇ σαρκὶ

1 ἐν Συρίᾳ Β(Α)g, ἐως Συρίας GL. 2 θεοῦ BLA, om. Gg. 3 ἑτυχον B. 4 παρέχειν Β, παρασχεῖν Gg. 5 Βόρρου B; the spelling of this varies considerably both here and in Eph. ii, 1, and Philad. xi, 2. It is possible that Βόρρος, which has some support in L is really right.
INGNATIUS TO THE SMYRNAEANS, XI. I–XII. 2

I pray that this may be given to me to the end, and that by your prayers I may attain to God. 2. In order then that your work may be perfect both on earth and in heaven, your Church ought to appoint for the honour of God a delegate of God to go to Syria, and congratulate them that they have gained peace, and have recovered their proper greatness, and that their proper constitution has been restored. 3. It appeared to me therefore a deed worthy of God for you to send one of your number with a letter to join in extolling the tranquillity which they have obtained from God, and that through your prayers they were now gaining a haven. As you are perfect, so also may your counsel be perfect. For if you desire to do well God is ready to help you.

XII

1. The love of the brethren who are at Troas salutes you, whence I am writing to you by Burrhus, whom you together with the Ephesians your brothers sent with me, and he has in every way refreshed me. Would that all imitated him, for he is a pattern of the ministry of God. In all things grace shall reward him. 2. I salute the godly bishop, and the revered presbytery, and the deacons my fellow-servants, and you all, individually and together, in the name of Jesus Christ, and in his flesh and blood,
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

αὐτοῦ καὶ τῷ αἴματι, πάθει τε καὶ ἀναστάσει σαρκικῇ τε καὶ πνευματικῇ, ἐν ἑνότητι θεοῦ καὶ ὕμων. χάρις ὕμων, ἔλεος, εἰρήνη, ὑπομονή διὰ παντὸς.

XIII

1. Ἀσπάζομαι τοὺς οἴκους τῶν ἄδελφῶν μου σὺν γυναιξὶ καὶ τέκνοις καὶ τὰς παρθένους τὰς λεγομένας χήρας. ἔρρωσθε μοι ἐν δυνάμει πατρός.  
2. Ἀσπάζομαι τὸν οἶκον Ταουίας, ἢν εὐχομαι ἑδρᾶσθαι πιστεῖ καὶ ἀγάπη σαρκικῇ τῇ καὶ πνευματικῇ. Ἀσπάζομαι Ἀλκην, τὸ ποθητὸν μοι ὄνομα, καὶ Δάφνου τὸν ἀσύγκριτον καὶ Ἑυτέκνου καὶ πάντας κατ' ὄνομα. ἔρρωσθε ἐν χάριτι θεοῦ.

ΠΡΟΣ ΠΟΛΥΚΑΡΠΟΝ ἸΓΝΑΤΙΟΣ.

'Ἰγνάτιος, ὁ καὶ Θεοφόρος, Πολυκάρπῳ ἐπισκόπῳ ἐκκλησίας Σμυρναίων, μᾶλλον ἐπισκοπημένῳ ὑπὸ θεοῦ πατρός καὶ κυρίου Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, πλεῖστα χαίρειν.

1 πατρὸς ΛΔ, πνεύματος G(g) "spirit." The difference in MSS would be between πρσ and πνς.
2 Ταουίας GL, Γαουίας Ag.

266
IGNATIUS TO POLYCARP

by his Passion and Resurrection both of flesh and spirit, in union with God and with you. Grace be to you, mercy, peace and endurance for ever.

XIII

1. I salute the families of my brethren with their Final greetings wives and children, and the maidens who are called widows. Farewell in the power of the Father. Philo who is with me greets you. 2. I salute the house of Tavia, and pray that she be confirmed in faith and love, both of the flesh and spirit. I salute Alce, a name most dear to me, and the incomparable Daphnus, and Euteclius, and all others by their several names. Farewell in the grace of God.

VII.—IGNATIUS TO POLYCARP.

Ignatius, who is also called Theophorus, to Polycarp, Greeting who is bishop of the Church of the Smyrnaeans, or rather has for his bishop God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ, abundant greeting.

1 It is not impossible that eπεκνοῦν is an adjective meaning "with good children," and referring to Daphnus. Zahn takes this view.

267
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

I

1. Ἀποδεχόμενος σου τὴν ἐν θεῷ γνώμην ἡδρασμένην ὡς ἐπὶ πέτραν ἁκίνητον, ὑπερδοξάζω, καταξιωθεὶς τοῦ πρωσώπου σου τοῦ ἀμώμου, οὐ δυνάμην ἐν θεῷ. 2. παρακαλῶ σε ἐν χάριτι ἡ ἐνδέδυσας, προσθέναι τῷ δρόμῳ σου καὶ πάντας παρακαλεῖν, ἵνα σώζωνται. ἐκδίκει σου τὸν τόπον ἐν πάσῃ ἐπιμελείᾳ σαρκικῇ τε καὶ πνευματικῇ τῆς ἐνώσεως φρόνιμῳ, ἵνα οὐδὲν ἀμείνων πάντας βάσταζε, ὡς καὶ σὲ ὁ κύριος πάντων ἀνέχου ἐν ἀγάπῃ, ἀστερ καὶ ποιεῖς. 3. προσευχαί σχόλαζε ἀδιαλείπτοις: αἰτοῦ σύνεσιν πλείονα ἢ ἔχεις γρηγόρει ἀκοίμητον πνεύμα κεκτημένος. τοῖς κατ’ ἄνδρα κατὰ ὁμοθείαν θεοῦ λάλεις πάντων τὰς νόσους βάσταζε ὡς τέλειος ἀθλητής. ὁποῦ πλείων κόπως, πολὺ κέρδος.

II

1. Καλοὺς μαθητὰς ἐδών φίλής, χάρις σοι οὐκ ἔστιν μᾶλλον τοὺς λοιμοτέρους ἐν πραότητι ὑπότασσε. οὐ πᾶν τραύμα τῇ αὐτῇ ἐμπλάστρῳ θεραπεύεται. τοὺς παροξυσμοὺς ἐμβροχαίς παῦε. 2. φρονίμος γίνον ὡς ὁ ὅφις ἐν ἀπασίν καὶ ἀκέραιος εἰς ἀεὶ ὡς ἡ περιστέρα. διὰ τοῦτο σαρκικὸς εἰ καὶ πνευματικός, ἵνα τὰ φαινόμενα σου εἰς πρόσ-

1 οἱ om. G, but the parallelism with ἡ περιστέρα shows that this is only an accident.

268
I

1. Welcoming your godly mind which is fixed as if on immovable rock, I glory exceedingly that it was granted me to see your blameless face wherein I would fain have pleasure in God. 2. I exhort you to press forward on your course, in the grace wherewith you are endued, and to exhort all men to gain salvation. Vindicate your office with all diligence, both of the flesh and spirit. Care for unity, for there is nothing better. Help all men, as the Lord also helps you; suffer all men in love, as you indeed do. 3. Be diligent with unceasing prayer. Entreat for wisdom greater than you have, be watchful and keep the spirit from slumbering. Speak to each individually after the manner of God. "Bear the sicknesses" of all as a perfect athlete. Where the toil is greatest, is the gain great.

II

1. If you love good disciples, it is no credit to you; rather bring to subjection by your gentleness the more troublesome. Not all wounds are healed by the same plaster. Relieve convulsions by fomentations. 2. "Be prudent as the serpent" in all things "and pure as the dove" for ever. For this reason you consist of flesh and spirit, that you may deal tenderly

1 No other translation is possible: "athlete" was, both then and later, a favourite name for Christians who strove to excel in virtue, especially in ascetic practices.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

ωπον κολακεύης· τὰ δὲ ἄρατα αἰτεὶ ἵνα σοι φανερωθῇ, ὅπως μηδενὸς λείπῃ καὶ παντὸς χαράσ-
ματος περισσεύῃς. 3. ο λοίρος ἀπαίτει σε, ὡς κυβερνήται ἄνεμους καὶ ὡς χειμαζόμενος λιμένα,
eἰς τὸ θεοῦ ἐπιτυχεῖν. νήφε, ὡς θεοῦ ἀθλητής·
tὸ θέμα ἀφθαρσία καὶ ἥη αἰώνιος, περὶ ἃς καὶ
ὃν πέπεισαι. κατὰ πάντα σου ἀντίψυχον ἐγὼ καὶ
τὰ δεσμά μου, ἡ γάτηςας.

III

1. Οἱ δοκοῦντες ἀξιόπιστοι εἶναι καὶ ἐτεροδι-
δασκαλοῦντες μὴ σε καταπλησσέτωσαι. στήθι ἐδραῖος ὡς ἄκμων τυπτόμενος. μεγάλου ἐστιν ἀθλητοῦ τὸ δέρεσθαι καὶ νικᾶν. μάλιστα δὲ ἐνεκεν θεοῦ πάντα ὑπομένειν ἡμᾶς δεῖ, ἵνα καὶ
αὐτὸς ἡμᾶς ὑπομείνῃ. 2. πλέον σπουδαῖοι γίνου
οὐ ἐλ. τοὺς καιροὺς καταμάνθανε. τὸν ὑπὲρ
καιρὸν προσδόκα, τὸν ἀχρον, τὸν ἄρατον, τὸν
dι᾽ ἡμᾶς ὑπομείνῃ, τὸν ἀψηλάφητον, τὸν ἀπαθῆ, τὸν
di᾽ ἡμᾶς πάθητον, τὸν κατὰ πάντα τρόπον δι᾽
ἠμᾶς ὑπομείναντα.

IV

1. Χὴραι μὴ ἀμελείσθωσαι μετὰ τὸν κύριον
σὺ αὐτῶν φροντιστῆς ἔσο. μηδὲν ἀνευ γνώμης
IGNATIUS TO POLYCARP, II. 2–IV. 1

with the things which appear visibly; but pray that the invisible things may be revealed to you, that you may lack nothing and abound in every gift. 3. The time calls on you to attain unto God, just as pilots require wind, and the storm-tossed sailor seeks a harbour.¹ Be sober as God's athlete. The prize² is immortality and eternal life, of which you have been persuaded. In all things I am devoted to you,—I and my bonds, which you loved.

III

1. Let not those that appear to be plausible, but teach strange doctrine, overthow you. Stand firm as an anvil which is smitten. The task of great athletes is to suffer punishment and yet conquer. But especially must we endure all things for the sake of God, that he also may endure us. 2. Be more diligent than you are. Mark the seasons. Wait for him who is above seasons, timeless, invisible, who for our sakes became visible, who cannot be touched, who cannot suffer, who for our sakes accepted suffering, who in every way endured for our sakes.

IV

1. Let not the widows be neglected. Be yourself their protector after the Lord. Let nothing be done

¹ The general meaning of this passage is fairly clear, but the details are hopelessly obscure. Possibly something has dropped out of the text.
² θέμα means a "money-prize," which was given in some of the Greek games instead of the στέφανος or crown.
σου γινέσθω μηδὲ σὺ ἄνευ θεοῦ τι πράσσε, ὅπερ οὐδὲ πράσσεις· εὐστάθει. 2. πυκνότερον συναγωγαὶ γινέσθωσαν ἐξ ὀνόματος πάντας ζήτει. 3. δούλους καὶ δούλας μὴ ὑπερηφάνει· ἀλλὰ μηδὲ αὐτοὶ φυσιούσθωσαν, ἀλλ’ εἰς δόξαν θεοῦ πλέον δουλευέτωσαν, ἵνα κρείττονος ἐλευθερίας ἀπὸ θεοῦ τύχωσιν. μὴ ἐράτωσαν ἀπὸ τοῦ κοινοῦ ἐλευθεροῦσθαι, ἵνα μὴ δοῦλοι εὑρεθῶσιν ἐπιθυμίας.

V

1. Τὰς κακοτεχνίας φεύγε, μᾶλλον δὲ περὶ τούτων ὁμιλίαν ποιοῦ. ταῖς ἀδελφαῖς μου προσλάλει, ἀγαπᾷν τὸν κύριον καὶ τοῖς συμβίους ἀρκεῖσθαι σαρκὶ καὶ ψυχῇ. ὁμοίως καὶ τοῖς ἀδελφοῖς μου παράγγελλε ἐν ὀνόματι Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, ἀγαπᾷν τὰς συμβίους ὡς ὁ κύριος τὴν ἐκκλησίαν. 2. ἐὰν τὸς δύναται ἐν ἁγίᾳ μένειν εἰς τιμὴν τῆς σαρκὸς τοῦ κυρίου, ἐν ἁκαννησίᾳ μενέτω. ἔάν καυχησται, ἀπώλετο, καὶ ἔάν γνώσιμον πλέον τοῦ ἐπισκόπου, ἐφθαρται. πρέπει δὲ τοῖς γαμοῦσι καὶ ταῖς γαμοῦσαις μετὰ γνώμης τοῦ ἐπισκόπου τὴν ἐνώσιν ποιεῖσθαι, ἵνα ὁ γάμος ἢ κατὰ κύριον καὶ μὴ κατ’ ἐπιθυμίαν. πάντα εἰς τιμὴν θεοῦ γινέσθω.

VI

1. Τῷ ἐπισκόπῳ προσέχετε, ἵνα καὶ ὁ θεὸς ἵμιν. ἀντίψυχον ἐγὼ τῶν ὑποτασσομένων τῷ ἐπισκόπῳ, πρεσβυτέρῳ, διακόνῳ· καὶ μετ’
without your approval, and do nothing yourself without God, as indeed you do nothing; stand fast.

2. Let the meetings be more numerous. Seek all by their name. 3. Do not be haughty to slaves, either men or women; yet do not let them be puffed up, but let them rather endure slavery to the glory of God, that they may obtain a better freedom from God. Let them not desire to be set free at the Church's expense, that they be not found the slaves of lust.

V

1. Flee from evil arts, but rather preach against them. Speak to my sisters that they love the Lord, and be content with their husbands in flesh and in spirit. In the same way enjoín on my brothers in the name of Jesus Christ "to love their wives as the Lord loved the Church." 2. If any man can remain in continence to the honour of the flesh of the Lord let him do so without boasting. If he boast he is lost, and if it be made known except to the bishop, he is polluted. But it is right for men and women who marry to be united with the consent of the bishop, that the marriage be according to the Lord and not according to lust. Let all things be done to the honour of God.

VI

1. Give heed to the bishop, that God may also give heed to you. I am devoted to those who are subject to the bishop, presbyters, and deacons; and may it be
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

αυτῶν μοι τὸ μέρος γένοιτο σχεῖν ἐν θεῷ. συγκοπιάτε ἀλλήλοις, συναθλείτε, συντρέχετε, συμπάσχετε, συγκοιμᾶσθε, συνεγείρεσθε ὡς θεοῦ οἰκονόμοι καὶ πάρεδροι καὶ ύπηρέται. 2. ἀρέσκετε ὧ στρατεύεσθε, ἀφ’ οὗ καὶ τὰ ὧν χαὶ κομίζεσθε μὴ τις υἱῶν δεσέρτωρ εὐρεθῇ. τὸ βάπτισμα υἱῶν μενέτω ὡς οἶνος, ἡ πίστις ὡς περικεφαλαία, ἡ ἀγάπη ὡς δόρυ, ἡ ὑπομονὴ ὡς πανοπλία. τὰ δεπόσιτα υἱῶν τὰ ἐργα υἱῶν, ἵνα τὰ ἀκκέπτα1 υἱῶν αξία κομίζοσθε. μακροθυμίσατε οὖν μετ’ ἀλλήλων ἐν πραότητι, ὡς ὁ θεὸς μεθ’ υἱῶν. ὀναίμην υἱῶν διὰ παντός.

VII

1. Ἐπειδὴ ἡ ἐκκλησία ἢ ἐν Ἀντιοχείᾳ τῆς Συρίας εἰρημένει, ὡς ἐδηλώθη μοι, διὰ τὴν προσευχήν υἱῶν,2 κἀγὼ εὐθυμότερος ἐγενόμην ἐν ἀμεριμνίᾳ θεοῦ, ἔναπτε διὰ τοῦ παθεῖν θεοῦ ἐπιτύχω, εἰσ τὸ εὐρεθήναι με ἐν τῇ ἀναστάσει3 υἱῶν μαθητὴν. 2. πρέπει, Πολύκαρπε θεομακαριστώτατε, συμβούλιον ἀγαγεῖν θεοπρεπεστάτων καὶ χειροτονῆσαι τινα, διὸ ἀγαπητῶν λίαν ἔχετε καὶ ἀοίκουν, ὅσ δυνησται θεοδρόμος καλείσθαι τοῦτον καταξιώσαι, ἵνα πορευθῆς εἰς Συρίαν δοξάσῃ υἱῶν τὴν ἀοίκουν ἀγάπην εἰς δόξαν θεοῦ. 3. Χριστιανὸς

1 The use of the Latin words is remarkable: δεσέρτωρ = desiderio, δεπόσιτα = deposita, and ἀκκέπτα = accepta.
2 διὰ τὴν προσευχὴν G, διὰ τῆς προσευχῆς Lg.
3 ἀναστάσει GL, αἰτήσει “through your intercession” gA.
IGNATIUS TO POLYCARP, VI. I—VII. 3

mine to have my lot with them in God. Labour with one another, struggle together, run together, suffer together, rest together, rise up together as God’s stewards and assessors and servants. 2. Be pleasing to him in whose ranks you serve, from whom you receive your pay,—let none of you be found a deserter. Let your baptism remain as your arms, your faith as a helmet, your love as a spear, your endurance as your panoply, let your works be your deposits that you may receive the back-pay¹ due to you. Be therefore long-suffering with one another in gentleness, as God is with you. May I have joy in you always.

VII

1. Since the Church which is in Antioch has peace through your prayers, as it has been reported to me, I was myself the more encouraged in the freedom from care given by God, if I may but attain to God through my sufferings, that I may be found your disciple at the resurrection.² 2. You ought, O Polycarp, most blessed of God, to summon a godly council, and elect someone who is very dear to you and is zealous, who can be called God’s courier; appoint him to go to Syria to glorify your zealous love to the glory of God. 3. A Christian has no power over himself, but

¹ It was the custom in the Roman army to pay to the soldiers only the half of any gratuities allowed them. The other half was “deposited” in a regimental savings bank, and was paid out to each soldier, when, and if, he was honourably discharged from the service.
² Or perhaps “a disciple at your resurrection.”
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

ἔαντον ἐξουσίαν οὐκ ἔχει, ἀλλὰ θεὸ σχολάζει. τότε τὸ ἐργον θεοῦ ἐστίν καὶ ἴμων, ὅταν αὐτὸ ἀπαρτίσητε. πιστεύω γὰρ τῇ χάριτι, ὅτι ἔτοιμοι ἐστε εἰς εὐποιόν θεῷ ἀνήκουσαν. εἰδὼς ἴμων τὸ σύντονον τῆς ἀληθείας, διὸ ὀλίγον ἴμας γράμματων παρεκάλεσα.

VIII

1. Ἐπεὶ πάσαις ταῖς ἐκκλησίαις οὐκ ἡδυνήθην γράψαι διὰ τὸ ἔξαιρον πλεῖν με ἀπὸ Τρωάδος εἰς Νεάπολιν, ὡς τὸ θέλημα προστάσσει, γράψεις ταῖς ἐμπροσθεν ἐκκλησίαις, ὡς θεοῦ γνώμην κεκτημένος, εἰς τὸ καὶ αὐτοὺς τὸ αὐτὸ ποιήσαι, (οἱ μὲν δυνάμενοι πεῖσον πέμψαι, οἱ δὲ ἐπιστολάς διὰ τῶν ὑπὸ σοῦ πεμπομένων, ἵνα δοξασθῆτε αἰωνίῳ ἔργῳ,) ὡς ἄξιος ὁμ. 2. ἀσπάζομαι πάντας ἐξ ὕνωματος καὶ τῆν τοῦ Ἐπιτρόπου σὺν ὅλῳ τῷ οἰκῳ αὐτῆς καὶ τῶν τέκνων. ἀσπάζομαι Ἄτολον τὸν ἀγαπητὸν μου. ἀσπάζομαι τὸν μέλλοντα καταξιωθαι τοῦ εἰς Συρίαν πορεύεσθαι. ἔσται ἡ χάρις μετ' αὐτοῦ διὰ παντὸς καὶ τοῦ πέμποντος αὐτὸν Πολυκάρπου. 3. ἐρρῶσθαι ἴμας διὰ παντὸς ἐν θεῷ ἴμων Ἰησοῦ Χριστῷ εὐχόμαι, ἐν οἴ διαμείνητε ἐν εὐστηθθε παντὶ ἴμας ἀσπάζομαι Ἄλκην, τὸ ποθητὸν μοι ὑμώμα. ἐρρωσθε ἐν κυρίῳ.

1 Ἐπεὶ GA, Ἐπεὶ ὁμ. Lg.
2 The combination of singular and plural is very strange. I makes all singular, A all plural. The punctuation given is in the main Lightfoot's, but even so the sentence is unsatisfactory.
ignatius to polycarp, vii. 3–viii. 3

gives his time to God. This is the work of God and of yourselves, when you complete it. For I believe in the grace of God, that you are ready to do the good deeds which are proper for God. I exhort you by no more than these few lines, for I recognise your fervour for the truth.

viii

1. since I could not write to all the Churches because of my sudden sailing from Troas to Neapolis as the will of God enjoins, you shall write as one possessing the mind of God to the Churches on the road in front of me, that they also shall treat me in the same way (let those who can send messengers, and the others send letters through those whom you send, that you may be glorified by a memorable deed), as is worthy of you.

2. I greet all by name, and the wife of the procurator with the whole house of herself and her children. I greet my beloved attalus. I greet him who shall be appointed to go to Syria. Grace will be with him through all, and with polycarp, who sends him. 3. I bid you farewell always in our God, Jesus Christ; may you remain in him in the unity and care of God. I greet Alice, a name very dear to me. Farewell in the Lord.

1 The modern Cavalla, on the coast of Macedonia, between Constantinople and Salonica; the Roman road comes down to the sea there, and is still in fair preservation.

2 Modern English obscures the fact that this “you” is plural. The others are singular.

3 Or, perhaps, “of Epitopus.”
THE EPISTLE OF POLYCARP TO THE PHILIPPIANS
THE EPISTLE OF POLYCARP TO
THE PHILIPPIANS.

Polycarp was the Bishop of Smyrna in the first
half of the second century, and was martyred, in all
probability, on February 23rd, 155 A.D., at the age of
eighty-six. He had been a disciple of John, and
opinions differ as to whether this John was the son
of Zebedee, or John the Presbyter.

According to Irenaeus¹ Polycarp wrote several
epistles, but only one is extant. This is the epistle
sent to the Philippians in connection with Ignatius.

The object of the epistle is apparently partly to
warn the Philippians against certain disorders in the
Church at Philippi, and especially against apostasy;
but it appears to have been immediately called for
by the desire of the Philippians to make a collection
of the letters of Ignatius. They had written to
Polycarp to help him in this task, and the letter to
the Philippians is, as we should say, a “covering
letter” for the copies which Polycarp sends of all
the Ignatian epistles to which he had access. It is
interesting to notice that the one epistle which
neither Polycarp nor the Philippians could easily
obtain would be that to the Romans, and that it is

¹ Adv. Haer. v. 33. 4.

280
POLYCARP TO THE PHILIPPIANS

this letter which in the Ignatian MSS. seems to have had a different textual history from that of the other six.

The epistle is preserved in eight defective Greek MSS., representing a single archetype, in two long quotations in Eusebius, and in a Latin version contained in the Latin version of the Corpus Ignatianum (see p. 171). The reconstructed archetype of the Greek MSS. is quoted as G, that of the Latin MSS, as L, and Eusebius as Eus. A full collation of the individual Greek and Latin MSS. is given by Lightfoot.
ΤΟΥ ΑΓΙΟΥ ΠΟΛΥΚΑΡΠΟΥ
ΕΠΙΣΚΟΠΟΥ ΣΜΤΡΗΣ ΚΑΙ ΙΕΡΟΜΑΡΤΥΡΟΣ
ΠΡΟΣ ΦΙΛΙΠΠΗΣΙΟΤΣ ΕΠΙΣΤΟΛΗ

Πολύκαρπος καὶ οἱ σὺν αὐτῷ πρεσβύτεροι
tῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ τοῦ θεοῦ τῇ παροικοῦσῃ
Φιλίττονπος ἐξεσοῦ ὑμῖν καὶ εἰρήνη παρὰ
θεοῦ παντοκράτορος καὶ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ
tοῦ σωτήρος ἡμῶν πληθυνθείη.

I

1. Συνεχάρην υμῶν μεγάλως ἐν τῷ κυρίῳ ἡμῶν
Ἰησοῦ Χριστῷ, δεξαμένως τὰ μυμήματα τῆς
ἀληθοῦς ἀγάπης καὶ προπέμψας, ὥσ ἐπέβαλεν
ὑμῖν, τοὺς ὑπενελήμενους τοὺς ἀγιοπρεπεῖς δεσμοῖς,
αὕτω ἐστὶν διαδήματα τῶν ἀληθῶς ὑπὸ θεοῦ καὶ
τοῦ κυρίου ἡμῶν ἐκλελειμένων. 2. καὶ ὅτι ἡ
βεβαία τῆς πίστεως υμῶν ρίζα, εἴ ἀρχαῖοι
καταγγελλομένη χρόνων, μέχρι νῦν διαμένει καὶ
καρποφορεῖ εἰς τὸν κύριον ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ,
ὅς υπέμεινεν ὑπὲρ τῶν ἀμαρτίων ἡμῶν ἐως θανάτου
κατανήσαι, δεν ἡγείρεν ὁ θεὸς, λύσας τὰς ἀδιάνας
τοῦ ἁδου. 3. εἰς δὲν οὐκ ἰδόντες πιστεύετε χαρᾶ

Acts. 2, 24
I Pet. 1, 8
282
THE

EPISTLE TO THE PHILIPPIANS
OF SAINT POLYCARP
BISHOP OF SMYRNA AND HOLY MARTYR

Poly-carp and the Elders with him to the Church Greeting
of God sojourning in Philippi; mercy and peace
from God Almighty and Jesus Christ our
Saviour be multiplied to you.

I

1. I rejoice greatly with you in our Lord Jesus Christ that you have followed the pattern of true love, and have helped on their way, as opportunity was given you, those who were bound in chains, which become the saints, and are the diadems of those who have been truly chosen by God and our Lord. 2. I rejoice also that your firmly rooted faith, which was famous in past years, still flourishes and bears fruit unto our Lord Jesus Christ, who endured for our sins, even to the suffering of death, "whom God raised up, having loosed the pangs of Hades, 3. in whom, though you did not see him, you believed in unspeakable and
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

Eph. 2, 5, 8, 9 ἀνεκλαλήτω καὶ δεδοξασμένη, εἰς ἐν πολλοὶ ἐπιθυμοῦσιν εἰσελθεῖν, εἰδότες, ὅτι χάριτι ἐστε σεσωσμένοι, οὐκ ἔξ ἐργῶν, ἀλλὰ θελήματι θεοῦ διὰ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ.

II

1. Διδ ἀναζωσάμενοι τὰς ὁσφύας ὑμῶν δουλεύ- σατε τῷ θεῷ ἐν φόβῳ καὶ ἀληθείᾳ, ἀπολυτότες τὴν κενὴν ματαιολογίαν καὶ τὴν τῶν πολλῶν πλάνην, πιστεύσαντες εἰς τὸν ἐγείραντα τὸν κύριον ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν ἐκ νεκρῶν καὶ δόντα αὐτῷ δόξαν καὶ θρόνον ἐκ δεξιῶν αὐτοῦ. ὃ ὑπετάγη τὰ πάντα ἐπουράνια καὶ ἐπίγεια, ὃ πᾶσα πνεύματα ἡλικεῖν, ζητεῖ κρίσεως ζωτῶν καὶ νεκρῶν, οὔτε τὸ αἷμα ἐκζητήσεις ὁ θεὸς ἀπὸ τῶν ἀπειθοῦντων αὐτῷ. 2. ὁ δὲ ἐγείρας αὐτὸν ἐκ νεκρῶν καὶ ἡμᾶς ἐγερεῖ, εἰς τὸν ποιῶμεν αὐτὸν τὸ θέλημα καὶ πορευό- μεθα ἐν ταῖς ἐντολαῖς αὐτοῦ καὶ ἀγαπῶμεν ἢ ἡγάπησεν, ἀπεχόμενοι πάσης ἁδικίας, πλεονεξίας, φιλαργυρίας, καταλαλίας, πειθομαρτυρίας· μὴ ἀποδιδόντες κακὸν ἀντὶ κακοῦ ἡ λοιδορία ἀντὶ λοιδορίας ἡ γρόνον ἀντὶ γρόνου ἡ κατάραν ἀντὶ κατάρας· 3. μην μονομενουστες δὲ ὅπεν εἴπεν ὁ κύριος διδάσκων· Μὴ κρίνετε, ἵνα μὴ κρίθητε· ἄφιετε, καὶ ἀφεθήσεται ὑμῖν ἐλεητε· ἵνα ἐλεηθῆτε· ὁ μέτρῳ μετρεῖτε, ἀντιμετρηθήσεται ὑμῖν καὶ ὅτι μακάριοι οἱ πτωχοὶ καὶ οἱ διωκόμενοι ἐνεκεῖν δικαιοσύνης, ὅτι αὐτῶν ἔστιν ἡ βασιλεία τοῦ θεοῦ.

284
POLYCARP TO THE PHILIPPIANS, I. 3—II. 3

glorified joy,"—into which joy many desire to come, knowing that "by grace ye are saved, not by works but by the will of God through Jesus Christ.

II

1. "Wherefore girding up your loins serve God in fear" and truth, putting aside empty vanity and vulgar error, "believing on him who raised up our Lord Jesus Christ from the dead and gave him glory," and a throne on his right hand, "to whom are subject all things in heaven and earth," whom all breath serves, who is coming as "the Judge of the living and of the dead," whose blood God will require from them who disobey him. 2. Now "he who raised him" from the dead "will also raise us up" if we do his will, and walk in his commandments and love the things which he loved, refraining from all unrighteousness, covetousness, love of money, evil speaking, false witness, "rendering not evil for evil, or railing for railing," or blow for blow, or curse for curse, 3: but remembering what the Lord taught when he said, "Judge not that ye be not judged, forgive and it shall be forgiven unto you, be merciful that ye may obtain mercy, with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again," and, "Blessed are the poor, and they who are persecuted for righteousness' sake, for theirs is the Kingdom of God."
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

III

1. Ταῦτα, ἀδελφοί, οὐκ ἐμαυτῷ ἐπιτρέψας γράφω ύμιν περὶ τῆς δικαιοσύνης, ἀλλ' ἔπει ὑμεῖς προσεπεκαλέσασθε με. 2. οὔτε γὰρ ἐγὼ οὔτε ἄλλος ὁμοίος ἐμὸι δύναται κατακολούθησαι τῇ σοφίᾳ τοῦ μακαρίου καὶ ἐνδόξου Παύλου, δι' γενόμενος ἐν ύμιν κατὰ πρόσωπον τῶν τότε ἀνθρώπων ἐδίδαξεν ἀκριβῶς καὶ βεβαιῶς τὸν περὶ ἀληθείας λόγον, ὅσοι καὶ ἄπων ύμιν ἐγραψεν ἐπιστολάς, εἰς ὃς ἦν ἐγκύπτητε, δυνηθήσεσθε οἰκοδομεῖσθαι εἰς τὴν δοθείαν ύμῖν πίστιν. 3. ήτις ἐστὶν μῆτηρ πάντων ἡμῶν, ἐπακολούθουσας τῆς ἐλπίδος, προσοχοῦσας τῆς ἀγάπης τῆς εἰς θεὸν καὶ Χριστὸν καὶ εἰς τὸν πλησίον. ἐὰν γάρ τις τούτων ἐντὸς ἡ, πεπλήρωκεν ἐντολὴν δικαιοσύνης· ὁ γὰρ ἔχων ἀγάπην μακρὰν ἐστὶν πάσης ἁμαρτίας.

IV

1. Ἀρχῇ δὲ πάντων χαλεπῶν φιλαργυρία. εἰδότες οὖν ὅτι οὐδὲν εἰσηνεγκαμέν εἰς τὸν κόσμον, ἀλλ' οὐδὲ ἐξενεγκείν τι ἔχομεν, ὁπλισώμεθα τοῖς ὁπλοῖς τῆς δικαιοσύνης καὶ ἀνταὐτοῖς πρῶτον πορεύεσθαι ἐν τῇ ἐντολῇ τοῦ κυρίου. 2. ἔπειτα καὶ τὰς γυναῖκας ἡμῶν ἐν τῇ δοθείᾳ ἀνταὐτών πίστει καὶ ἀγάπῃ καὶ ἁγνείᾳ στεργοῦσας

---

1 The MSS read ύμῶν "your," but the confusion between ὑμῶν and ἡμῶν is so common that "our" may safely be restored.

286
III

1. These things, brethren, I write to you concerning righteousness, not at my own instance, but because you first invited me. 2. For neither am I, nor is any other like me, able to follow the wisdom of the blessed and glorious Paul, who when he was among you in the presence of the men of that time taught accurately and steadfastly the word of truth, and also when he was absent wrote letters to you, from the study of which you will be able to build yourselves up into the faith given you; 3. “which is the mother of us all” when faith follows, and love of God and Christ and neighbour goes before. For if one be in this company he has fulfilled the command of righteousness, for he who has love is far from all sin.

IV

1. “But the beginning of all evils is the love of money.” Knowing therefore that “we brought nothing into the world and we can take nothing out of it,” let us arm ourselves with the armour of righteousness, and let us first of all teach ourselves to walk in the commandment of the Lord; 2. next teach our wives to remain in the faith given to them, and in love and purity, tenderly loving their
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

tous eanwv anvrdas en pase altheia kal agapwvas pantas e" xisou en pase enkrateia, kai ta tekna paideuven thn paideian tou fobou tou theou:
3. tas xeras sophronousas peri thn thn kuriou
pistin, entychanovousas adiaileptov peri pantov,
maqoan oussas paseis diabolis, katalalais,
pevdomarturias, filargurias kai pantos kakov,
ginwssousas oti eiol thesiasthirion theou kai oti
panta mawmoskopeteita, kal lelthev autov oude
ouste logismov ouste ennoiwh ouste ti tvwn kruptov
ths kardias.

I Cor. 14, 25

V

Gal. 6, 7
1. Eidothes, ou, oti theos ou mukthritetai,
ofeiloamen a"iwhs ths entolhs autov kal dozhs
periapateiv. 2. omioi diakonoi amempto katest-
omegaion autov ths dikaiosunikis ois theou kai
Christo diakonoi kai ouk anbropow
m" dia-
boloi, m" didogoi, afilarhroi, enkrateis peri
panta, eusplagchnoi, etimelis, porenomenoi kata
thi altheian tou kuriou, os en exeto diakonos
pantov f" ean euvresthaimen ev tvwn aiwhi,
apolhpolouba kal tvn melonta, kathws upoicheto
hmwn egeira hmaes ev nekroin, kal oti ean polite-
swmeba a"iwhs autov, kal sambasileusomen autov,
eige pistevomev. 3. omioi kai nevteroi amempe-
toi ev pasin, pro pantos prosoounites anveias
kal kaiunagoyntes eanvtous apto pantos kakov.
kalo gr to anavostesai apto tvn epistumenv
ev tv koymo, oti pas sta episthima kata tov
pnevmatos strefteita, kal ouste p oralov ouste
288
husbands in all truth, and loving all others equally in all chastity, and to educate their children in the fear of God. 3. Let us teach the widows to be discreet in the faith of the Lord, praying ceaselessly for all men, being far from all slander, evil speaking, false witness, love of money, and all evil, knowing that they are an altar of God, and that all offerings are tested, and that nothing escapes him of reasonings or thoughts, or of "the secret things of the heart."

1. Knowing then that "God is not mocked" we ought to walk worthily of his commandment and glory. 2. Likewise must the deacons be blameless before his righteousness, as the servants of God and Christ and not of man, not slanderers, not double-tongued, not lovers of money, temperate in all things, compassionate, careful, walking according to the truth of the Lord, who was the "servant of all." For if we please him in this present world we shall receive from him that which is to come; even as he promised us to raise us from the dead, and that if we are worthy citizens of his community, "we shall also reign with him," if we have but faith. 3. Likewise also let the younger men be blameless in all things; caring above all for purity, and curbing themselves from all evil; for it is good to be cut off from the lust of the things in the world, because "every lust warreth against the Spirit, and neither fornicators nor the effeminate nor sodomites shall
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

μαλακοὶ οὗτε ἀρσενοκοῖται βασιλείαν θεοῦ κληρονομήσουσιν, οὗτε οἱ ποιοῦντες τὰ ἀτοπα. διὸ δέον ἀπέχεσθαι ἀπὸ πάντων τούτων, ὑποτασσόμενοι τοῖς πρεσβυτέροις καὶ διακόνοις ὡς θεοὶ καὶ Χριστὸς τὰς παρθένους ἐν ἀμώμῳ καὶ ἀγνῇ συνειδησεί περιπατεῖν.

VI

1. Καὶ οἱ πρεσβύτεροι δὲ εὐσπλαγχνοι, εἰς πάντας ἔλεημονες, ἐπιστρέφοντες τὰ ἀποσπασματικὰ, ἐπισκεπτόμενοι πάντας ἁπαντεῖς, ἡ ἁμελεύτεις χήρας ἢ ὀρφανοῦ ἢ πένητος. ἀλλὰ προνοοῦντες ἀεὶ τοῦ καλοῦ ἑνώπιον θεοῦ καὶ ἀνθρώπων, ἀπεχόμενοι πάσης ὀργῆς, προσωποληψίας, κρίσεως ἁδίκου, μακρὰν ὅτες πάσης φιλαργυρίας, μὴ ταχέως πιστεύοντες κατὰ τινὸς, μὴ ἀπότομοι ἐν κρίσει, εἰδότες ὅτι πάντες ὄφειλέται ἐσμὲν ἀμαρτίας. 2. εἰ οὖν δεόμεθα τοῦ κυρίου, ἢν ἡμῖν ἀφῇ, ὀφείλομεν καὶ ἡμεῖς ἀφιέναι· ἀπέναντι γὰρ τῶν τοῦ κυρίου καὶ θεοῦ ἐσμὲν ὀφθαλμῶν, καὶ πάντας δεῖ παραστῆναι τῷ βήματι τοῦ Χριστοῦ καὶ ἐκαστον ὑπὲρ αὐτοῦ λόγον δοῦναι. 3. οὕτως οὖν δουλεύσωμεν αὐτῷ μετὰ φόβου καὶ πάσης εὐλαβείας, καθὼς αὐτὸς ἐνετείλατο καὶ οἱ εὐαγγελισάμενοι ἡμᾶς ἀπόστολοι καὶ οἱ προφήται, οἱ προκηρύσσαντες τὴν ἐλευσίν τοῦ κυρίου ἡμῶν· ξηλωταὶ περὶ τὸ καλὸν, ἀπεχόμενοι τῶν σκανδάλων καὶ τῶν ψευδάδελφων καὶ τῶν ἐν ὑποκρίσει φερόντων τὸ ὄνομα τοῦ κυρίου, οὕτως ἀποπλανῶσι κενοὺς ἀνθρώπους.

290
POLYCARP TO THE PHILIPPANS, v. 3–vi. 3

inherit the Kingdom of God," nor they who do iniquitous things. Wherefore it is necessary to refrain from all these things, and to be subject to the presbyters and deacons as to God and Christ. The virgins must walk with a blameless and pure conscience.

VI

1. And let the presbyters also be compassionate, merciful to all, bringing back those that have wandered, caring for all the weak, neglecting neither widow, nor orphan nor poor, but "ever providing for that which is good before God and man," refraining from all wrath, respect of persons, unjust judgment, being far from all love of money, not quickly believing evil of any, not hasty in judgment, knowing that "we all owe the debt of sin." 1

2. If then we pray the Lord to forgive us, we also ought to forgive, for we stand before the eyes of the Lord and of God, and "we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ, and each must give an account of himself." 3

3. So then "let us serve him with fear and all reverence," as he himself commanded us, and as did the Apostles, who brought us the Gospel, and the Prophets who foretold the coming of our Lord. Let us be zealous for good, refraining from offence, and from the false brethren, and from those who bear the name of the Lord in hypocrisy, who deceive empty-minded men.

1 The introductory formula "knowing that" renders it probable that these words are a quotation, but the source is unknown.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

VII

I Joh. 4, 2, 3; II Joh. 7
1. Πᾶς γὰρ ὃς ἀν μη ὀμολογη Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν ἐν σαρκὶ ἐληλυθέναι, ἀντιχριστός ἐστιν καὶ ὃς ἀν μη ὀμολογη τὸ μαρτύριον τοῦ σταυροῦ, ἔκ τοῦ διαβόλου ἐστὶν καὶ ὃς ἀν μεθοδευῇ τὰ λόγια τοῦ κυρίου πρὸς τὰς ἑδρὰς ἐπιθυμίας καὶ λέγῃ μῆτε ἀνάστασιν μῆτε κρίσιν, οὗτος πρωτοτοκὸς ἐστὶ τοῦ σατανᾶ. 2. διὸ ἀπολυπόντες τὴν ματαιότητα τῶν πολλῶν καὶ τὰς ψευδοδασκαλίας ἐπὶ τὸν εὐαρχῆς ἡμῶν παραδοθέντα λόγου ἐπιστρέψωμεν, νήφοντες πρὸς τὰς εὐχὰς καὶ προσκαρτεροῦντες νηστείαις, δεησεσίν αἰτοῦμεν τὸν παντεπόπτην θεὸν μὴ εἰσενεχκεῖν ἡμᾶς εἰς πειρασµόν, καθὼς εἶπεν ὁ κύριος. Τὸ μὲν πνεῦμα πρόθυμον, ἢ δὲ σὰρξ ἀσθενής.

VIII

I Tim. 1, 1
1. Ἀδιαλείπτως οὖν προσκαρτερῶμεν τῇ ἐλπίδῃ ἡμῶν καὶ τῷ ἀραβῷ τῆς δικαιοσύνης ἡμῶν, ὡς ἐστὶ Χριστὸς Ἰησοῦς, διὸ ἀνήγγειλεν ἡμῶν τὰς ἁμαρτίας τῷ ἱδρῷ σώματι ἐπὶ τὸ ἅδη, ὡς ἁμαρτίαις οὐκ ἔποιήσεν, οὐδὲ εὑρέθη δόλος ἐν τῷ στόματι αὐτοῦ, ἀλλὰ δι’ ἡμᾶς, ἵνα ἄγγειλεν ἐν αὐτῷ πάντα ὑπερεβεβείν. 2. μιμητὰς όν περίκρητον ὑπομονής αὐτοῦ, καὶ εὰν πάσχωμεν διὰ τὸ ὄνομα αὐτοῦ, δοξάζωμεν αὐτὸν. τοῦτον γὰρ ἡμῖν τὸν ὑπογραμμὸν ἔθηκε δι’ ἑαυτοῦ, καὶ ἡμεῖς τούτῳ ἐπιστεύσαμεν.

292
VII

1. "For everyone who does not confess that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is an anti-Christ"; and whosoever does not confess the testimony of the Cross is of the devil: and whosoever perverts the oracles of the Lord for his own lusts, and says that there is neither resurrection nor judgment,—this man is the first-born of Satan. 2. Wherefore, leaving the foolishness of the crowd, and their false teaching, let us turn back to the word which was delivered to us in the beginning, "watching unto prayer" and persevering in fasting, beseeching the all-seeing God in our supplications "to lead us not into temptation," even as the Lord said, "The spirit is willing, but the flesh is weak."

VIII

1. Let us then persevere unceasingly in our hope, and in the pledge of our righteousness, that is in Christ Jesus, "who bare our sins in his own body on the tree, who did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth," but for our sakes, that we might live in him, he endured all things. 2. Let us then be imitators of his endurance, and if we suffer for his name’s sake let us glorify him. For this is the example which he gave us in himself, and this is what we have believed.

1 This phrase, according to Irenaeus (Adv. Haer. iii. 3, 4.) was applied, presumably later, by Polycarp to Marcion.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

IX

1. Παρακαλῶ σὺν πάντας ὑμᾶς, πειθαρχεῖν τῷ λόγῳ τῆς δικαιοσύνης καὶ ἀσκείν πάσαν ὑπόμονήν, ἵνα καὶ εἴδατε κατ' ὀφθαλμοὺς οὐ μόνον ἐν τοῖς μακαρίοις Ἰγνατίῳ καὶ Ζωσίμῳ καὶ Ρούφῳ, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἐν ἄλλοις τοῖς ἑξ ὑμῶν καὶ ἐν αὐτῷ Παύλῳ καὶ τοῖς λοιποῖς ἀποστόλοις. 2. πεπεισμένους ὅτι υἱῶν πάντες οὕκ εἰς κενὸν ἔδραμον, ἀλλ' ἐν πίστει καὶ δικαιοσύνη, καὶ ὅτι εἰς τὸν Πhil. 2, 16
I Clem. 5, 4 ὁφειλόμενον αὐτοῖς τόπον εἰσὶ παρὰ τῷ κυρίῳ, ὃς καὶ συνετάθην. οὐ γὰρ τὸν νῦν ἡγάπησαν αἰώνα, ἀλλὰ τὸν ὑπὲρ.ἡμῶν ἀποθανόντα καὶ δι' ἡμᾶς ὑπὸ τοῦ θεοῦ ἀναστάντα.

X

1. In his ergo state et domini exemplar sequimini, firmi in fide et immutabiles, fraternitatis amatores, I Cor. 15, 58
I Pet. 3, 8 (2, 17);
Joh. 18, 84;
Rom. 18, 8 etc.
I Pet. 5, 5;
Eph. 5, 21

2. Cum possitis benefacere, nolite differre, quia eleēmosyna de morte liberat. Omnes vobis invicem
subiecti estote, conversationem vestram irrepressibilem habentes in gentibus, ut ex bonis operibus
vestris et vos laudem accipiantis et dominus in vobis

1 τῷ λόγῳ τῆς δικαιοσύνης GL, om. Eus.
2 Here G breaks off, but the rest of the sentence is given by L Eus.

294
IX

1. Now I beseech you all to obey the word of righteousness, and to endure with all the endurance which you also saw before your eyes, not only in the blessed Ignatius, and Zosimus, and Rufus, but also in others among yourselves, and in Paul himself, and in the other Apostles; 2. being persuaded that all of these “ran not in vain,” but in faith and righteousness, and that they are with the Lord in the “place which is their due,” with whom they also suffered. For they did not “love this present world” but him who died on our behalf, and was raised by God for our sakes.

X

1. Stand fast therefore in these things and follow the example of the Lord, “firm and unchangeable in faith, loving the brotherhood, affectionate to one another,” joined together in the truth, forestalling one another in the gentleness of the Lord, despising no man. 2. When you can do good defer it not, “for almsgiving sets free from death; be ye all subject one to the other, having your conversation blameless among the Gentiles,” that you may receive praise “for your good works” and that the Lord be not blasphemed in you. 3. “But woe to him
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

non blasphemetur. 3. Vae autem, per quem nomen domini blasphematur. Sobrietatem ergo docete omnes, in qua et vos conversamini.

XI

1. Nimis contristatus sum pro Valente, qui presbyter factus est aliquando apud vos, quod sic igno- ret is locum qui datus est ei. Moneo itaque ut abstineatis vos ab avaritia et sitis casti1 veraces. Abstinete vos ab omni malo. 2. Qui autem non potest se in his gubernare, quomodo alii pronuntiat hoc? Si quis non se abstinuerit ab avaritia, ab idololatria coinquinabitur et tamquam inter gentes iudicabitur, qui ignorant iudicium domini. Aut nescimus, quia sancti mundum iudicabunt? sicut Paulus docet. 3. Ego autem nihil tale sensi in vobis vel audivi, in quibus laboravit beatus Paulus, qui estis in principio epistulae eius. De vobis etenim gloriatur in omnibus ecclesiis, quae dominum2 solae tunc cognoverant; nos autem nondum cognoveramus. 4. Valde ergo, fratres, contristor pro illo et pro coniuge eius, quibus det dominus paenitentiam veram. Sobrii ergo estote et vos in hoc; et non sicut inimicos tales existimetis, sed sicut passabilia membra et errantia eos revocate, ut omnium vestrum corpus salvetis. Hoc enim agentes vos ipsos aedificatis.

1 An et after casti would be natural, but it is only found in two of the MSS of L.
2 Some MSS. of L read deum instead of dominum.

296
through whom the name of the Lord is blasphemed." Therefore teach sobriety to all and show it forth in your own lives.

XI

1. I am deeply sorry for Valens, who was once made a presbyter among you, that he so little understands the place which was given to him. I advise, therefore, that you keep from avarice, and be pure and truthful. Keep yourselves from all evil. 2. For how may he who cannot attain self-control in these matters enjoin it on another? If any man does not abstain from avarice he will be defiled by idolatry, and shall be judged as if he were among the Gentiles who "know not the judgment of God." Or do we "not know that the saints shall judge the world?" as Paul teaches. 3. But I have neither perceived nor heard any such thing among you, among whom the blessed Paul laboured, who are praised in the beginning of his Epistle. 4. Therefore, brethren, I am deeply sorry for him [i.e. Valens] and for his wife, and "may the Lord grant them true repentance." Therefore be yourselves also moderate in this matter, and "do not regard such men as enemies," but call them back as fallible and straying members, that you may make whole the body of you all. For in doing this you edify yourselves.

1 The Greek was perhaps τοῖς ὀσίων ἐν ἀρχῇ ἐπιστολαῖς αυτοῦ, and ought to be rendered "who were his epistles in the beginning," with a reference to II Cor. 3, 2.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

XII

1. Confido enim vos bene exercitatos esse in sacrís literis et nihil vos latet; mihi autem non est concessum. Modo, ut his scripturis dictum est, irascimini et nolite peccare, et sol non occidat super iracundiam vestram. Beatus, qui meminerit; quod ego credo esse in vobis. 2. Deus autem et pater domini nostri Iesu Christi, et ipse sempiternus pontifex, dei filius Iesus Christus, aedificet vos in fide et veritate et in omni mansuetudine et sine iracundia et in patientia et in longanimitate et tolerantia et castitate; et det vobis sortem et partem inter sanctos suos et nobis vobiscum et omnibus, qui sunt sub caelo, qui credituri sunt in dominum nostrum et deum ¹ Iesum Christum et in ipsius patrem, qui resuscitavit eum a mortuis. 3. Pro omnibus sanctis orate. Orate etiam pro regibus et potestatibus et principibus atque pro sequentibus et odientibus vos et pro inimicis crucis, ut fructus vester manifestus sit in omnibus, ut sitis in illo perfecti.

XIII

1. Ἐγράψατε ἃ, μοι καὶ ὑμεῖς καὶ Ἰωανίτιος, ᾿Ιωνίτιος, ὑν', ἐὰν τις ἀπέρχηται εἰς Συρίαν, καὶ τὰ παρ' ὑμῶν

¹ Et deum is omitted by some of the MSS of L.
² The Greek is here again available from the quotation in Eusebius.

298
XII

1. For I am confident that you are well versed in the Scriptures, and from you nothing is hid; but to me this is not granted. Only, as it is said in these Scriptures, "Be ye angry and sin not," and "Let not the sun go down upon your wrath." Blessed is the man who remembers this, and I believe that it is so with you. 2. Now may God and the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, and the "eternal Priest" himself, Jesus Christ, the Son of God, build you up in faith and truth, and in all gentleness, and without wrath, and in patience, and in longsuffering, and endurance, and purity, and may he give you lot and part with his saints, and to us with you, and to all under heaven who shall believe in our Lord and God Jesus Christ and in his "Father who raised him from the dead." 3. "Pray for all the saints. Pray also for the Emperors," and for potentates, and princes, and for "those who persecute you and hate you," and for "the enemies of the Cross" that "your fruit may be manifest among all men, that you may be perfected" in him.

XIII

1. Both you and Ignatius wrote to me that if anyone was going to Syria he should also take your

1 Probably this ought to be regarded as a quotation from the letter of the Philippians to Polycarp.

2 Pro regibus is no doubt a translation of ὑπὲρ βασιλέων and βασιλέως is regularly used as the title of the Emperor.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

ἀποκομίσῃ γράμματα· ὅπερ ποιήσω, ἔδω λάβω καιρὸν εὐθεῖαν, εἰτε ἐγώ, εἰτε ὅν πέμπω ὁ πρεσβεύοντα καὶ περὶ υμῶν. 2. τὰς ἐπιστολὰς Ἰγνατίου τὰς πεμφθείσας ἡμῖν ὑπ’ αὐτοῦ καὶ ἄλλας, ὅσα εἰχόμεν παρ’ ἡμῖν, ἐπέμψαμεν ἡμῖν, καθὼς ἐνετείλασθε· αὕτις ὑποτεταγμέναι εἰσὶν τῇ ἐπιστολῇ ταύτῃ, ἐξ ὧν μεγάλα ὠφεληθῆναι δυνήσεσθε. περιέχουσι γὰρ πίστιν καὶ ὑπομονήν καὶ πᾶσαν οἰκοδομήν τὴν εἰς τὸν κύριον ἡμῶν ἀνήκουσαν. Et de ipso Ignatius et de his, qui cum eo sunt, quod certius agnoveritis, significate.

XIV

Haec vobis scripsi per Crescentem, quem in prae senti commendavi vobis et nunc commendo. Conversatus est enim nobiscum inculpabiliter; credo quia et vobiscum similiter. Sororem autem eius liaebitis commendatam, cum venerit ad vos. Incolumes estote in domino Iesu Christo in gratia cum omnibus vestris. Amen.

1 πέμπω Eus. misero (=πέμψω) L.
POLYCARP TO THE PHILIPPIANS, xiii. i–xiv. 1

letters. I will do this if I have a convenient oppor-
tunity, either myself or the man whom I am sending
as a representative for you and me. 2. We send you,
as you asked, the letters of Ignatius, which were sent
to us by him, and others which we had by us.
These are subjoined to this letter, and you will be
able to benefit greatly from them. For they contain
faith, patience, and all the edification which pertains
to our Lord. Let us know anything further which
you have heard about Ignatius himself and those who
are with him.

XIV

1. I have written this to you by Crescens, whom I
commended to you when I was present, and now
commend again. For he has behaved blamelessly
among us, and I believe that he will do the same
with you. His sister shall be commended to you
when she comes to you. Farewell in the Lord Jesus
Christ in grace, with all who are yours. Amen.
THE DIDACHE, OR TEACHING OF THE TWELVE APOSTLES
THE DIDACHE, OR TEACHING OF
THE TWELVE APOSTLES

The Didache, or Teaching of the Twelve Apostles, is one of the most important discoveries of the second half of the nineteenth century. There are several references in early Christian literature to a book with this or a similar title, and by applying the methods of comparative criticism to documents which had probably made use of it, especially the "Apostolic Constitutions" and the "Church Ordinances," a rough reconstruction of some of its features had been obtained; but it was not known to be extant until Bryennios in 1875 discovered it in the Patriarchal library of Jerusalem at Constantinople, in the manuscript which also contains I and II Clement and is quoted for them as C.

This is the document of which a text and translation is given in the following pages. But the question still remains open how far it truly represents the original "Teaching." Since Bryennios' discovery two copies of a Latin version either of a part of our Didache, or of a cognate document have been discovered, and it would now be possible to use
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

at least four authorities for the text of the original "Teaching." These are:

(1) Bryennios' Didache = C.
(2) The Latin version.
(3) The "Church Ordinances" (usually quoted as KO).

All these authorities have to be considered in any attempt to reconstruct the original "Teaching." Their mutual relations are not clear; it is possible that Bryennios' Didache, and the Apostolic Constitutions represent a second recension of the "Teaching" and that the Latin version, KO, and the reconstructed "fifth source" represent, though not in relatively so pure a form, the first recension.

The question may be best studied in Funk's edition of the Didache, and in Harnack's Geschicht der altchristlichen Literatur.

Besides this there is a further question: it is clear that the Didache or "Teaching" was itself a composite document, and the first part is always known as "The Two Ways." A moment's comparison shows that this part is closely connected with the last chapters of the Epistle of Barnabas. The problem therefore arises whether Barnabas used the Didache (or the original "Teaching"), or the Didache used Barnabas, or both used a common source. The matter is not clear, but probably the majority of scholars incline to the last view, and many think that the common source,—the original "Two Ways"

1 Harnack, probably rightly, suggests others as well. See his Geschicht der altchristlichen Literatur, pp. 86 ff.
THE DIDACHE

—was a Jewish pre-Christian document, used for catechetical purposes, perhaps especially among Proselytes.

The chronology of this complex document is very obscure. The original "Two Ways" may be early first century or even earlier. The original "Teaching" is probably early second century, or possibly earlier, and the second recension of the "Teaching," represented by C, can scarcely be later than the second century, though it is possible that a few phrases in C may represent textual accretions.

As it stands the Didache may be described as a manual of Church instruction. The first part, "The Two Ways," is a statement of the principles of Christian conduct, which is to be taught to catechumens before their baptism (chaps. i–vi); then follows a series of instructions as to the practice of Christian worship, Baptism, Fasting, the Eucharist, the discrimination and treatment of Apostles¹ and Prophets, the Worship on Sunday, Bishops and Deacons (chaps. vii–xv); finally a short statement of the eschatological hope is appended for the warning and encouragement of Christians.

The text given in the following pages is that of C (published in photographic facsimile by Dr. Rendel Harris). The very few necessary corrections (except obvious mistakes) have been noted at the foot of the page.

¹ It should be noted that "Apostle" in the Didache does not mean a member of "the Twelve," but is merely an inspired teacher who is engaged in preaching, especially to those as yet unconverted,—very much what is now called a Missionary.
ΔΙΔΑΧΗ ΤΩΝ ΔΩΔΕΚΑ ΑΠΟΣΤΟΛΩΝ

Διδαχή κυρίου διὰ τῶν δώδεκα ἀποστόλων τοῖς ἔθνεσιν.

I

1. Ὅδοι δύο εἰσί, μία τῆς ζωῆς καὶ μία τοῦ θανάτου, διαφορὰ δὲ πολλὴ μεταξὺ τῶν δύο ὁδῶν.

2. Ἡ μὲν οὖν ὁδὸς τῆς ζωῆς ἐστὶν αὕτη· πρῶτον ἀγαπήσεις τὸν θεὸν τὸν ποιήσαντά σε, δεύτερον τὸν πλησίον σου ὡς σεαυτόν· πάντα δὲ ὅσα ἔαν θελήσῃς μὴ γίνεσθαι σοι, καὶ σὺ ἄλλος μὴ ποιεῖ.

3. Τούτων δὲ τῶν λόγων ἡ διδαχή ἐστιν αὕτη· εὐλογεῖτε τοὺς καταραμένους ὑμῖν καὶ προσεύχεσθε ὑπὲρ τῶν ἐχθρῶν ὑμῶν, νηστεύετε δὲ ὑπὲρ τῶν διωκόντων ὑμᾶς· ποῖα γὰρ χάρις, ἐὰν ἀγαπᾶτε τοὺς ἀγαπώντας ὑμᾶς; οὐχὶ καὶ τὰ ἔθνη τὸ αὐτὸ ποιοῦσιν; ὑμεῖς δὲ ἀγαπᾶτε τοὺς μισοῦντας ὑμᾶς, καὶ οὐχ ἔξετε ἐχθρόν. 4. ἀπέχου τῶν σαρκικῶν καὶ σωματικῶν ἐπιθυμιῶν· ἐὰν ἂν τίς
THE DIDACHE, OR TEACHING OF THE TWELVE APOSTLES

The Lord’s teaching to the heathen by the Twelve Apostles.

I

1. There are two Ways, one of Life and one of Death, and there is a great difference between the two Ways.

2. The Way of Life is this: “First, thou shalt love the God who made thee, secondly, thy neighbour as thyself; and whatsoever thou wouldst not have done to thyself, do not thou to another.”

3. Now, the teaching of these words is this: “Bless those that curse you, and pray for your enemies, and fast for those that persecute you. For what credit is it to you if you love those that love you? Do not even the heathen do the same?”

But, for your part, “love those that hate you,” and you will have no enemy.

4. “Abstain from carnal” and bodily “lusts.” “If any man smite thee on the

1 This is the so-called “negative form of the Golden Rule.” It is found in some MSS. in the “Apostolic decrees” in Acts xv. 28, and is, in various forms, met with in Jewish and Early Christian literature.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

Mt. 5, 59 48 σοι δοὺς πάπισμα εἰς τὴν δεξιάν σιαγόνα, στρέψον
Mt. 5, 41. 40 αὐτῷ καὶ τὴν ἀλλην, καὶ ἐσῃ τελειος: εὰν ἄγγα-
Luke 6, 80 ρεύσῃ σὲ τὶς μίλιων ἐν, ὑπαγε μετ' αὐτοῦ δύο: εὰν
Luke 6, 80 ἀργὴ τὸς ἰματίων σου, δὸς αὐτῷ καὶ τὸν χιτῶνα-
εἰς λάβῃ τας ἀπ' σου τὸ σον, μὴ ἀπαίτεις: οὐδὲ
γὰρ δύνασαι. 5. παντὶ τῷ αἰτοῦτι σὲ δίδου καὶ
μὴ ἀπαίτεις πᾶσι γὰρ θέλει δίδοσθαι ο πατὴρ ἐκ
τῶν ἰδίων χαρισμάτων. μακάριος ο δίδους κατὰ
τὴν ἐντολήν. 1 άθως γὰρ ἔστιν. οὐαί τῷ λαμβά-
νοντι εἰ μὲν γὰρ χρείαν ἔχων λαμβάνει τις, ἀθρός
ἔσται. ο δὲ μὴ χρείαν ἔχων δῶσει δίκην, ἰνατί
ἐλαβε καὶ εἰς τί· εἰν συνοχῇ δὲ γενόμενος ἐξετασ-
θήσεται περὶ ὧν ἐπραξε, καὶ οὐκ ἐξελεύσεται
ἐκεῖθεν, μέχρις οὐ ἀποδῷ τὸν ἐσχατὸν κοδράτην.
6. ἀλλὰ καὶ περὶ τούτου δὲ εἰρήται: Ἰδρωσάτω ἡ
ἐλεημοσύνη σου εἰς τὰς χειρᾶς σου, μέχρις ἂν
γυφίς τίνι δός.

II

Mt. 19, 18

1. Δευτέρα δὲ ἐντόλη τῆς δίδαξης. 2. οὐ
φονεύσεις, οὐ μοιχεύσεις, οὐ παιδοφθορήσεις, οὐ
πορνεύσεις, οὐ κλέψεις, οὐ μαγεύσεις, οὐ φαρμακεύσεις, οὐ φονεύσεις τεκνῶν ἐν φθορᾷ, οὐδὲ

1 This passage is found in the 4th mandate of Hermas, and suggests that this part of the Didache is later than Hermas (c. 140 A.D.).

310
right cheek, turn to him the other cheek also,” and thou wilt be perfect. “If any man impress thee to go with him one mile, go with him two. If any man take thy coat, give him thy shirt also. If any man will take from thee what is thine, refuse it not”—not even if thou canst. 5. Give to everyone that asks thee, and do not refuse, for the Father’s will is that we give to all from the gifts we have received. Blessed is he that gives according to the mandate; for he is innocent. Woe to him who receives; for if any man receive alms under pressure of need he is innocent; but he who receives it without need shall be tried as to why he took and for what, and being in prison he shall be examined as to his deeds, and “he shall not come out thence until he pay the last farthing.” 6. But concerning this it was also said, “Let thine alms sweat into thine hands until thou knowest to whom thou art giving.”

II

1. But the second commandment of the teaching is this; 2. “Thou shalt do no murder; thou shalt not commit adultery”; thou shalt not commit sodomy; thou shalt not commit fornication; thou shalt not steal; thou shalt not use magic; thou shalt not use philtres; thou shalt not procure abortion, nor

1 The Greek is literally “for thou art not even able”; but this makes no sense, and though an emendation is difficult the sense must be something like that given by the translation—unless, indeed, the whole phrase be merely a flippant gloss, which has been erroneously taken into the text.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

Exod. 20, 17 γεννηθεὶν ἀποκτενεῖς, οὐκ ἐπιθυμήσεις τὰ τοῦ
πλησίου. 3. οὐκ ἐπιστρέψεις, οὐ πευδομαρτυρή-
σεις, οὐ κακολογήσεις, οὐ μμησικάκησεις. 4. οὐκ
ἐσῃ δυνάμων οὐδὲ δυνάμων, παγίς γὰρ
θανάτου ἢ δυνάμωσια. 5. οὐκ ἔσται ὁ λόγος σου
ψευδής, οὐ κενός, ἀλλὰ μεμεστωμένως πράξει.
6. οὐκ ἔσῃ πλεονέκτησις οὐδὲ ἄρταξις οὐδὲ ὑποκρίτη
οὐδὲ κακοήθης οὐδὲ ὑπερήφανος, οὐ λήψῃ βου-
λήν πονηράν κατὰ τοῦ πλησίου σου. 7. οὐ
μυσήσεις πάντα ἀνθρωπίνου, ἀλλὰ οὐς μὲν ἐλέγχεις,
περὶ δὲ ὧν προσεύξῃ, οὐς δὲ ἀγαπήσεις ὑπὲρ τὴν
ψυχήν σου.

III

1. Τέκνον μοι, φεῦγε ἀπὸ παντὸς πονηροῦ καὶ
ἀπὸ παντὸς ὁμοίου αὐτοῦ. 2. μὴ γίνου ὀργίλος,
οἴηγει γὰρ ἡ ὀργὴ πρὸς τὸν φόνον, μὴ δὲ
ζηλω-
tῆς μηδὲ ἐριστικὸς μηδὲ θυμικός· ἐκ γὰρ τοῦτων
ἀπάντων φόνου γεννώνται. 3. τέκνον μου, μὴ
γίνου ἐπιθυμητής, ὀἴηγει γὰρ ἡ ἐπιθυμία πρὸς
τὴν πορνείαν, μὴ δὲ αἰσχρολογὸς μηδὲ ὑπηλοφ-
θαλμός· ἐκ γὰρ τούτων ἀπάντων μοιχεῖαι γεν-
νώνται. 4. τέκνον μου, μὴ γίνου ὀἰωνοσκόπος,
ἐπειδὴ ὀἴηγει εἰς τὴν εἰδολολατρίαν, μηδὲ ἑπαο-
δὸς μηδὲ μαθηματικὸς μηδὲ περικαθαίρως, μηδὲ
θέλει αὐτὰ βλέπειν· ἐκ γὰρ τούτων ἀπάντων εἰδολο-
λατρία γεννᾶται. 5. τέκνον μου, μὴ γίνου ψεύτης,
ἐπειδὴ ὀἴηγει τὸ ψεύδος εἰς τὴν κλοπήν, μηδὲ
φιλάργυρος μηδὲ κενόδοξος· ἐκ γὰρ τούτων ἀπάν.
THE DIDACHE, II. 2-III. 5

commit infanticide; "thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's goods"; 3. thou shalt not commit perjury, "thou shalt not bear false witness"; thou shalt not speak evil; thou shalt not bear malice. 4. Thou shalt not be double-minded nor double-tongued, for to be double-tongued is the snare of death. 5. Thy speech shall not be false nor vain, but completed in action. 6. Thou shalt not be covetous nor extortionate, nor a hypocrite, nor malignant, nor proud, thou shalt make no evil plan against thy neighbour. 7. Thou shalt hate no man; but some thou shalt reprove, and for some shalt thou pray, and some thou shalt love more than thine own life.

III

1. My child, flee from every evil man and from all like him. 2. Be not proud, for pride leads to murder, nor jealous, nor contentious, nor passionate, for from all these murders are engendered. 3. My child, be not lustful, for lust leads to fornication, nor a speaker of base words, nor a lifter up of the eyes, for from all these is adultery engendered. 4. My child, regard not omens, for this leads to idolatry; neither be an enchanter, nor an astrologer, nor a magician, neither wish to see these things, for from them all is idolatry engendered. 5. My child, be not a liar, for lying leads to theft, nor a lover of money, nor vain-glorious, for from all these things

1 On the ground of a comparison with Jude 22 f. etc., some think that "and some thou shalt pity" ought to be added.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

tων κλοπαλ γεννώνται. 6. τέκνον μου, μη γίνου γόγγυσεος, ἐπειδὴ ὄδηγει εἰς τὴν βλασφημίαν, μηδὲ αὐθάδης μηδὲ πονηρόφρων ἐκ γὰρ τούτων ἀπάντων βλασφημίαι γεννώνται. 7. Ἰσθι δὲ πραῖς, ἐπεὶ οἱ πραῖες κληρονομίσουσι τὴν γῆν. 8. γίνου μακρόθυμος καὶ ἐλεήμων καὶ ἀκακος καὶ ἑσύχιος καὶ ἁγαθὸς καὶ τρέμων τοὺς λόγους διὰ παντός, οὐς ἦκουσας. 9. οὐχ ὑψώσεις σεαυτὸν οὐδὲ δώσεις τῇ ψυχῇ σου θράσος. οὐ κολληθήσεται ἡ ψυχή σου μετὰ ψυχῶν, ἀλλὰ μετὰ δικαίων καὶ ταπεινῶν ἀναστραφῆς. 10. τὰ συμβαίνοντά σοι ἐνεργήματα ὡς ἁγαθὰ προσδέξῃ, εἰδὼς ὅτι ἀτέρθεον οὐδὲν γίνεται.

IV

1. Τέκνον μου, τοῦ λαλοῦντός σοι τὸν λόγον τοῦ θεοῦ μνησθῆσῃ υμεῖς καὶ ἡμέρας, τιμήσεις δὲ αὐτὸν ὡς κύριον ὅθεν γὰρ ἡ κυριότης λαλεῖται, ἐκεί κύριος ἑστιν. 2. ἐκέχησεις δὲ καθ' ἡμέραν τὰ πρόσωπα τῶν ἁγίων, ἵνα ἐπαναπαθής τοῖς λόγοις αὐτῶν. 3. οὐ ποθήσεις ἕκσιμα, εἰρηνεύσεις δὲ μαχομένους κρίνεις δικαίως, οὐ λήψῃ πρόσωπον ἐλέγξαι ἐπὶ παραπτώμασιν. 4. οὐ διψυχήσεις, πότερον ἐσται ἡ οὐ.

5. Μὴ γίνου πρὸς μὲν τὸ λαβεῖν ἐκτείνων τὰς χεῖρας, πρὸς δὲ τὸ δοῦναι συστῶν. 6. ἐὰν ἔχῃς

1 The editors usually emend to ποθήσεις “make.”

314
THE DIDACHE, iii. 5-iv. 6

are thefts engendered. 6. My child, be not a grumbler, for this leads to blasphemy, nor stubborn, nor a thinker of evil, for from all these are blasphemies engendered, 7. but be thou "meek, for the meek shall inherit the earth;" 8. be thou long-suffering, and merciful and guileless, and quiet, and good, and ever fearing the words which thou hast heard. 9. Thou shalt not exalt thyself, nor let thy soul be presumptuous. Thy soul shall not consort with the lofty, but thou shalt walk with righteous and humble men. 10. Receive the accidents that befall to thee as good, knowing that nothing happens without God.

IV

1. My child, thou shalt remember, day and night, him who speaks the word of God to thee, and thou shalt honour him as the Lord, for where the Lord's nature is spoken of, there is he present. 2. And thou shalt seek daily the presence of the saints, that thou mayest find rest in their words. 3. Thou shalt not desire a schism, but shalt reconcile those that strive. Thou shalt give righteous judgment; thou shalt favour no man's person in reproving transgression. 4. Thou shalt not be of two minds whether it shall be or not.

5. Be not one who stretches out his hands to receive, but shuts them when it comes to giving. 6. Of
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

diα τῶν χειρῶν σου, δόσεις λύτρωσιν ἀμαρτίων σου. 7. οὐ διστάσεις δοῦναι οὐδὲ διδοὺς γογγύσεις· γνώση γάρ, τις ἐστίν ὁ τοῦ μισθοῦ καλὸς ἀνταποδότης. 8. οὐκ ἀποστραφήσῃ τὸν ἐνδεόμενον, συγκοινωνήσεις δὲ πάντα τῷ ἄδελφῷ σου καὶ οὐκ ἔρεις ἵδια εἶναι· εἰ γὰρ ἐν τῷ ἀθανάτῳ κοινωνοῦ ἔστε, πόσῳ μᾶλλον ἐν τοῖς θυντοῖς;

9. Οὐκ ἀρείς τὴν χειρᾶ σου ἀπὸ τοῦ νυμοῦ σου ἢ ἀπὸ τῆς θυγατρός σου, ἀλλὰ ἀπὸ νεότητος διδάξεις τὸν φόβον τοῦ θεοῦ. 10. οὐκ ἐπιτάξεις δούλῳ σου ἢ παιδίσκην, τοῖς ἐπὶ τὸν αὐτὸν θεὸν ἔλπίζουσιν, ἐν πικρίᾳ σου, μὴ ποτὲ οὐ μὴ φοβηθήσονται τὸν ἐπὶ ἀμφότεροις θεοῖς· οὐ γὰρ ἔρχεται κατὰ πρόσωπον καλέσαι, ἀλλ᾽ ἐφ᾽ ὅς τὸ πνεῦμα ἡτοίμασεν. 11. Ὑμεῖς δὲ οἱ δοῦλοι ὑποταγήσεσθε τοῖς κυρίοις ὑμῶν ὡς τύπῳ θεοῦ ἐν αἰσχύνῃ καὶ φόβῳ.


V

Mt. 15, 19
1. Ἡ δὲ τοῦ θανάτου ὁδὸς ἐστὶν αὕτη· πρῶτον πάντων πονηρά ἐστί καὶ κατάρας μεστή· φόνοι, μοιχείαι, ἐπιθυμίαι, πορνείαι, κλοπαί, εἰδωλο-

316
THE DIDACHE, iv. 6–v. 1

whatsoever thou hast gained by thy hands thou shalt give a ransom for thy sins. 7. Thou shalt not hesitate to give, nor shalt thou grumble when thou givest, for thou shalt know who is the good Paymaster of the reward. 8. Thou shalt not turn away the needy, but shalt share everything with thy brother, and shalt not say that it is thine own, for if you are sharers in the imperishable, how much more in the things which perish?

9. Thou shalt not withhold thine hand from thy son or from thy daughter, but thou shalt teach them the fear of God from their youth up. 10. Thou shalt not command in thy bitterness thy slave or thine handmaid, who hope in the same God, lest they cease to fear the God who is over you both; for he comes not to call men with respect of persons, but those whom the Spirit has prepared. 11. But do you who are slaves be subject to your master, as to God’s representative, in reverence and fear.

12. Thou shalt hate all hypocrisy, and everything that is not pleasing to the Lord. 13. Thou shalt not forsake the commandments of the Lord, but thou shalt keep what thou didst receive, “adding nothing to it and taking nothing away.” 14. In the congregation thou shalt confess thy transgressions, and thou shalt not betake thyself to prayer with an evil conscience. This is the way of life.

V

1. But the Way of Death is this: First of all, it is The Way of Death wicked and full of cursing, murders, adulteries, lusts, fornications, thefts, idolatries, witchcrafts, charms,
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

λατρία, μαγεία, φαρμακία, ἁρπαγή, ψευδο-
μαρτυρία, ύποκρίσεις, διπλοκαρδία, δόλος, ὑπερ-
φανία, κακία, αὐθάδεια, πλεονεξία, αἰσχρολογία,
ξηλοτυπία, θρασύτης, ὑψωτότης, ἀλαζονεία. 2. διώκ-
tαι ἁγαθῶν, μισοῦντες ἀλῆθειαν, ἁγαπῶντες
ψεύδος, οὗ γινώσκοντες μισθὸν δικαιοσύνης, οὗ
κολλώμενοι ἁγαθῶ ὑπὲρ κρίσεις δικαία, ἀγνωσ-
νοῦντες οὐκ εἰς τὸ ἁγαθὸν, ἀλλ' εἰς τὸ ποιητὸν
ὁν μακρὰν πραύτης καὶ ὑπομονὴ, μᾶταια ἁγα-
pῶντες, διώκοντες ἀνταπόδομα, οὐκ ἔλεοῦντες
πτωχῶν, οὗ πονοῦντες ἐπὶ καταπολεμοῦντος, οὗ
γινώσκοντες τὸν ποιητὰν αὐτούς, φονεῖς τέκνων,
φθορεῖς πλάσματος θεοῦ, ἀποστρεφόμενοι τὸν
ἐνδεόμενον, καταπολεμοῦντες τὸν θλιβόμενον, πλου-
sίων παράκλητον, πενήτων ἄνομοι κριταί,
pανθαμάρτητοι, ῥυσθείτε, τέκνα, ἀπὸ τούτων
ἀπάντων.

VI

Mt. 24, 4

1. "Ορα, μὴ τίς σε πλανήσῃ ἀπὸ ταύτης τῆς
ὸδοῦ τῆς διδαχῆς, ἐπει ταρακτὸς θεοῦ σε διδάσκεις.
2. εἰ μὲν γὰρ δύνασαι βαστάσαι δῶρον τὸν ζυγὸν
τοῦ κυρίου, τέλειος ἐστὶ εἰ δ' οὐ δύνασαι, δ' ἁπλὴν,
tοῦτο ποίει. 3. περὶ δὲ τῆς βρόψεως, δ' δύνασαι
βάστασαι· ἀπὸ δὲ τοῦ εἰδωλοθυτοῦ λιαν πρόσεχε·
λατρεία γὰρ ἐστὶ θεῶν νεκρῶν.

VII

Mt. 28, 19

1. Περὶ δὲ τοῦ βαπτίσματος, οὗ τω βαπτίσατε:
tαῦτα πάντα προειπόντες, βαπτίσατε εἰς τὸ
318
THE DIDACHE, V. I—VII. I

robberies, false witness, hypocrisy, a double heart, fraud, pride, malice, stubbornness, covetousness, foul speech, jealousy, impudence, haughtiness, boastfulness. 2. Persecutors of the good, haters of truth, lovers of lies, knowing not the reward of righteousness, not cleaving to the good nor to righteous judgment, spending wakeful nights not for good but for wickedness, from whom meekness and patience is far, lovers of vanity, following after reward, unmerciful to the poor, not working for him who is oppressed with toil, without knowledge of him who made them, murderers of children, corrupters of God's creatures, turning away the needy, oppressing the distressed, advocates of the rich, unjust judges of the poor, altogether sinful; may ye be delivered, my children, from all these.

VI

1. See "that no one make thee to err" from this Final exhortation Way of the teaching, for he teaches thee without God. 2. For if thou canst bear the whole yoke of the Lord, thou wilt be perfect, but if thou canst not, do what thou canst. 3. And concerning food, bear what thou canst, but keep strictly from that which is offered to idols, for it is the worship of dead gods.

VII

1. Concerning baptism, baptise thus: Having first Baptism rehearsed all these things, "baptise, in the Name of
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

ὁνόμα τοῦ πατρὸς καὶ τοῦ νικοῦ καὶ τοῦ ἀγίου πνεύματος ἐν ὑδατὶ ζωτικ. 2. ἔδει μὴ ἔχεις ὕδωρ ζωτ., εἰς ἀλλο ὕδωρ βάπτισον εἰ δ' οὐ δύνασαι ἐν ψυχρῷ, ἐν θερμῷ. 3. ἔδει ἀμφότερα μὴ ἔχεις, ἐκχεον εἰς τὴν κεφαλὴν τρίς ὕδωρ εἰς ὅνομα πατρὸς καὶ νικοῦ καὶ ἀγίου πνεύματος. 4. πρὸ δὲ τοῦ βαπτίσματος προνηστευσάτω ὁ βαπτίζων καὶ ὁ βαπτιζόμενος καὶ εἰ τινὲς ἄλλοι δύνανται κελεύεις δὲ νηστεύεις τὸν βαπτιζόμενον πρὸ μᾶς ἢ δύο.

VIII

Mt. 6, 16
1. Αἱ δὲ νηστεύει οὐδὲν μὴ ἐστωσαν μετὰ τῶν ὑποκριτῶν. νηστεύοντι γὰρ δευτέρα σαββάτων καὶ πέμπτην, ύμεῖς δὲ νηστεύσατε τετράδα καὶ παρασκευὴν. 2. μηδὲ προσεύχεσθε ὡς οἱ ὑποκριταί, ἀλλ` ὡς ἐκέλευσεν ὁ κύριος ἐν τῷ εὐαγγελίῳ αὐτοῦ, οὕτω προσεύχεσθε. Πάτερ ἡμῶν ὁ ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ, ἀγιασθῆτω τὸ ὄνομά σου, ἐλθέτω ἡ βασιλεία σου, γενηθῆτω τὸ θέλημά σου ὡς ἐν οὐρανῷ καὶ ἐπὶ γῆς τὸν ἄρτον ἡμῶν τὸν ἐπιούσιον δὸς ἡμῖν σήμερον, καὶ ἀφέτε ἡμῖν τὴν ὁφειλήμην ἡμῶν, ὡς καὶ ἡμεῖς ἀφίεμεν τοῖς ὁφειλέταις ἡμῶν, καὶ μὴ εἰσενέγκης ἡμᾶς εἰς πειράσμαν, ἀλλὰ ῥῦσαι ἡμᾶς ἀπὸ τοῦ πονηροῦ· ὅτι σοῦ ἐστίν ἡ δύναμις καὶ ἡ δόξα εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας. 3. τρὶς τῆς ἡμέρας οὕτω προσεύχεσθε.

Mt. 6, 5

Mt. 6, 9–13

320
THE DIDACHE, vii. i–viii. 3

the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit," in running water; 2. but if thou hast no running water, baptise in other water, and if thou canst not in cold, then in warm. 3. But if thou hast neither, pour water three times on the head "in the Name of the Father, Son and Holy Spirit." 4. And before the baptism let the baptiser and him who is to be baptised fast, and any others who are able. And thou shalt bid him who is to be baptised to fast one or two days before.

VIII

1. Let not your fasts be with the hypocrites, for fasting they fast on Mondays and Thursdays, but do you fast on Wednesdays and Fridays. 2. And do not pray as the hypocrites, but as the Lord commanded in his Gospel, pray thus: "Our Father, who art in Heaven, hallowed be thy Name, thy Kingdom come, thy will be done, as in Heaven so also upon earth; give us to-day our daily bread, and forgive us our debt as we forgive our debtors, and lead us not into trial, but deliver us from the Evil One, for thine is the power and the glory for ever." 3. Pray thus three times a day.

1 This is the traditional translation of ἐπιούσιον, but it is by no means certain that it is correct. The word has from the beginning been a puzzle, and its meaning is not clearly known. See further any good commentary on the gospels.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

IX

1. Περὶ δὲ τῆς εὐχαριστίας, οὕτως εὐχαριστήσατε. 2. πρῶτον περὶ τοῦ ποτηρίου. 1 Εὐχαριστοῦμεν σοι, πάτερ ἡμῶν, ὑπὲρ τῆς ἁγίας ἀμπέλου Δανείδ τοῦ παιδὸς σου, ἣς ἑγνώρισας ἡμῖν διὰ Ἰησοῦ τοῦ παιδὸς σου. σοὶ ὡδὲ εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας. 3. περὶ δὲ τοῦ κλάσματος. Εὐχαριστοῦμεν σοι, πάτερ ἡμῶν, ὑπὲρ τῆς ζωῆς καὶ γνώσεως, ἣς ἑγνώρισας ἡμῖν διὰ Ἰησοῦ τοῦ παιδὸς σου. σοὶ ὡδὲ εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας. 4. ὡσπερ ἦν τοῦτο τὸ 2 κλάσμα διεσκορπισμένον ἐπάνω τῶν ὅρεων καὶ συναχθὲν ἐγένετο ἐν, οὕτω συναχθήτω σου ἡ ἐκκλησία ἀπὸ τῶν περάτων τῆς γῆς εἰς τὴν σὴν βασιλείαν. ὅτι σοῦ ἔστιν ὡδὲ καὶ ἡ δύναμις διὰ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας. 5. μηδέπερ δὲ φαγέτω μηδὲ πιέτω ἀπὸ τῆς εὐχαριστίας ὑμῶν, ἀλλ' οἱ βαπτισθέντες εἰς νομομα κυρίον καὶ γὰρ περὶ τούτου εἰρηκεν ὁ κύριος. Μὴ δῶτε τὸ ἄγιον τοῖς κυσί.

X

1. Μετὰ δὲ τὸ ἐμπλησθῆναι οὕτως εὐχαριστήσατε. 2. Εὐχαριστοῦμεν σοι, πάτερ ἁγιε, ὑπὲρ τοῦ ἄγιου ὅνοματός σου, οὐ κατεσκήνωσας ἐν ταῖς

1 It is noteworthy that this order “first the Cup” is only found elsewhere in the earliest text of Lc. 22, 17 ff. (which omits v. 20) and perhaps in I. Cor. 10, 16.

2 τὸ om. C.
IX

1. And concerning the Eucharist, hold\(^1\) Eucharist thus: 2. First concerning the Cup, "We give thanks to thee, our Father, for the Holy Vine of David thy child, which thou didst make known to us through Jesus thy child; to thee be glory for ever." 3. And concerning the broken Bread: "We give thee thanks, our Father, for the life and knowledge which thou didst make known to us through Jesus thy child. To thee be glory for ever. 4. As this broken bread was scattered upon the mountains, but was brought together and became one, so let thy Church be gathered together from the ends of the earth into thy kingdom, for thine is the glory and the power through Jesus Christ for ever." 5. But let none eat or drink of your Eucharist except those who have been baptised in the Lord's Name. For concerning this also did the Lord say, "Give not that which is holy to the dogs."

X

1. But after you are satisfied with food, thus give The final thanks: 2. "We give thanks to thee, O Holy Father, prayer for thy Holy Name which thou didst make to taber-

\(^1\) The translation fails to preserve the play on the words, which might be rendered "concerning the giving of thanks, give thanks thus, etc." But this would obscure the fact that \(\epsilon\chi\alpha\rho\iota\sigma\tau\iota\alpha\) is here quite clearly "Eucharist" (cf. v. 5).
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

καρδίας ἡμῶν, καὶ ὑπὲρ τῆς γνώσεως καὶ πίστεως καὶ ἀθανασίας, ἃς ἐγνώρισας ἡμῖν διὰ Ἰησοῦ τοῦ παιδός σου· σοι ἡ δόξα εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας. 3. σοῦ, δέσποτα παντοκράτορ, ἐκτίσας τὰ πάντα ἐνεκεν τοῦ ὀνόματός σου, τροφὴν τε καὶ ποτὸν ἐδώκας τοῖς ἀνθρώποις εἰς ἀπόλαυσιν, ἵνα σοι εὐχαριστή- σωσίν, ἡμῖν δὲ ἑκάριον πνευματικὴν τροφὴν καὶ ποτὸν καὶ ξωὴν αἰώνιον διὰ τοῦ παιδός σου. 4. πρὸ πάντων εὐχαριστοῦμεν σοι, ὅτι δυνάτος εἶ· σοι 1 ἡ δόξα εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας. 5. μνήσθητι, κύριε, τῆς ἐκκλησίας σου, τοῦ μύσασθαι αὐτὴν ἀπὸ παντὸς πονηροῦ καὶ τελείωσαι αὐτὴν ἐν τῇ ἁγάπῃ σου, καὶ σύναξον αὐτὴν ἀπὸ τῶν τεσσάρων ἀνέμων, τὴν ἀγιασθείσαν, εἰς τὴν σὴν βασιλείαν, ἡν ἡτοίμασας αὐτῇ· ὅτι σοῦ ἐστιν ἡ δύναμις καὶ ἡ δόξα εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας. 6. ἐλθέτω χάρις καὶ παρελθέτω ὁ κόσμος οὗτος. Ὁσαννὰ τῷ θεῷ Ἰωάννης. εἰ τις ἄγιος ἐστιν, ἔρχεσθω· εἰ τις οὐκ ἐστιν, μετανοεῖτω· μαρὰν ἀθάνται· οὕτως. 7. τοῖς δὲ προφήταις ἐπιτρέπετε εὐχαριστεῖν ὅσα θέλουσιν.

XI

1. Ὅσο ὁ δὲ ἅλθων διδαχῇ ὑμᾶς ταῦτα πάντα τὰ προειρημένα, δέξασθε αὐτὸν. 2. εἴ δὲ αὐτὸς ὁ διδάσκως στραφεῖς διδάσκῃ ἄλλην διδαχὴν εἰς τὸ καταλῦσαι, μὴ αὐτοῦ ἀκούσητε· εἰς δὲ τὸ προσθεῖναι δικαίουσίν καὶ γνώσιν κυρίου, δέξασθε αὐτὸν ὡς κύριον.

1 O reads σῷ which is a common mistake for σοι, but Harnack prefers to emend to δτὶ δυνάτος εἶ σῷ· σοι κ.τ.λ.
THE DIDACHE, x. 2—xi. 2

nacle in our hearts, and for the knowledge and faith and immortality which thou didst make known to us through Jesus thy Child. To thee be glory for ever. 3. Thou, Lord Almighty, didst create all things for thy Name's sake, and didst give food and drink to men for their enjoyment, that they might give thanks to thee, but us hast thou blessed with spiritual food and drink and eternal light through thy Child. 4. Above all we give thanks to thee for that thou art mighty. To thee be glory for ever. 5. Remember, Lord, thy Church, to deliver it from all evil and to make it perfect in thy love, and gather it together in its holiness from the four winds to thy kingdom which thou hast prepared for it. For thine is the power and the glory for ever. 6. Let grace come and let this world pass away. Hosannah to the God of David. If any man be holy, let him come! if any man be not, let him repent: Maran atha,¹ Amen.”

7. But suffer the prophets to hold Eucharist as they will.

XI

1. Whosoever then comes and teaches you all these things aforesaid, receive him. 2. But if the teacher himself be perverted and teach another doctrine to destroy these things, do not listen to him, but if his teaching be for the increase of righteousness and knowledge of the Lord, receive him as the Lord.

¹ A transliteration of Aramaic words meaning “Our Lord! Come!”

325
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

3. Περὶ δὲ τῶν ἀποστόλων καὶ προφητῶν, κατὰ τὸ δόγμα τοῦ εὐαγγελίου οὗτο ποιήσατε. 4. πᾶς δὲ ἀπόστολος ἔρχομενος πρὸς ὑμᾶς δεχθῆτω ὡς κύριος. 5. οὐ μενεῖ δὲ εἰ μὴ ¹ ἡμέραν μίαν ἕαν δὲ ἡ χρεία, καὶ τὴν ἀλλήν τρεῖς δὲ ἕαν μείνη, ψευδοπροφήτης ἐστὶν. 6. ἔξερχομενος δὲ ὁ ἀπόστολος μηδὲν λαμβανέτω εἰ μὴ ἅρτον, ἐως οὐ αὐλισθῇ ἕαν δὲ ἀργύριον αὐτῷ, ψευδοπροφήτης ἐστὶ.

7. Καὶ πάντα προφήτην λαλοῦντα ἐν πνεύματι οὐ πειράσετε οὐδὲ διακρίνετε. πᾶσα γὰρ ἀμαρτία ἀφεθῆσεται, αὕτη δὲ ἡ ἀμαρτία οὐκ ἀφεθῆσεται. 8. οὐ πᾶς δὲ ὁ λαλῶν ἐν πνεύματι προφήτης ἐστίν, ἀλλ' ἕαν ἔχῃ τοὺς τρόπους κυρίου. ἀπὸ οὖν τῶν τρόπων γνωσθῆσεται ὁ ψευδοπροφήτης καὶ ὁ προφήτης. 9. καὶ πᾶς προφήτης ὁ ὁρίζων τράπεζαν ἐν πνεύματι οὐ φάγεται ἀπ' αὐτῆς, εἰ δὲ μήγε ψευδοπροφήτης ἐστὶ. 10. πᾶς δὲ προφήτης διδάσκων τὴν ἀλήθειαν, εἰ δὲ διδάσκει οὐ ποιεῖ, ψευδοπροφήτης ἐστὶ. 11. πᾶς δὲ προφήτης δεδοκιμασμένος, ἀληθινός, ποιῶν εἰς μυστήριον κοσμικὸν ἐκκλησίας, μὴ διδάσκων δὲ ποιεῖν, ὡσα αὐτὸς ποιεῖ, οὐ κρίθησεται ἐφ' ὑμῶν μετὰ θεοῦ γὰρ ἔχει τὴν κρίσιν ὡσαύτος γὰρ ἐποίησαν καὶ οἱ ἀρχαῖοι προφήται. 12. δὲ δὲ ἐπὶ ἐν πνεύματι δὸς μοι ἀργύρια ἢ ἐτερά τινα, οὐκ ἀκούσεσθε αὐτοῦ. ἕαν δὲ περὶ ἄλλων υστεροῦντων εἰπῇ δούναι, μηδεὶς αὐτὸν κρινέτω.

¹ ei μὴ are omitted by C, but xii. 2 seems to make the correction quite certain.

326
THE DIDACHE, XI. 3–XI. 12

3. And concerning the Apostles and Prophets, act thus according to the ordinance of the Gospel.¹
4. Let every Apostle who comes to you be received as the Lord; but let him not stay more than one day, or if need be a second as well; but if he stay three days, he is a false prophet. 6. And when an Apostle goes forth let him accept nothing but bread till he reach his night’s lodging; but if he ask for money, he is a false prophet.

7. Do not test or examine any prophet who is speaking in a spirit, “for every sin shall be forgiven, but this sin shall not be forgiven.” 8. But not everyone who speaks in a spirit is a prophet, except he have the behaviour of the Lord. From his behaviour, then, the false prophet and the true prophet shall be known. 9. And no prophet who orders a meal in a spirit shall eat of it: otherwise he is a false prophet.

10. And every prophet who teaches the truth, if he do not what he teaches, is a false prophet. 11. But no prophet who has been tried and is genuine, though he enact a worldly mystery² of the Church, if he teach not others to do what he does himself, shall be judged by you: for he has his judgment with God, for so also did the prophets of old. 12. But whosoever shall say in a spirit ‘Give me money, or something else,’ you shall not listen to him; but if he tell you to give on behalf of others in want, let none judge him.

¹ It is unknown to what ordinance the writer refers.
² This passage has never been satisfactorily explained: it probably refers to a tendency among some prophets to introduce forms of worship, or of illustration of their teaching, of doubtful propriety, if so the reference below to the prophets of old is perhaps an allusion to Hosea (Hos. 1, 2 ff.).
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

XII

Mt. 21, 9; Ps. 118, 26, cf. Joh. 5, 43

1. Πᾶς δὲ ὁ ἐρχόμενος ἐν ὄνοματι κυρίου
dechthētow. ἐπείτα δὲ δοκιμάσαντες αὐτὸν ἤγνωσαςθε, Σύνεσιν γὰρ ἐξετε δεξιὰν καὶ ἀριστεράν. 2. εἰ
μὲν παροδιός ἐστιν ὁ ἐρχόμενος, βοηθεῖτε αὐτῷ, ὅσον δύνασθε. οὐ μενεί δὲ πρὸς ὑμᾶς εἰ μὴ δῦν ἢ
τρεῖς ἡμέρας, εἰάν ἢ ἀνάγκη. 3. εἰ δὲ θέλει πρὸς
ὑμᾶς καθῆσθαι, τεχνίτης ὃν ἐργαζόμενος καὶ
φαγέτω. 4. εἰ δὲ οὐκ ἔχει τέχνην, κατὰ τὴν
σύνεσιν ὑμῶν προνοησάτε, πῶς μὴ ἄργος μεθ' ὑμῶν
ξησεται Χριστιανός. 5. εἰ δ' οὐθὲν οὕτω
ποιεῖν, χριστεμπόρος ἔστι προσέχετε ἀπὸ τῶν
tοιούτων.

XIII

Mt. 10, 10; cf. Luke 10, 7; I Cor. 9, 13, 14; I Tim. 5, 17, 18

1. Πᾶς δὲ προφήτης ἀληθινὸς θέλων καθῆσθαι
πρὸς ὑμᾶς ἅξιος ἐστι τῆς τροφῆς αὐτοῦ. 2. ὥσαύτως
diáskalois ἀληθινὸς ἐστιν ἅξιος καὶ
αὐτὸς ὡσπερ ὁ ἐργάτης τῆς τροφῆς αὐτοῦ. 3. πᾶσαν
οὖν ἀπαρχὴν γεννημάτων λημνο καὶ
ἀλωνος, βωον τε καὶ προβάτων λαβῶν δόσεις τήν
ἀπαρχὴν τοῖς προφήταις αὐτοῖ γὰρ εἰσὶν οἱ
ἀρχιερεῖς ὑμῶν. 4. εὰν δὲ μὴ ἔχητε προφήτην,
ὅτε τοὺς πτωχοὺς. 5. εὰν σιτίαν ποιῆσθαι τὴν
ἀπαρχὴν λαβών δόσας κατὰ τὴν ἐντολήν. 6.
ὡςαύτως κεράμων οἶνου ή ἐλαιοῦ ἀνοίξας τὴν
ἀπαρχὴν λαβῶν δόσας τοῖς προφήταις. 7. ἀργυρίου
dὲ καὶ ἰματισμοῦ καὶ παντὸς κτήματος λαβῶν τὴν
ἀπαρχὴν ὡς ἁν σοι δόξη, δόσας κατὰ τὴν ἐντολήν.

328
XII

1. Let everyone who "comes in the Name of the Lord" be received; but when you have tested him you shall know him, for you shall have understanding of true and false. 2. If he who comes is a traveller, help him as much as you can, but he shall not remain with you more than two days, or, if need be, three. 3. And if he wishes to settle among you and has a craft, let him work for his bread. 4. But if he has no craft provide for him according to your understanding, so that no man shall live among you in idleness because he is a Christian. 5. But if he will not do so, he is making traffic of Christ; beware of such.

XIII

1. But every true prophet who wishes to settle among you is "worthy of his food." 2. Likewise a true teacher is himself worthy, like the workman, of his food. 3. Therefore thou shalt take the firstfruit of the produce of the winepress and of the threshing-floor and of oxen and sheep, and shalt give them as the firstfruits to the prophets, for they are your high priests. 4. But if you have not a prophet, give to the poor. 5. If thou makest bread, take the firstfruits, and give it according to the commandment. 6. Likewise when thou openest a jar of wine or oil, give the firstfruits to the prophets. 7. Of money also and clothes, and of all your possessions, take the firstfruits, as it seem best to you, and give according to the commandment.

1 Literally, "right and left understanding."
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

XIV

1. Κατὰ κυριακὴν δὲ κυρίου συναχθέντες κλάσατε ἁρτον καὶ εὐχαριστήσατε, προεξομολογήσαμεν τὰ παραπτώματα ὑμῶν, ὅπως καθαρά ἡ θυσία ὑμῶν. 2. πᾶς δὲ ἔχων τὴν ἀμφιβολίαν μετὰ τοῦ ἑταίρου αὐτοῦ μὴ συνελθέτω ὑμῖν, ἐως οὗ διαλλαγώσωμεν, ἵνα μὴ κοινωθῇ ἡ θυσία ὑμῶν. 3. αὕτη γὰρ ἔστιν ἡ ῥηθεῖσα υπὸ κυρίου. Ἑν παντὶ τόπῳ καὶ χρόνῳ προσφέρειν μοι θυσίαν καθαράν. Ὑπὸ βασιλεὺς μέγας εἰμὶ, λέγει κύριος, καὶ τὸ ὅνομά μου θαυμαστὸν ἐν τοῖς έθνεσι.

XV

1. Χειροτονήσατε οὖν ἑαυτοῖς ἐπισκόπους καὶ διακόνους ἄξιους τοῦ κυρίου, ἀνδρας πραεῖς καὶ ἀφίλαργους καὶ ἀληθεῖς καὶ διδοκιμασμένους· ὑμῖν γὰρ λειτουργοῦσί καὶ αὐτοὶ τὴν λειτουργίαν τῶν προφητῶν καὶ διδασκάλων. 2. μὴ οὖν ὑπερίδητε αὐτοὺς· αὐτοὶ γὰρ εἰσὶν οἱ τετιμημένοι ὑμῶν μετὰ τῶν προφητῶν καὶ διδασκάλων. 3. Ἐλέγχετε δὲ ἅλληλους μὴ ἐν ὅργῃ, ἀλλ' ἐν εἰρήνῃ ὡς ἔχετε ἐν τῷ εὐαγγελίῳ καὶ παντὶ ἀστοχοῦντι κατὰ τοῦ ἑτέρου μηδεὶς λαλεῖτω μηδὲ παρ' ὑμῶν ἀκουότω, ἐως οὗ μετανοήσῃ. 4. τὰς δὲ εὐχὰς ὑμῶν καὶ τὰς ἐλεημοσύνας καὶ πάσας τὰς πράξεις οὕτω ποιήσατε, ὡς ἔχετε ἐν τῷ εὐαγγελίῳ τοῦ κυρίου ἡμῶν.

1 προεξομολογησάμενοι ὁ. 2 ἡμῶν ὁ.
THE DIDACHE, xiv. i–xv. 4

XIV

1. On the Lord's Day of the Lord come together, break bread and hold Eucharist, after confessing your transgressions that your offering may be pure; 2. but let none who has a quarrel with his fellow join in your meeting until they be reconciled, that your sacrifice be not defiled. 3. For this is that which was spoken by the Lord, "In every place and time offer me a pure sacrifice, for I am a great king," saith the Lord, "and my name is wonderful among the heathen."

XV

1. Appoint therefore for yourselves bishops and deacons worthy of the Lord, meek men, and not lovers of money, and truthful and approved, for they also minister to you the ministry of the prophets and teachers. 2. Therefore do not despise them, for they are your honourable men together with the prophets and teachers. 3. And reprove one another not in wrath but in peace as you find in the Gospel, and let none speak with any who has done a wrong to his neighbour, nor let him hear a word from you until he repents. 4. But your prayers and alms and all your acts perform as ye find in the Gospel of our Lord.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

XVI

Mt. 24, 42; Luke 12, 35
1. Γρηγορεῖτε ὑπὲρ τῆς ἐξῆς ἡμῶν· οἱ λύχνοι
ἡμῶν μὴ σβεσθῆτωσαν, καὶ αἱ ὀσφύες ἡμῶν μὴ
ἐκλυέσθωσαν, ἀλλὰ γίνεσθε ἐτοιμοὶ οὐ γάρ ἰδιατ
τὴν ὀραν, ἐν ᾗ ὁ κύριος ἡμῶν ἔρχεται. 2. πυκνῶς
dὲ συναχθῆσετε ξητοῦντες τὰ ἀνήκοντα ταῖς
ψυχαῖς ἡμῶν· οὐ γάρ ὁφελήσει ἡμᾶς ὁ πᾶς χρόνος
tῆς πίστεως ἡμῶν, ἐὰν μὴ ἐν τῷ ἐσχάτῳ κατὰ
τελεωθήτε. 3. ἐν γὰρ ταῖς ἑσχάταις ἡμέραις
πληθυνθῶσιν οἱ ψευδοπροφῆται καὶ οἱ φθορεῖς,
cαὶ στραφήσονται τὰ πρόβατα εἰς λύκους, καὶ ἡ
ἀγάπη στραφήσεται εἰς μίσος. 4. αὐξανοῦσης
γὰρ τῆς ἀνομίας μισήσονσιν ἀλλήλους καὶ
διώξουσι καὶ παραδώσουσι, καὶ τότε φανήσεται ὁ
κοσμοπλανής ὡς νῖος θεοῦ, καὶ ποιήσει σημεία καὶ
tέρατα, καὶ ἡ γῆ παραδοθήσεται εἰς χείρας αὐτοῦ,
cαὶ ποιήσει ἀθέμιτα, ἅ ὀνδέποτε γέγονεν ἐξ αἰῶνος.
5. τότε ἤξει ἡ κτίσις τῶν ἀνθρώπων εἰς τὴν
πύρωσιν τῆς δοκιμασίας, καὶ σκανδαλισθῆσον
tολλοῦ καὶ ἀπολούνται, οἱ δὲ ὑπομείναντες εἰς τῇ
πίστει αὐτῶν σωθήσονται ὑπ' αὐτοῦ τοῦ καταθέ-
ματος. 6. καὶ τότε φανήσεται τὰ σημεία τῆς
ἀλληλείας· πρῶτον σημεῖον ἐκπετάσεως ἐν οὐρανῷ,
eἰτα σημεῖον φωνῆς σάλπιγγος, καὶ τὸ τρίτον
ἀνάστασις νεκρῶν. 7. οὐ πάντων δὲ, ἀλλ' ὡς
ἐρρέθη: Ἡξει ὁ κύριος καὶ πάντες οἱ ἄγιοι μετ'
αὐτοῦ. 8. τότε ὀφεῖται ὁ κόσμος τῶν κύριον
ἐρχόμενον ἐπάνω τῶν νεφελῶν τοῦ οὐρανοῦ.

332
XVI

1. "Watch" over your life: "let your lamps" be not quenched "and your loins" be not ungirded, but be "ready," for ye know not "the hour in which our Lord cometh." 2. But be frequently gathered together seeking the things which are profitable for your souls, for the whole time of your faith shall not profit you except ye be found perfect at the last time; 3. for in the last days the false prophets and the corrupters shall be multiplied, and the sheep shall be turned into wolves, and love shall change to hate; 4. for as lawlessness increaseth they shall hate one another and persecute and betray, and then shall appear the deceiver of the world as a Son of God, and shall do signs and wonders and the earth shall be given over into his hands and he shall commit iniquities which have never been since the world began. 5. Then shall the creation of mankind come to the fiery trial and "many shall be offended" and be lost, but "they who endure" in their faith "shall be saved" by the curse itself.¹ 6. And "then shall appear the signs" of the truth. First the sign spread out in Heaven, then the sign of the sound of the trumpet, and thirdly the resurrection of the dead: 7. but not of all the dead, but as it was said, "The Lord shall come and all his saints with him." 8. Then shall the world "see the Lord coming on the clouds of Heaven." 𠐊

¹ The meaning is obscure; but there seem to be other traces in early literature of a doctrine that each curse also contained the elements of a counterbalancing power to salvation. There is a valuable and long note on the subject in Rendel Harris's edition of the Didache.
THE EPISTLE OF BARNABAS
THE EPISTLE OF BARNABAS

The document which is always known as the Epistle of Barnabas is, like I. Clement, really anonymous, and it is generally regarded as impossible to accept the tradition which ascribes it to the Barnabas who was a companion of S. Paul, though it is convenient to continue to use the title.

It is either a general treatise or was intended for some community in which Alexandrian ideas prevailed, though it is not possible to define either its destination, or the locality from which it was written, with any greater accuracy. Its main object is to warn Christians against a Judaistic conception of the Old Testament, and the writer carries a symbolical exegesis as far as did Philo; indeed he goes farther and apparently denies any literal significance at all to the commands of the Law. The literal exegesis of the ceremonial law is to him a device of an evil angel who deceived the Jews.

The date of Barnabas is doubtful. Two attempts have been made to fix it from internal evidence. In the first place, the ten kings in chap. vi. have been identified with the Roman Emperors, and thus a date well within the limits of the first century has been suggested, though there is no unanimity as to the
THE EPISTLE OF BARNABAS

exact manner in which the number of the ten Em-
perors is to be reached. In the second place attention
has been drawn to the reference in chap. xvi. to the
rebuilding of the Temple, and this is supposed to
refer to the events of 132 A.D. Neither theory is quite
satisfactory, but neither date is in itself impossible.
The document no doubt belongs to the end of the
first or beginning of the second century.

The text is found in the following authorities:—

(1) The Codex Sinaiticus, an uncial of the fourth
century, now at St. Petersburg, and published in
photographic facsimile by the Clarendon Press.

(2) The Codex Constantinopolitanus, found by
Bryennios in 1875 and now at Jerusalem, the same
MS. as that known as C in I. Clement and the
Didache.

(3) In eight defective MSS., in which owing to
some accident the ninth chapter of the epistle of
Polycarp is continued without a break by the fifth
chapter of Barnabas. These MSS. are clearly des-
cended from a common archetype, copied from a
MS. in which Barnabas followed Polycarp, but the
pages containing the end of the latter and beginning
of the former were lost, and a copyist who did not
observe this merged the one into the other.

(4) A Latin version, extant in a single MS. at
St. Petersburg, in which the text stops at the end
of chap. xvii. It thus omits the "Two Ways,"
and the question (perhaps insoluble) arises whether
the Latin has omitted it, or the Greek interpolated
it. At present the general opinion is in favour of
the former view.

338
THE EPISTLE OF BARNABAS

Barnabas, like I. Clement and Hermas, became canonical in some circles: it is quoted by Clement of Alexandria as Scripture, and is referred to by Origen as a Catholic Epistle, while it is included in the Codex Sinaiticus among the books of the New Testament, not, as is sometimes said, as an appendix, but following immediately after the Apocalypse, without any suggestion that it belonged to a different category of books.

The symbols employed in quoting the textual evidence are as follows:—

\[\mathcal{N} = \text{Codex Sinaiticus.}\]
\[C = \text{Codex Constantinopolitanus.}\]
\[G = \text{the archetype of the eight Greek MSS.}\]
\[L = \text{the Latin version.}\]
ΒΑΡΝΑΒΑ ΕΠΙΣΤΟΛΗ

I

1. Χαίρετε, νική καὶ θυγατέρες, ἐν όνόματι
κυρίου τοῦ ἀγαπήσαντος ἡμᾶς, ἐν εἰρήνῃ.

2. Μεγάλων μὲν οὖν καὶ πλούσιων τῶν τοῦ
θεοῦ δικαιωμάτων εἰς ύμᾶς, ὑπέρ τι καὶ καθ’
ὑπερβολὴν ὑπερευφραίνομαι ἐπὶ τοὺς μακαρίους
καὶ ἔνδοξοις ύμῶν πνεῦμασιν οὕτως ἐμφυτοῦν 
τῇ δωρεᾷ πνευματικῆς χάριν εἰλήφατε. 3. διὸ καὶ
μᾶλλον συγχαίρω ἐμαυτῷ ἐλπίζων σωθῆναι, ὅτι
ἀληθῶς βλέπω ἐν ύμῶν ἐκκεκυμένον ἀπὸ τοῦ
πλουσίου τῆς πηγῆς κυρίου πνεύμα ἐφ’ ύμᾶς.
οὕτω με ἐξέπληξεν ἐπὶ ύμῶν ἡ ἐμοὶ ἐπιποθήτη
οψίς ύμῶν. 4. πεπεσμένος οὖν τούτῳ καὶ συνειδῶς
ἐμαυτῷ, ὅτι ἐν ύμῖν λαλήσας πολλὰ ἐπίσταμαι,
ὅτι ἐμοὶ συνώδεσαν ἐν ὄνομι δικαιοσύνης κύριος,
καὶ πάντως ἀναγκάζομαι κἀγὼ εἰς τούτῳ, ἀγαπῶν
ὑμᾶς ὑπὲρ τὴν ψυχὴν μου, ὅτι μεγάλη πίστις καὶ
ἀγάπη ἐγκατοικεῖ ἐν ύμῖν ὡς ἐπὶ ἐπιτίθει ζωῆς αὐτοῦ.
5. λογισάμενος οὖν τούτῳ, ὅτι ἐὰν μελήσῃ μου
περὶ ύμῶν τοῦ μέρους τι μεταδοῦναι ἀφ’ οὐ ἐλαβόν,
ὅτι ἐσται μοι τοιούτως πνεύμασιν ὑπηρετήσαντι
εἰς μισθόν, ἐσπούδασα κατὰ μικρὸν ὑμῶν πέμπτειν,

1 οὕτω λ, οὔτο ά, οὗ τά ο.
THE EPISTLE OF BARNABAS

I

1. Hail, sons and daughters, in the name of the Lord who loved us, in peace.

2. Exceedingly and abundantly do I rejoice over your blessed and glorious spirit for the greatness and richness of God's ordinances towards you; so innate a grace of the gift of the spirit have you received.

3. Wherefore I congratulate myself the more in my hope of salvation, because I truly see in you that the Spirit has been poured out upon you from the Lord, who is rich in his bounty;¹ so that the sight of you, for which I longed, amazed me.

4. Being persuaded then of this, and being conscious that since I spoke among you I have much understanding because the Lord has travelled with me in the way of righteousness, I am above all constrained to this, to love you above my own life, because great faith and love dwell in you in the "hope of his life." 5. I have therefore reckoned that, if I make it my care in your behalf to communicate somewhat of that which I received, it shall bring me the reward of having ministered to such spirits, and I hasten to send you a short letter in order that

¹ Literally "spring."
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

II

1. Ἡμερῶν οὖν οὐσῶν ποιηρῶν καὶ αὐτοῦ τοῦ ἐνεργοῦντος ἔχοντος τὴν ἐξουσίαν, ὦφεὶλομεν εἰαυτῶς προσέχοντες ἐκζητεῖν τὰ δικαιώματα κυρίου.
2. τῆς οὖν πίστεως ἡμῶν εἰσὶν βοσθοὶ φόβος καὶ ὑπομονή, τὰ δὲ συμμαχοῦντα ἡμῖν μακροθυμία καὶ ἐγκράτεια.
3. τούτων οὖν μενούτων τὰ πρὸς κύριον ἀγνώς, συνευφραίνονται

1 The text of this whole passage is confused: tres sunt ergo constitutiones domini, vides spee initium et consummatio L and no more: τρία οὖν δόγματα ἐστὶν κυρίου, σωτή, πίστις, ἐλπὶς, ἀρχὴ καὶ τέλος ἡμῶν, καὶ δικαιοσύνης κρίσεως ἀρχὴ καὶ τέλος ἀγάπη, εὐφροσύνη, καὶ ἀγαλλιάσεως ἔργων δικαιοσύνης μαρτυρία. The text printed is that of C, which gives the best sense, though it is doubtful if it is more than the correction of an early corruption.
your knowledge may be perfected along with your faith.

6. There are then three doctrines of the Lord: "the hope of life" is the beginning and end of our faith; and righteousness is the beginning and end of judgment; love of joy and of gladness is the testimony of the works of righteousness. 7. For the Lord made known to us through the prophets things past and things present and has given us the firstfruits of the taste of things to come; and when we see these things coming to pass one by one, as he said, we ought to make a richer and deeper offering for fear of him. 8. But I will show you a few things, not as a teacher but as one of yourselves, in which you shall rejoice at this present time.

II

1. Seeing then that the days are evil, and that the worker of evil himself is in power, we ought to give heed to ourselves, and seek out the ordinances of the Lord. 2. Fear then, and patience are the helpers of our faith, and long-suffering and continence are our allies. 3. While then these things remain in holiness towards the Lord, wisdom, prudence, understanding, and knowledge rejoice

1 Or possibly "ordinances" or "decrees."
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

αὐτοῖς σοφία, σύνεσις, ἐπιστήμη, γνῶσις. 4. πε-
φανέρωκεν γὰρ ἡμῖν διὰ πάντων τῶν προφητῶν,
ὅτι οὔτε θυσίῶν οὔτε ὅλοκαυτώματος οὔτε προσ-
φορῶν χρῆζει, λέγων ὅτε μέν. 5. Τί μοι πλῆθος
τῶν θυσίων ὑμῶν; λέγει κύριος. πλήρης εἰμὶ
ὅλοκαυτώματος, καὶ στέρα ἁρών καὶ αἷμα ταύρων
καὶ τράγων οὐ βούλομαι, οὐδὲ ἄν ἔρχησθε ὄφθηναί
μοι. τίς γὰρ ἔξεζήτησεν ταύτα ἐκ τῶν χειρῶν
ὑμῶν; πατεὶν μοι τὴν αὐλὴν οὐ προσθήσεσθε.
εάν φέρητε σεμίδαλιν, μάταιον θυμίαμα βδέλυγμα
μοί ἐστιν τάς νεομηνίας ὑμῶν καὶ τὰ σάββατα
οὐκ ἀνέχομαι. 6. ταῦτα οὖν κατήργησεν, ἵνα δ
κανὼς νόμος τοῦ κυρίου ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ,
ἀνεν ζυγοῦ ἀνάγκης ἕν, μὴ ἀνθρωποποιήτων ἔχῃ
τὴν προσφοράν. 7. λέγει δὲ πάλιν πρὸς αὐτούς:
Μή ἔγω ἐνετειλάμην τοῖς πατράσιν ὑμῶν ἐκπο-
ρευομένους ἐκ γῆς Αἰγύπτου, προσενέγκαι μοι
ὁλοκαυτώματα καὶ θυσίας; 8. ἀλλ' ἡ τοῦτο
ἐνετειλάμην αὐτοῖς· ἐκαστὸς ὑμῶν κατὰ τοῦ
πλησίου ἐν τῇ καρδίᾳ ἐαυτοῦ κακίαν μὴ μνημικα-
κεῖτο, καὶ ὅρκον ψευδή μὴ ἀγαπάτε. 9. αἰσθά-
νεσθαί οὖν ὁφείλομεν, μὴ ὅντες ἀσύνετοι, τὴν
γνώμην τῆς ἀγαθωσύνης τοῦ πατρὸς ἡμῶν, ὅτ' ἡμῖν
λέγει, θέλων ἡμᾶς μὴ ὁμοίως πλανωμένους
ἐκεῖνοι ξητεῖν, πῶς προσάγωμεν αὐτῷ. 10. ἡμῖν
οὖν οὕτως λέγει· Θυσία τῷ κυρίῳ καρδία συνε-
τριμμένη, οὐσία εὐωδίας τῷ κυρίῳ καρδία δοξά-
ζουσα τὸν πεπλακότα αὐτήν. ἀκριβεύεσθαι οὖν
ὁφείλομεν, ἀδελφοί, περὶ τῆς σωτηρίας ἡμῶν, ἵνα

1 τῷ κυρίῳ Ωμ, τῷ θεῷ λ (LXX).
THE EPISTLE OF BARNABAS, II. 3–II. 10

with them. 4. For he has made plain to us through all the Prophets that he needs neither sacrifices nor burnt-offerings nor oblations, saying in one place, 5. “What is the multitude of your sacrifices unto me? saith the Lord. I am full of burnt offerings and desire not the fat of lambs and the blood of bulls and goats, not even when ye come to appear before me. For who has required these things at your hands? Henceforth shall ye tread my court no more. If ye bring flour, it is vain. Incense is an abomination to me. I cannot away with your new moons and sabbaths.” 6. These things then he abolished in order that the new law of our Lord Jesus Christ, which is without the yoke of necessity, might have its oblation not made by man. 7. And again he says to them, “Did I command your fathers when they came out of the land of Egypt to offer me burnt offerings and sacrifices? 8. Nay, but rather did I command them this: Let none of you cherish any evil in his heart against his neighbour, and love not a false oath.” 9. We ought then to understand, if we are not foolish, the loving intention of our Father, for he speaks to us, wishing that we should not err like them, but seek how we may make our offering to him. 10. To us then he speaks thus: “Sacrifice for the Lord is a broken heart, a smell of sweet savour to the Lord is a heart that glorifieth him that made it.” ¹ We ought, therefore, brethren, carefully to enquire concerning our salvation, in

¹ The first part of this quotation is Ps. 51, 19; the second part according to a note in C is from the Apocalypse of Adam, which is no longer extant.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

μὴ ὁ ποιητὸς παρείσδοσιν πλάνης ποιήσας ἐν ἡμῖν ἐκσφενδονήσῃ ἡμᾶς ἀπὸ τῆς ζωῆς ἡμῶν.

III

1. Δέγει οὖν πάλιν περὶ τούτων πρὸς αὐτούς· Ἰνατί μοι νηστεύετε, λέγει κύριος, ὡς σήμερον ἀκουσθήναι εἰς κραυγὴ τὴν φωνὴν ὑμῶν; οὐ ταύτην τὴν νηστείαν ἐγώ ἔξελεξάμην, λέγει κύριος, οὐκ ἀνθρωπον ταπεινοῦντα τὴν ψυχὴν αὐτοῦ, 2. οὐδὲ ἀν κάμψητε ὡς κρίκον τὸν τράχηλον ὑμῶν καὶ σάκκον ἐνδύσησθε καὶ σποδὸν ὑποστρώσητε, οὐδὲ οὕτως καλέσετε νηστείαν δεκτήν. 3. πρὸς ἡμᾶς δὲ λέγει· Ἰδοὺ αὕτη ἡ νηστεία, ἴνα ἐγώ ἐξελεξάμην, λέγει κύριος· λῦε πάντα σύνδεσμον ἁδικίας, διάλυε στραγγαλίας βιαίων συναλλαγμάτων, ἀπόστελλε τεθραυσμένους ἐν ἄφεσι καὶ πᾶσαν ἁδικον συγγραφὴν διάσπα. διάθρυπτε πεινῶσιν τὸν ἀρτὸν σου, καὶ γυμνὸν ἐὰν ἰδης περίβαλε· ἀστέγους εἴσαγη εἰς τὸν οἶκον σου, καὶ ἐὰν ἰδης ταπεινῶν, οὐχ ὑπερόψη αὐτὸν, οὐδὲ ἀπὸ τῶν οἰκείων τοῦ σπέρματος σου. 4. τότε ῥαγήσεται πρῶιμον τὸ φῶς σου, καὶ τὰ ἱμάτια ¹ σου ταχέως ἀνατελεῖ, καὶ προπορεύσεται ἐμπροσθέν σου ἡ δικαιοσύνη, καὶ ἡ δόξα τοῦ θεοῦ περιστελεῖ σε. 5. τότε βοήσεις, καὶ ὁ θεὸς ἐπακούσεται σου, ἐτι λαλοῦντός σου ἔρει· Ἰδοὺ πάρειμι· ἐὰν ἀφέλης

¹ ἱμάτια Κ* CL, ἱμάτα Κ Corr. (healings) (LXX). This correction, which Lightfoot accepts, is no doubt what Barnabas meant, but the MSS. evidence suggests that it is what he wrote.
THE EPISTLE OF BARNABAS, II. 10–111. 5

order that the evil one may not achieve a deceitful entry into us and hurl us away from our life.

III

1. To them he says then again concerning these things, "Why do ye fast for me, saith the Lord, so that your voice is heard this day with a cry! This is not the fast which I chose, saith the Lord, not a man humbling his soul; 2. nor though ye bend your neck as a hoop, and put on sackcloth, and make your bed of ashes, not even so shall ye call it an acceptable fast." 3. But to us he says, "Behold this is the fast which I chose," saith the Lord, "loose every bond of wickedness, set loose the fastenings of harsh agreements, send away the bruised in forgiveness, and tear up every unjust contract, give to the hungry thy bread, and if thou seest a naked man clothe him, bring the homeless into thy house, and if thou seest a humble man, despise him not, neither thou nor any of the household of thy seed. 4. Then shall thy light break forth as the dawn, and thy robes shall rise quickly, and thy righteousness shall go before thee, and the glory of God shall surround thee." 5. "Then thou shalt cry and God shall hear thee; while thou art still speaking He shall say, 'Lo I am here'; if thou puttest away from thee bondage, and

347
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

ἀπὸ σοῦ σώσθεσιν καὶ χειροτονίαν καὶ ῥήμα γογ-
γυμοῦ, καὶ δῶς πεινῶντι τὸν ἀρτοῦ σου ἐκ ψυχῆς
καὶ ψυχῆν τεταπεινωμένην ἐλεήσῃς. 6. εἰς
tοῦτο ὦν, ἀδελφοί, ὁ μακρόθυμος προβλέψας, ὡς
ἐν ἀκεραιοσύνῃ πιστεύσει ὁ λαὸς, διὸ ἠτόμασεν ἐν
 τῷ ἡγαπημένῳ αὐτοῦ, προεφανέρωσεν ἡμῖν περὶ
πάντων, ἵνα μὴ προσφησσόμεθα ὡς ἐπήλυτοι 1 τῷ
ἐκεῖνω νόμῳ.

IV

1. Δεῖ οὖν ἡμᾶς περὶ τῶν ἐνεστώτων ἐπιτολὸ
ἐραυνώντας 2 ἐκζητεῖν τὰ δυνάμεια ἡμᾶς σώζειν.
φύγωμεν οὖν τελείως ἀπὸ πάντων τῶν ἔργων τῆς
ἀνομίας, μήποτε καταλάβῃ ἡμᾶς τὰ ἔργα τῆς
ἀνομίας· καὶ μισῆσομεν τὴν πλάνην τοῦ νῦν
καίρου, ἵνα εἰς τὸν μέλλοντα ἀγαπηθῶμεν. 2. μὴ
dόμεν τῇ ἐαντών ψυχή ἀνεσιν, ὡστε ἐχεῖν αὐτὴν
ἐξουσίαν μετὰ ἀμαρτωλῶν καὶ πονηρῶν συντρέ-
χειν, μήποτε ὄμωσόμεθα αὐτοῖς. 3. τὸ τέλειον
σκάνδαλον ὄγγυκε, περὶ οὐ γέγραπται, ὡς Ἐνωχ
λέγει. Εἰς τούτο γὰρ οἱ δεσπότης συντετήρηκεν
τοὺς καίρους καὶ τὰς ἡμέρας, ἵνα ταχύνῃ οἱ
ἡγαπημένοις αὐτοῦ καὶ ἐπὶ τὴν κληρονομίαν ἤξι.

4. λέγει δὲ οὕτως καὶ ὁ προφήτης: Βασιλεῖαι
δέκα ἔπι τῆς γῆς βασιλεύσωσιν, καὶ ἐξαναστή-
σεται ὁ πύθευς μικρὸς βασιλεύς, διὰ ταπεινώσει
treis ύφ' ἐν τῶν βασιλέων. 5. ὁμοίως περὶ τοῦ

1 ἐπήλυτοι Ν, προσήλυτοι C, proselytae L; the use of the
words in Philo suggests that they both mean proselytes, so
that the evidence of L is ambiguous.
2 ἐραυνώντας Ν, ἐρευνώντας C.
3 ὁ πύθευς CL, ὁ πύθευς αὐτῶν Ν (Theod.).

348
THE EPISTLE OF BARNABAS, III. 5–IV. 5

violence, and the word of murmuring, and dost give to the poor thy bread with a cheerful heart, and dost pity the soul that is abased.” 6. So then, brethren, the long-suffering one foresaw that the people whom He prepared in his Beloved should believe in guilelessness, and made all things plain to us beforehand that we should not be shipwrecked by conversion to their law.

IV

1. We ought, then, to enquire earnestly into the things which now are, and to seek out those which are able to save us. Let us then utterly flee from all the works of lawlessness, lest the works of lawlessness overcome us, and let us hate the error of this present time, that we may be loved in that which is to come. 2. Let us give no freedom to our souls to have power to walk with sinners and wicked men, lest we be made like to them. 3. The final stumbling block is at hand of which it was written, as Enoch says, “For to this end the Lord has cut short the times and the days, that his beloved should make haste and come to his inheritance.” 4. And the Prophet also says thus: “Ten kingdoms shall reign upon the earth and there shall rise up after them a little king, who shall subdue three of the kings under one.” 5. Daniel says likewise concerning the same: “And I beheld
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

Dan. 7, 7, 8 αὐτοῦ λέγει Δανιήλ. Καὶ εἶδον τὸ τέταρτον θηρίον τὸ πονηρὸν καὶ ἵσχυρὸν καὶ χαλεπώτερον παρὰ πάντα τὰ θηρία τῆς θαλάσσης, καὶ ὃς ἔξ αὐτοῦ ἀνέτειλεν δέκα κέρατα, καὶ ἔξ αὐτῶν μικρὸν κέρας παραφυόντος, καὶ ὃς ἔταπεινώσεν υφ’ ἐν τρία τῶν μεγάλων κεράτων. 6. συνιεύαι οὖν ἀφείλετε. ἐτί δὲ καὶ τούτο έρωτὸ ύμᾶς ὡς εἷς ἔξ υμῶν ὡς.

Didache, 7 ἵδιως δὲ καὶ πάντας ἀγαπῶν ὑπὲρ τὴν ψυχὴν μοῦ, προσέχειν νῦν ἐαυτοῖς καὶ μὴ ὁμοιοῦσθαι τισιν ἐπισκωποῦντας ταῖς ἀμαρτίαις υμῶν λέγοντας, ὅτι ἡ διαθήκη ἐκείνων καὶ ἡμῶν. 7. ἡμῶν μὲν ἀλλ’ ἐκείνοι σώτως εἰς τέλος ἀπώλεσαν αὐτὴν λαβώντος Ἰδη τοῦ Μωϋσέως. λέγει γὰρ ἡ γραφὴ. Καὶ ἡ Ἡ Μωϋσῆς εν τῷ θρε τῇ νηστείᾳ ήμέρας τεσσαράκοντα καὶ νύκτας τεσσαράκοντα, καὶ ἔλαβεν τὴν διαθήκην ἀπὸ τοῦ κυρίου, πλάκας λιθίνας γεγραμμένας τῷ δακτύλῳ τῆς χειρὸς τοῦ κυρίου. 8. ἀλλ’ ἐπιστραφέντες ἐπὶ τὰ εἰδώλα ἀπώλεσαν αὐτὴν.

Exod. 84, 28

Exod. 82, 16

Exod. 32, 7

Deut. 9, 12

λέγει γὰρ οὕτως κύριοι. Μωϋσῆ Μωϋσῆ, κατάβηθι τὸ τάχος, ὅτι ἐγκαταστάθη ἐν τῇ καρδίᾳ τῶν κύριον. 9. τολμᾶ δὲ νόμον ἀρχαῖον νῦν ὡς διδάσκαλος, ἀλλ’ ὡς πρέπει ἀγαπῶντες ἀφ’ ὃν ἔχομεν μὴ ἐλλείπειν, γράφεις ἐσπουδάσα, περίψημα ὑμῶν. διὸ προσέχωμεν ἐν ταῖς ἐσχάταις ἡμέραις οὐδὲν

1 θαλάσσης CL, γῆς Ν.
THE EPISTLE OF BARNABAS, iv. 5–iv. 9

the fourth Beast, wicked and powerful and fiercer than all the beasts of the sea, and that ten horns sprang from it, and out of them a little excrecent horn, and that it subdued under one three of the great horns.” 6. You ought then to understand. And this also I ask you, as being one of yourselves, and especially as loving you all above my own life; take heed to yourselves now, and be not made like unto some, heaping up your sins and saying that the covenant is both theirs and ours. 7. It is ours: but in this way did they finally lose it when Moses had just received it, for the Scripture says: “And Moses was in the mount fasting forty days and forty nights, and he received the covenant from the Lord, tables of stone written with the finger of the hand of the Lord.” 8. But they turned to idols and lost it. For thus saith the Lord: “Moses, Moses, go down quickly, for thy people, whom thou broughtest forth out of the land of Egypt, have broken the Law.” And Moses understood and cast the two tables out of his hands, and their covenant was broken, in order that the covenant of Jesus the Beloved should be sealed in our hearts in hope of his faith. 9. (And though I wish to write much, I hasten to write in devotion to you, not as a teacher, but as it becomes one who loves to leave out nothing of that which we have.)¹ Wherefore let us pay heed in the last days, for the whole Admonition to steadfastness

¹ It is possible that the odd change of construction is due to some reference to a well known maxim; but the source of such quotation or reference has not been found.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

Didache

xvi. 2

γάρ ὥφελήσει ἡμᾶς ὁ πᾶς χρόνος τῆς πίστεως ἡμῶν, ἐδώ μὴ νῦν ἐν τῷ ἀνόμῳ καιρῷ καὶ τοῖς μέλλουσιν σκανδάλοις, ὡς πρέπει νῦνῖς θεοῦ, ἀντιστάσθωμεν, ἵνα μὴ σχῆν παρελθοῦσιν ὁ μέλας.

10. φύγωμεν ἀπὸ πάσης ματαιότητος, μισήσωμεν τελείως τὰ ἔργα τῆς πονηρᾶς ὁδοῦ. μὴ καθ’ εαυτοὺς ἐνδύναμες μονάξετε ὡς ἡ δεδικασμένοι, ἀλλ’ ἔπι το αὐτὸ συνεχήμενοι συνυγητείτε περὶ τοῦ κοινῆς συμφέροντος. 11. λέγει γὰρ ἡ γραφή: Ὑπαίτε ὁ σωτῆρ καὶ ἐνώπιον εάν ἐν ἐαυτῶν ἐπιστήμονες. γενώμεθα πνευματικοί, γενώμεθα νᾶδ σελείος τῷ θεῷ. εἰρ’ ὅσοι ἐστίν ἐν ἡμῖν, μελετῶμεν τῶν φῶν τοῦ θεοῦ καὶ φυλάσσομεν ἁγιων ὁμομοίως τάς ἐντολάς αὐτοῦ, ἵνα ἐν τοῖς δικαιώμασιν αὐτοῦ εὐφρανθῶμεν. 12. ὁ κύριος ἀπροσωπολήμπτως κρίνει τῶν κόσμων. ἐκαστὸς καθὼς ἐποίησεν κομμείται. ἐὰν ἡ ἁγάθος, ἡ δικαιοσύνη αὐτοῦ προηγησται αὐτοῦ· ἐὰν ἡ πονηρός, ὁ μισθὸς τῆς πονηρᾶς ἐμπροσθεν αὐτοῦ. 13. ἵνα μῆποτε ἐπαναπαύμενοι ὡς κλητοὶ ἐπικαθυντός σώματεν ταῖς ἁμαρτίαις ἡμῶν, καὶ ὁ πονηρὸς ἀρχῶν λαβὼν τῆς καθ’ ἡμῶν ἐξουσίαν ἀποστείπει ἡμᾶς ἀπὸ τῆς βασιλείας τοῦ κυρίου. 14. ἔτι δὲ κάκειν, ἀδελφοὶ μου, νοεῖτε· ὅταν βλέπετε μετὰ τηλικαία σημεία καὶ τέρατα γεγονότα ἐν τῷ Ἰσραήλ, καὶ ὁποῖος ἐγκαταλειφθεῖ αὐτοῦς· προσέχωμεν, μῆποτε, ἐὰν γεγραπται, πολλοὶ κλητοὶ, ὅλγοι δὲ ἐκλεκτοὶ εὑρεθῶμεν.

1 ἡ πίστεως ἡμῶν N, τῆς ζωῆς ἡμῶν C, vitæ nostræ et fidei L.
2 ἵνα N, ἵνα οὖν C, ἵνα . . . μέλας om. L.
time of our life and faith will profit us nothing, unless we resist, as becomes the sons of God in this present evil time, against the offences which are to come, that the Black One may have no opportunity of entry. 10. Let us flee from all vanity, let us utterly hate the deeds of the path of wickedness. Do not by retiring apart live alone as if you were already made righteous, but come together and seek out the common good. 11. For the Scripture says: "Woe to them who are prudent for themselves and understanding in their own sight." Let us be spiritual, let us be a temple consecrated to God, so far as in us lies let us "exercise ourselves in the fear" of God, and let us strive to keep his commandments in order that we may rejoice in his ordinances. 12. The Lord will "judge" the world "without respect of persons." Each will receive according to his deeds. If he be good his righteousness will lead him, if he be evil the reward of iniquity is before him. 13. Let us never rest as though we were 'called' and slumber in our sins, lest the wicked ruler gain power over us and thrust us out from the Kingdom of the Lord. 14. And consider this also; my brethren, when you see that after such great signs and wonders were wrought in Israel they were even then finally abandoned;—let us take heed lest as it was written we be found "many called but few chosen."

1 Apparently a loose expression = "confiding in our call."
1. Ei's touto gar up'emeinein o kuriós paraðoxi

La. 53, 5, 7 nai tiv àfesei

Proviso 1, 17 ton amartiom anamistoto, òestin ev tw aímati

Gen. 1, 26 tou raptismatos autou. 1

II Tim. 1, 10 Oi prôphihtai, ap' autou enthunes tiv

I Tim. 3, 18 khairin, eis autôn epitheusen autou de, òina

1 aímati tou raptismatos autou, raptismati autou tou

aímatos CL, a natural correction of the more difficult phrase.
THE EPISTLE OF BARNABAS, v. 1–v. 6

V

1. For it was for this reason that the Lord endured to deliver up his flesh to corruption, that we should be sanctified by the remission of sin, that is, by his sprinkled blood. 2. For the scripture concerning him relates partly to Israel, partly to us, and it speaks thus: "He was wounded for our transgressions and bruised for our iniquities, by his stripes we were healed. He was brought as a sheep to the slaughter, and as a lamb dumb before its shearer." 3. Therefore we ought to give great thanks to the Lord that he has given us knowledge of the past, and wisdom for the present, and that we are not without understanding for the future. 4. And the Scripture says, "Not unjustly are the nets spread out for the birds." This means that a man deserves to perish who has a knowledge of the way of righteousness, but turns aside into the way of darkness. 5. Moreover, my brethren, if the Lord endured to suffer for our life, though he is the Lord of all the world, to whom God said before the foundation of the world, "Let us make man in our image and likeness," how, then, did he endure to suffer at the hand of man? 6. Learn:—The Prophets who received grace from him prophesied of him, and he, in order that he "might destroy death," and show forth the Resurrection from the dead, because he needs must be made "manifest in the
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

υπέμεινεν, 7. ἵνα τούς πατράσιν τὴν ἐπαγγελίαν ἀποδῷ, καὶ αὐτὸς ἐαυτῷ τὸν λαὸν τὸν καίνων ἐτοιμάζων ἐπιδείξῃ ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς ὠν, ὅτι τὴν ἀνάστασιν αὐτοῦ ποιήσας κρειτεί. 8. πέρας γέ τοι διδάσκων τὸν Ἰσραήλ καὶ τηλικαύτα τέρατα καὶ σημεῖα ποιῶν ἐκήρυσσεν, καὶ ὑπερηγάπησεν αὐτόν. 9. ὅτε δὲ τοὺς ἰδίους ἀποστόλους τοὺς μέλλοντας κηρύσσειν τὸ εὐαγγέλιον αὐτοῦ ἐξελέξατο, δυταὶ ὑπὲρ πᾶσαν ἁμαρτίαν ἀνομωτέρους, ἵνα δείξῃ, ὅτι οὐκ ἦλθεν καλέσαι δικαίους, ἀλλὰ ἁμαρτωλοὺς, τὸτε ἐφανέρωσεν ἑαυτὸν εἶναι νεῖν θεοῦ. 10. εἰ γάρ μὴ ἦλθεν ἐν σαρκί, οὐδὲ ἄν πως 1 οἱ ἀνθρωποὶ ἐσώθησαν βλέποντες αὐτού, ὅτε τὸν μέλλοντα μὴ εἶναι ἥλιον, ἔργον τῶν χειρῶν αὐτοῦ ὑπάρχοντα, ἐμβλέποντες οὐκ ἰσχύσωσιν εἰς τὰς ἀκτίνας αὐτοῦ ἀντοφθαλμῆσαι; 11. οὐκοῦν ὁ νῖος τοῦ θεοῦ εἰς τούτο ἐν σαρκί ἦλθεν, ἵνα τὸ τέλειον τῶν ἁμαρτιῶν ἀνακεφαλαίωση τοῖς διόξασιν ἐν θανάτῳ τοὺς προφήτας αὐτοῦ. 12. οὐκοῦν εἰς τούτο ὑπέμεινεν. λέγει γάρ ο θεός τὴν πληγὴν τῆς σαρκὸς αὐτοῦ ὅτι· ἔξ αὐτῶν· "Ὅταν πατάξωσιν τὸν ποιμένα ἑαυτῶν, τότε ὁ πανελθεῖτα τὰ πρόβατα τῆς ποίμνης. 13. αὐτὸς δὲ ἠθέλησεν οὕτω παθεῖν· ἐδει γάρ, ἵνα ἐπὶ ξύλου πάθη. λέγει γάρ ὁ προφήτης ἄντι αὐτῷ. Φείδαι μον Ps. 22, 40 Ps. 119, 120; ἰδίων, τεθεικά μοι τὸν νότου εἰς μάστιγας, καὶ καθιλωσόν μου τὰς σάρκας, ὅτι πονηρευμένων συναγωγαὶ ἐπανέστησαν μοι. 14. καὶ πάλιν λέγει· ἦδον, τεθεικά μοι τὸν νότου εἰς μάστιγας, τὰς δὲ σιαγόνας εἰς ῥαπίσματα. τὸ δὲ πρόσωπον μου ἔθηκα ὡς στερεάν πέτραν.

1 οὐδ' ἄν πως ἄν, οὐδ' ἄν C, πῶς ἄν GL.

356
THE EPISTLE OF BARNABAS, v. 6–v. 14

flesh,” endured 7. in order to fulfil the promise made to the fathers, and himself prepare for himself the new people and show while he was on earth that he himself will raise the dead and judge the risen. 8. Furthermore, while teaching Israel and doing such great signs and wonders he preached to them and loved them greatly; 9. but when he chose out his own Apostles who were to preach his Gospel, he chose those who were iniquitous above all sin to show that “he came not to call the righteous but sinners,”—then he manifested himself as God’s Son. 10. For if he had not come in the flesh men could in no way have been saved by beholding him; seeing that they have not the power when they look at the sun to gaze straight at its rays, though it is destined to perish, and is the work of his hands. 11. So then the Son of God came in the flesh for this reason, that he might complete the total of the sins of those who persecuted his prophets to death. 12. For this cause he endured. For God says of the chastisement of his flesh that it is from them: “When they shall smite their shepherd, then the sheep of the flock shall be destroyed.” 13. And he was willing to suffer thus, for it was necessary that he should suffer on a tree, for the Prophet says of him; “Spare my soul from the sword” and, “Nail my flesh, for the synagogues of the wicked have risen against me.” 14. And again he says: “Lo, I have given my back to scourges, and my cheeks to strokes, and I have set my face as a solid rock.”
VI

1. Ἡ παναγία ἡμῶν ἔστη ἐν τῇ ἐντολή, τῇ λέγει; Τής ὁ κρινόμενός μοι; ἀντιστής μοι ἠ τής ὁ δικαιούμενός μοι; ἐγγυσάτω τῷ παιδὶ κυρίου. 2. οὐαὶ ὑμῖν, ὅτι ὑμεῖς πάντες ᾧς ἤματι παλαιωθήσεσθε, καὶ σής καταφάγεται ὑμᾶς. καὶ πάλιν λέγει ὁ προφήτης, ἐπεὶ ὡς λίθος ἤσχύρος ἐτέθη εἰς συντριβήν. Ἰδοὺ, ἐμβαλώ εἰς τὰ θεμέλια Ἑλὼν λίθον πολυτελή, ἐκλεκτόν, ἀκρογωνιαῖον, ἐντιμόν. 3. εἰτα τῇ λέγει; Καὶ δὲ ἔλπισει ἐπ' αὐτοῦ ἤστηται εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα. ἐπὶ λίθου ὅπως ἦμων ἡ ἐλπίς; μὴ γένοιτο ἀλλ' ἐπεὶ ἐν ἰσχύι τεθεικεν τὴν σάρκα αὐτοῦ κύριος. λέγει γὰρ; Καὶ ἐθηκε με ὡς στερεάν πέτραν. 4. λέγει δὲ πάλιν ὁ προφήτης; Λίθον δὴ ἁπεδοκίμασαν οἱ οἰκοδομοῦντες, οὕτως ἐγενήθη εἰς κεφαλὴν γωνίας. καὶ πάλιν λέγει; Αὕτη ἐστὶν ἡ ἡμέρα ἡ μεγάλη καὶ θαυμαστή, ἢν ἐποίησεν ὁ κύριος. 5. ἀπλούστερον ὑμῖν γράφω, ἵνα συνιήτε ἐγὼ περίψημα τῆς ἀγάπης ὑμῶν. 6. τῷ οὖν λέγει πάλιν ὁ προφήτης; Περεύσχεν με συναγωγὴ ποιησομένων, ἐκκλησιῶν μὲ ὅση μέλισσαι κηρύ, καὶ Ἑσπὶ τοῖς ἰματισμοῖς μου ἔβαλον κλήρον. 7. ἐν σαρκὶ οὖν αὐτοῦ μέλλωντος φανερωθῆται καὶ πάσχειν, προφετεύει καὶ πάθος. λέγει γὰρ ὁ προφήτης ἔπει τὸν Ἰσραήλ. Οὐαὶ τῇ ψυχῇ αὐτῶν, ότι βεβούλευσαν βουλήν υπηρέτῳ καθ' ἑαυτῶν, εἰπόντες; Δήσωμεν τὸν

1 δὲ ἔλπισει ἐπ' αὐτῶν Ὁ, δ' πιστεύων εἰς αὐτὸν ἩΚΑ, probably owing to the influence of the LXX. ἔλπισει is covered by the following ἔλπις.

358
VI

1. When therefore he made the commandment what does he say? "Who is he that comes into court with me? Let him oppose me; or, who is he that seeks justice against me? Let him draw near to the Lord's servant. 2. Woe unto you, for ye shall all wax old as a garment and the moth shall eat you up." And again the Prophet says that he was placed as a strong stone for crushing, "Lo, I will place for the foundations of Zion a precious stone, chosen out, a chief corner stone, honourable." 3. Then what does he say? "And he that hopeth on it shall live for ever." Is then our hope on a stone? God forbid. But he means that the Lord placed his flesh in strength. For he says, "And he placed me as a solid rock." 4. And again the Prophet says, "The stone which the builders rejected, this is become the head of the corner," and again he says, "This is the great and wonderful day which the Lord made." 5. I write to you more simply that you may understand: I am devoted to your love. 6. What then does the Prophet say again? "The synagogue of the sinners compassed me around, they surrounded me as bees round the honeycomb" and, "They cast lots for my clothing." 7. Since therefore he was destined to be manifest and to suffer in the flesh his Passion was foretold. For the Prophet says concerning Israel, "Woe unto their soul, for they have plotted an evil plot against themselves, saying, 'Let us
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

8. τὸ λέγει ὁ ἄλλος προφήτης Μωϋσέως αὐτοῖς; ἤδον, τάδε λέγει κύριος ὁ θεός. Εἰςελθατε εἰς τὴν γῆν τὴν ἀγαθήν, ἣν ὤμοσεν κύριος τῷ Ἀβραὰμ καὶ Ἰσαὰκ καὶ Ἰακώβ, καὶ κατακληρονομήσατε αὐτὴν, γῆν τέρσαν γάλα καὶ μέλι. 9. τί δὲ λέγει ἡ γνώσις; μᾶθετε. ἐλπίσατε, φησίν, ἐπὶ τὸν ἐν σαρκὶ μέλλοντα φανεροῦσθαι ὑμῖν Ἰησοῦν.

10. τὸ οὖν λέγει: Εἰς τὴν γῆν τὴν ἀγαθήν, γῆν τέρσαν γάλα καὶ μέλι; εὐλογητὸς ὁ κύριος ἡμῶν, ἀδελφοί, ὁ σοφίαν καὶ νοῦν θέμενος ἐν ἡμῖν τῶν κρυφῶν αὐτοῦ. λέγει γὰρ ὁ προφήτης παραβολὴν κυρίου: τίς νοήσει, εἰ μὴ σοφός καὶ ἐπιστήμων καὶ ἀγαπῶν τὸν κύριον αὐτοῦ; 11. ἔπειτα οὖν ἀνακαινίσεις ἡμᾶς ἐν τῇ ἄφεσι τῶν ἁμαρτιῶν, ἐποίησεν ἡμᾶς ἄλλου τύπου, ὡς παιδίων ἐχειν τὴν ψυχήν, ὥς ἀν δὴ ἀναπλάσσοντος αὐτοῦ ἡμᾶς. 12. λέγει γὰρ ἡ γραφὴ περὶ ἡμῶν, ὡς λέγει τῷ νῦν. Ποιήσαμεν κατ' εἰκόνα καὶ καθ' ὁμοίωσιν ἡμῶν τῷ ἀνθρώπῳ, καὶ ἀρχέτοσαν τῶν θηρίων τῆς γῆς καὶ τῶν πετεινῶν τοῦ οὐρανοῦ καὶ τῶν ἵππων τῆς θαλάσσης. καὶ εἶπεν κύριος, ἵδιν τὸ καλὸν πλάσμα ἡμῶν. Αὐξάνεσθε καὶ πληθυνέσθε καὶ πληρώσατε τὴν γῆν. ταῦτα πρὸς τὸν νῦν. 13. πάλιν σοι ἐπιδείξω, πῶς πρὸς ἡμᾶς λέγει. δευτέραν πλάσιν ἐπὶ ἐσχάτων

---

1 φησὶν ΩC CL Clem. Alex. om. Ν*G.
2 λέγει CL(g), λέγει κύριος Δ.
bind the Just one, for he is unprofitable to us.""
8. What does the other Prophet, Moses, say to them?
"Lo, thus saith the Lord God, enter into the good
land which the Lord sware that he would give to
Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, and inherit it, a land
flowing with milk and honey." 9. But learn what
knowledge says. Hope, it says, on that Jesus
who will be manifested to you in the flesh. For
man is earth which suffers, for the creation of Adam
was from the face of the earth. 10. What then is
the meaning of "into the good land, a land flowing
with milk and honey"? Blessed be our Lord,
brethren, who has placed in us wisdom and under-
standing of his secrets. For the prophet speaks a
parable of the Lord: "Who shall understand save
he who is wise, and learned, and a lover of his Lord?"
11. Since then he made us new by the remission of
sins he made us another type, that we should have
the soul of children, as though he were creating us
afresh. 12. For it is concerning us that the scripture
says that he says to the Son, "Let us make man after
our image and likeness, and let them rule the beasts
of the earth, and the birds of heaven, and the fishes of
the sea." And the Lord said, when he saw our fair
creation, "Increase and multiply and fill the earth";
these things were spoken to the Son. 13. Again I
will show you how he speaks to us. In the last

1 A contrast is here no doubt implied between "that
Jesus who will be manifested" and the Jesus, or Joshua (the
two names are the same in Greek) who led the Israelites over
the Jordan.
ἐποίησεν. λέγει δὲ κύριος· Ἥδιο, ποιῶ τὰ ἔσχατα ὡς τὰ πρῶτα. εἰς τοῦτο οὖν ἐκήρυξεν ὁ προφήτης. Εἰςέλθατε εἰς γῆν ῥέουσαν γάλα καὶ μέλι καὶ κατακυριεύσατε αὐτής. 14. ἰδε οὖν, ἥμεις ἀναπεπλάσμεθα, καθὼς πάλιν ἐν ἐτέρῳ προφήτῃ λέγει· Ἦδιο, λέγει κύριος, ἐξελῶ τούτων, τουτέστιν ὅν προέβλεπεν τὸ πνεῦμα κυρίου, τὰς λιθίνας καρδίας καὶ ἐμβαλὼ σαρκίνας· ὅτι αὐτὸς ἐν σαρκὶ ἔμελλεν φανεροῦσαί καὶ ἐν ἥμιν κατοικεῖν. 15. ναὸς γὰρ ἁγίος, ἀδελφοὶ μου, τῷ κυρίῳ τὸ κατοικητήριον ἥμων τῆς καρδίας. 16. λέγει γὰρ κύριος πάλιν· Καὶ ἐν τίνι ὀφθήσομαι τῷ κυρίῳ τῷ θεῷ μου καὶ δοξασθήσομαι; λέγει· Ἑξομολογηθοῦσαι σοι ἐν ἐκκλησίᾳ ἀδελφῶν μου, καὶ ψαλῶ σοι ἀνάμεσον ἐκκλησίας ἁγίων. οὕτως ἥμεις ἑσμέν, οὕς εἰσήγαγεν εἰς τὴν γῆν τὴν ἀγαθήν. 17. τὶ οὖν τὸ γάλα καὶ τὸ μέλι; ὁτι πρῶτον τὸ παιδίον μέλιτε, εἰτὰ γάλακτι ξωποιεῖται· οὕτως οὖν καὶ ἥμεις τῇ πλεῖστῃ τῆς ἐπαγγελίας καὶ τῷ λόγῳ ξωποιούμενοι ξήσομεν κατακυριεύοντες τῆς γῆς. 18. προειρήκαμεν δὲ ἐπάνω. Καὶ αὐξανέσθωσαν καὶ πληθυνέσθωσαν καὶ ἀρχέτωσαν τῶν ἱχθύων. τὸς οὖν ὁ δυνάμενος νῦν ἀρχεῖν θηρίων ἢ ἱχθύων ἢ πετεινῶν τοῦ οὐρανοῦ; αἰσθάνεσθαι γὰρ ὄφειλομεν, ὅτι τὸ ἀρχεῖν ξενοφιασὶς ἐστίν, ἵνα τις ἐπιτάξας κυριεύσῃ. 19. εἰ οὖν οὐ γίνεται τοῦτο νῦν, ἀρα ἥμιν εἰρήκεν, πότε· ὅταν καὶ αὐτὸλ τελεωθῶμεν κληρονόμοι τῆς διαθήκης κυρίου γενέσθαι.

1 προειρήκαμεν Ν, προειρήκη CG, L omits the whole sentence.
days he made a second creation; and the Lord says, "See, I make the last things as the first." To this then the Prophet referred when he proclaimed, "Enter into a land flowing with milk and honey, and rule over it." 14. See then, we have been created afresh, as he says again in another Prophet, "See," saith the Lord, "I will take out from them" (that is those whom the Spirit of the Lord foresaw) "the hearts of stone and I will put in hearts of flesh." Because he himself was going to be manifest in the flesh and to dwell among us. 15. For, my brethren, the habitation of our hearts is a shrine holy to the Lord. 16. For the Lord says again, "And wherewith shall I appear before the Lord my God and be glorified?" He says, "I will confess to thee in the assembly of my brethren, and will sing to thee in the midst of the assembly of saints." We then are they whom he brought into the good land. 17. What then is the milk and the honey? Because a child is first nourished with honey, and afterwards with milk. Thus therefore we also, being nourished on the faith of the promise and by the word, shall live and possess the earth. 18. And we have said above, "And let them increase and multiply and rule over the fishes." Who then is it who is now able to rule over beasts or fishes or the birds of heaven? For we ought to understand that to rule implies authority, so that one may give commandments and have domination. 19. If then this does not happen at present he has told us the time when it will;—when we ourselves also have been made perfect as heirs of the covenant of the Lord.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

VII

1. Οὐκοῦν νοεῖτε, τέκνα εὐφροσύνης, ὅτι πάντα ὁ καλὸς κύριος προεφανέρωσεν ἡμῖν, ὡς γνώμεν, ὥς κατὰ πάντα εὐχαριστοῦντες ὄφείλομεν αἰνεῖν.

2. εἰς οὖν ὁ νήσος τοῦ θεοῦ, ὦν κύριος καὶ μέλλων κρίνειν ζώντας καὶ νεκροὺς, ἔπαθεν, ἦν ἡ πληγὴ αὐτοῦ ζωοποίηση ἡμᾶς· πιστεύσωμεν, ὅτι ὁ νήσος τοῦ θεοῦ ὡς ἰδώνατο παθεῖν εἰ μὴ δι' ἡμᾶς.

3. ἂλλα καὶ σταυρωθεὶς ἔποτίζετο οὐκαὶ καὶ χολή, ἀκούσατε, πῶς περὶ τούτοις πεφανέρωκαν οἱ ἱερεῖς τοῦ ναοῦ. γεγραμένης ἐνυπόλης: Ὅς ἂν μὴ νηστεύσῃ τὴν νηστείαν, θανάτῳ ἐξολεθρευθήσεται, ἐνετειλατο κύριος, ἐπει καὶ αὐτὸς ὑπὲρ τῶν ἡμετέρων ἁμαρτιῶν ἔμελλεν τὸ σκεῦος τοῦ πνεύματος προσφέρειν θυσίαιν, ἵνα καὶ ὁ τύπος ὁ γενόμενος ἐπὶ Ἰσαὰκ τοῦ προσενεχθέντος ἐπὶ τὸ θυσιαστήριον τελεσθῇ. 4. τί οὖν λέγει ἐν τῷ προφήτῃ; Καὶ φαγέτωσαν ἐκ τοῦ τράγου τοῦ προσφερομένου την νηστεία ὑπὲρ πασῶν τῶν ἁμαρτιῶν. προσέχετε ἀκριβῶς: Καὶ φαγέτωσαν οἱ ἱερεῖς μόνοι πάντες τὸ ἐντερων ἀπλωσαν μετὰ ὄξους. 5. πρὸς τί; ἐπειδὴ ἐμὲ ὑπὲρ ἁμαρτιῶν μέλλοντα τοῦ λαοῦ μου τοῦ καινοῦ προσφέρει τὴν σάρκα μου μέλλετε ποτίζειν χολὴν μετὰ ὄξους, φάγετε ὡς μόνοι, τοῦ λαοῦ νηστεύοντος καὶ κοπτομένου ἐπὶ σάκκου καὶ σποδοῦ. ἵνα δεῖξη, ὅτι δεὶ αὐτὸν παθεῖν ὑπ' αὐτῶν. 6. ἐν ενετειλατο,

Mt. 27, 34. 48
Lev. 16, 7. 9 ΠΡΟΣΕΧΕΤΕ: Λάβετε δύο τράγους καλοὺς καὶ ὀμοίους καὶ προσενέγκατε, καὶ λαβέτε ὁ ἱερεὺς τὸν ἐνα εἰς ὀλοκαυτώμα ὑπὲρ ἁμαρτιῶν. 7. τὸν

364
THE EPISTLE OF BARNABAS, vii. 1—vii. 7

VII

1. **Understand** therefore, children of gladness, that the good Lord made all things plain beforehand to us, that we should know him to whom we ought to give thanks and praise for everything. 2. If then the Son of God, though he was the Lord and was "destined to judge the living and the dead" suffered in order that his wounding might make us alive, let us believe that the Son of God could not suffer except for our sakes. 3. But moreover when he was crucified "he was given to drink vinegar and gall." Listen how the priests of the Temple foretold this. The commandment was written, "Whosoever does not keep the fast shall die the death," and the Lord commanded this because he himself was going to offer the vessel of the spirit as a sacrifice for our sins, in order that the type established in Isaac, who was offered upon the altar, might be fulfilled. 4. What then does he say in the Prophet? "And let them eat of the goat which is offered in the fast for all their sins." Attend carefully,—"and let all the priests alone eat the entrails unwashed with vinegar." 5. Why? Because you are going "to give to me gall and vinegar to drink" when I am on the point of offering my flesh for my new people, therefore you alone shall eat, while the people fast and mourn in sackcloth and ashes. To show that he must suffer for them. 6. Note what was commanded: "Take two goats, goodly and alike, and offer them, and let the priest take the one as a burnt offering for sins." 7. But what are they to do with the other? "The

365
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

Lev. 16, 9

Δὲ ἐνα τὶ ποιήσωσιν; Ἑπικατάρατος, φησίν, ὁ εἰς. προσέχετε, πῶς ὁ τύπος τοῦ Ἰησοῦ φανεροῦται. 8. Καὶ ἐμπτύσατε πάντες καὶ κατακεντήσατε καὶ περίθετε τὸ ἔριον τὸ κόκκινον περὶ τὴν κεφαλὴν αὐτοῦ, καὶ οὕτως εἰς ἔρημον βληθήτω. καὶ ὅταν γένηται οὕτως, ἀνεί, ὁ βαστάζων τὸν τράγον εἰς τὴν ἔρημον καὶ ἀφαρεῖ τὸ ἔριον καὶ ἐπιτίθεσιν αὐτῷ ἐπὶ φρύγανον τὸ λεγόμενον βαχήλ, οὗ καὶ τὸν βλαστοῦσα εἰςθαμμέν τράγειν ἐν τῇ χώρᾳ οὐρίσκοντες. οὕτω μόνης τῆς βαχοῦς οἱ καρποὶ γλυκεῖς εἰσιν. 9. τί οὗν τούτῳ ἐστιν; προσέχετε. Τὸν μὲν ἔνα ἔπει τὸ θυσιαστήριον, τὸν δὲ ἔνα ἐπικατάρατον, καὶ ὅτι τὸν ἐπικατάρατον ἐστεφανωμένον; ἔπειδη ὥστε αὐτὸν τὸτε τῇ ἡμέρᾳ τὸν ποδήρη ἐχοντα τὸν κόκκινον περὶ τὴν σάρκα καὶ ἐρούσιν. Οὐχ οὕτως ἐστιν, ὃν ποτε ἡμεῖς ἐσταυρώσαμεν ἐξουθενήσαντες καὶ κατακεντήσαντες καὶ ἐμπτύσαντες; ἀληθῶς οὕτως ἦν, ὁ τότε λέγων ἐαυτὸν καὶ θεῷ εἶναι. 10. τῶς γὰρ ὁμοίους ἑκείνῳ; εἰς τούτῳ ὁμοίους τοὺς τράγους, καλοὺς, ἵσους, ἵνα, ὅταν ἔδωσιν αὐτὸν τὸτε ἐρχόμενον, ἐκπλαγῶσιν ἐπὶ τῇ ὁμοίωτητι τοῦ τράγου. οὐκοῦν ἵλε τῶν τύπον τοῦ μέλλοντος πάσχειν Ἰησοῦ. 11. τὰ δὲ, ὅτι τὸ ἔριον μέσον τῶν ἀκανθῶν τίθεσιν; τῦπος ἑστίν τοῦ Ἰησοῦ τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ θέμενος, ὅτι ὅσ εὰν θέλῃ τὸ ἔριον ἄραι τὸ κόκκινον, δεῖ αὐτὸν πολλὰ παθεῖν διὰ τὸ εἶναι

1. ποιήσωσιν Ν, ποιήσωσιν ΩG.
2. βαχήλ Ν, βαχήλ Υ, βαχή C.
3. βαχοῦς ΝG, βαχῆς C. τῆς βαχοῦς can scarcely be right, but in face of the evidence can hardly be rejected.
4. ἐξουθενήσαμεν ἐμπτύσαντες Ν.

366
other,” he says, “is accursed.” Notice how the type of Jesus is manifested: 8. “And do ye all spit on it, and goad it, and bind the scarlet wool about its head, and so let it be cast into the desert.” And when it is so done, he who takes the goat into the wilderness drives it forth, and takes away the wool, and puts it upon a shrub which is called Rachél,\(^1\) of which we are accustomed to eat the shoots when we find them in the country: thus of Rachél alone is the fruit sweet. 9. What does this mean? Listen: “the first goat is for the altar, but the other is accursed,” and note that the one that is accursed is crowned, because then “they will see him” on that day with the long scarlet robe “down to the feet” on his body, and they will say, “Is not this he whom we once crucified and rejected and pierced and spat upon? Of a truth it was he who then said that he was the Son of God.” 10. But how is he like to the goat? For this reason: “the goats shall be alike, beautiful, and a pair,” in order that when they see him come at that time they may be astonished at the likeness of the goat. See then the type of Jesus destined to suffer. 11. But why is it that they put the wool in the middle of the thorns? It is a type of Jesus placed in the Church, because whoever wishes to take away the scarlet wool must suffer much because the thorns

\(^1\) It is probable that Barnabas has mistaken a word meaning a hill for the name of a herb with which he was familiar; but it is not clear whether the confusion was made in Hebrew or in Greek (\(\beta\alpha\chi\delta\) = a brier, and sometimes a wild-olive, and \(\beta\chi\iota\zeta\) = a mountain ridge, seems to suggest some such possibility). But the identity of the herb is unknown. There is an interesting article on it in the *Journal of Biblical Literature*, 1890, by Rendel Harris.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

φοβερὰν τὴν ἄκανθαν, καὶ θλιβέντα κυριεύσαι αὐτοῦ. οὕτω, φησίν, οἱ θέλοντες με ἰδεῖν καὶ ἁψασθαί μου τῆς βασιλείας ὁφείλουσιν θλιβέντες καὶ παθόντες λαβεῖν με.

VIII

1. Τίνα δὲ δοκεῖτε τύπον εἶναι, ὅτι ἐντεῦθεν τῷ Ἰσραήλ προσφέρειν δάμαλιν τοὺς ἄνδρας, ἐν οἷς εἰσὶν ἀμαρτίαι τέλειαι, καὶ σφάξαντας κατακαίειν, καὶ αἵρειν τότε τὴν σποδὸν παιδία καὶ βύλλειν εἰς ἀγγια καὶ περιτιθέναι τὸ ἔριον τὸ κόκκινον ἐπὶ ξύλου (Ἰδὲ πάλιν ὁ τύπος ὁ τοῦ σταυροῦ καὶ τὸ ἔριον τὸ κόκκινον) καὶ τὸ ύσσωπον, καὶ οὕτως ῥαντίζειν τὰ παιδία καθ’ ἕνα τῶν λαὸν, ἵνα ἀγνίζωται ἀπὸ τῶν ἀμαρτιῶν; 2. νοεῖτε, πῶς ἐν ἀπλότητι λέγει ὑμῖν. ὁ μόσχος ὁ Ἰησοῦς ἐστίν, οἱ προσφέροντες ἄνδρες ἀμαρτωλοὶ οἱ προσενέγκαντες αὐτὸν ἐπὶ τὴν σφαγήν. εἰτα οὐκέτι ἄνδρες, οὐκέτι ἀμαρτωλῶν ἡ δόξα. 3. οἱ ῥαντίζοντες παῖδες οἱ εὐαγγελισάμενοι ἥμιν τὴν ἄφεσιν τῶν ἀμαρτιῶν καὶ τὸν ἀγνισμὸν τῆς καρδίας, οἷς ἐδοκεῖ τοῦ εὐαγγελίου τὴν ἐξουσίαν (οὕτως δεκάδου εἰς μαρτύριον τῶν φυλῶν ὁτι δεκάδου φυλαὶ τοῦ Ἰσραήλ), εἰς τὸ κηρύσσειν. 4. διὰ τί δὲ τρεῖς παῖδες οἱ ῥαντίζοντες; εἰς μαρτύριον Ἀβραάμ, Ἰσαὰκ, Ἰακώβ, ὧν οὕτωι μεγάλοι τῷ θεῷ. 5. ὅτι δὲ τὸ ἔριον ἐπὶ τὸ ξύλου; ὅτι ἡ

1 εἰτα... δόξα om. L.

368
are terrible and he can gain it only through pain. Thus he says, "those who will see me, and attain to my kingdom must lay hold of me through pain and suffering."

VIII

1. But what do you think that it typifies, that the commandment has been given to Israel that the men in whom sin is complete offer a heifer and slay it and burn it, and that boys then take the ashes and put them into vessels and bind scarlet wool on sticks (see again the type of the Cross and the scarlet wool) and hyssop, and that the boys all sprinkle the people thus one by one in order that they all be purified from their sins? 2. Observe how plainly he speaks to you. The calf is Jesus; the sinful men offering it are those who brought him to be slain. Then there are no longer men, no longer the glory of sinners. 3. The boys who sprinkle are they who preached to us the forgiveness of sins, and the purification of the heart, to whom he gave the power of the Gospel to preach, and there are twelve as a testimony to the tribes, because there are twelve tribes of Israel. 4. But why are there three boys who sprinkle? As a testimony to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, for these are great before God. 5. And why was the wool put on the wood? Because the king-

1 This seems to be the only possible translation, but the text must surely be corrupt.

369
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

βασιλεία Ἰησού κέπτες ξύλου,1 καὶ ὦτι οἱ ἐλπίζοντες ἐπὶ αὐτοῦ ξήσονται εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα. 6. διὰ τὸ δὲ ἀμα τὸ ἔριον καὶ τὸ ύσσωπον; ὦτι ἐν τῇ βασιλείᾳ αὐτοῦ ἡμέραι ἔσονται πονηραὶ καὶ ρυπαραὶ, ἐν αἷς ἡμεῖς σωθησόμεθα· ὦτι καὶ ὁ ἀληθῶν σάρκα διὰ τοῦ ρύπου τοῦ ύσσωπου ἱταί. 7. καὶ διὰ τοῦτο σωτεῖνα γενόμενα ἡμῖν μὲν ἐστὶν φανερὰ, ἐκείνους δὲ σκοτεινά, ὦτι οὐκ ἡκουσάν φωνῆς κυρίου.

IX

1. Λέγει γὰρ πάλιν περὶ τῶν ὤτιῶν, πῦς περιέτεμεν ἡμῶς τὴν καρδιὰν. Λέγει κύριος εἰς τῷ προφήτῃ: Εἰς ἀκοὴν ὡτίου ὑπήκουσάν μου. καὶ πάλιν λέγει: Ἀκοῇ ἀκούσονται οἱ πόρρωθεν, ἀ ἔποιησα γνῶσονται. καὶ· Περιτμήθητε, λέγει κύριος, τὰς καρδίας ἡμῶν. 2. καὶ πάλιν λέγει· Ἀκοῦε Ἰσραήλ, ὦτι τάδε λέγει κύριος ὁ θεός σου. καὶ πάλιν τὸ πνεῦμα κυρίου προφητεύει·2 Τὸς ἐστὶν ὁ θέλων ἥσσοι εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα; ἀκοῆ ἀκουσάτω τῆς φωνῆς τοῦ παιδὸς μου. 3. καὶ πάλιν λέγει· Ἀκοῦε ὑμᾶς, καὶ ἐνωτίζων γη, ὦτι κύριος ἐλάλησεν ταῦτα εἰς μαρτύριον. καὶ πάλιν λέγει· Ἀκούσατε λόγων κυρίου, ἄρχοντες τοῦ λαοῦ τού· τοῦ. καὶ πάλιν λέγει· Ἀκούσατε, τέκνα, φωνῆς βοῶντος εἰς τῇ ἐρήμῳ. οὐκ εἰς περιέτεμεν ἡμῶν τὰς ἀκοᾶς, ἵνα ἀκούσατε λόγων πιστεύσαμεν ἡμεῖς. 4. ἀλλὰ καὶ ἡ περιτομὴ, ἐφ' ἡ πεποίθασιν, κατήργηται. περιτομὴν γὰρ εἰρήκεν οὐ συρκὸς γενηθῆναι· ἀλλὰ παρέβησαν, ὦτι ἀγγελος πονηρὸς.

1 ξύλου Ν, ξύλοι CS. 2 καὶ πάλιν ... προφητεύει GL, om. ΝC.
dom of Jesus is on the wood,¹ and because those who hope on him shall live for ever. 6. But why are the wool and the hyssop together? Because in his kingdom there shall be evil and foul days, in which we shall be saved, for he also who has pain in his flesh is cured by the foulness of the hyssop. 7. And for this reason the things which were thus done are plain to us, but obscure to them, because they did not hear the Lord's voice.

IX

1. For he speaks again concerning the ears, how he circumcised our hearts; for the Lord says in the Prophet: "In the hearing of the ear they obey me." And again he says, "They who are afar off shall hear clearly, they shall know the things that I have done," and "Circumcise your hearts, saith the Lord." 2. And again he says, "Hear, O Israel, thus saith the Lord thy God," and again the Spirit of the Lord prophesies, "Who is he that will live for ever? Let him hear the voice of my servant." 3. And again he says, "Hear, O heaven, and give ear, O earth, for the Lord hath spoken these things for a testimony." And again he says, "Hear the word of the Lord, ye rulers of this people." And again he says, "Hear, O children, a voice of one crying in the wilderness." So then he circumcised our hearing in order that we should hear the word and believe. 4. But moreover the circumcision in which they trusted has been abolished. For he declared that circumcision was not of the flesh, but they erred because an evil angel

¹ Or "on the tree."
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

Jer. 4, 8, 4  ἐσόφιξεν αὐτούς. 5. λέγει πρὸς αὐτούς· Τάδε λέγει κύριος ὁ θεὸς ὑμῶν (ὅτε εὐρίσκω ἐντολήν). Μὴ σπείρητε ἐπ᾿ ἀκάνθαις, περιτμήθητε τῷ κυρίῳ ὑμῶν. καὶ τί λέγει; Περιτμήθητε τὴν σκληροκαρδίαν ὑμῶν, καὶ τὸν τράχηλον ὑμῶν οὐ σκληρυνεῖτε. λάβει πάλιν. Ἦδον, λέγει κύριος, πάντα τὰ ἔθνη ἀπερίτμηται ἀκροβυστίαν, ὁ δὲ λαὸς οὗτος ἀπερίτμητος καρδίας. 6. ἀλλ’ ἐρεῖς· Καὶ μὴν περιτέμηται ὁ λαὸς εἰς σφραγίδα. ἀλλὰ καὶ πᾶς Σύρος καὶ Ἄραψ καὶ πάντες οἱ ιερεῖς τῶν εἰδώλων. ἀρὰ οὖν κἀκεῖνοι ἐκ τῆς διαθήκης αὐτῶν εἰσίν; ἀλλὰ καὶ οἱ Αἰγυπτίων ἐν περιτομῇ εἰσίν. 7. μάθετε οὖν, τέκνα ἀγαπητοί, περὶ πάντων πλούσιως, ὅτι Ἀβραὰμ, πρώτος περιτομῆν δοὺς, ἐν πνεύματι προβλέψας εἰς τὸν Ἰησοῦν περιτεμεν, λαβὼν πρῶτο γραμμάτων δόγματα. 8. λέγει γάρ· Καὶ περιτεμεν Ἀβραὰμ ἐκ τοῦ οἴκου αὐτοῦ ἄνδρας δεκαοκτὼ καὶ τριακοσίους. τίς οὖν ἡ δοθείσα αὐτῷ γνώσις; μάθετε, ὅτι τοὺς δεκαοκτῶν πρώτους, καὶ διάστημα ποιήσας λέγει τριακοσίους. τὸ δεκαοκτὼ ἤ δέκα, ἡ ὁκτώ· ἔχεις Ἰησοῦν. ότι δὲ ὁ σταυρὸς ἐν τῷ ταύτης ἡμέλλειν ἔχειν τὴν χάριν, λέγει καὶ τοὺς τριακοσίους. δηλοῖ οὖν τῶν μεν Ἰησοῦν ἐν τοῖς δυσών γράμμασιν, καὶ ἐν τῷ ἐν τῶν σταυρῶν. 9. οἶδεν ὁ τὴν ἐμφύτου δωρεάν τῆς διδαχῆς αὐτοῦ θέμενος ἐν ἡμῖν. οὐδεὶς γρησιώτερον ἐμαθεν ἀπ᾿ ἐμοῦ λόγον· ἀλλὰ οἶδα, ὅτι ἡμῖν ἐστε ύμεῖς.
THE EPISTLE OF BARNABAS, ix. 4–ix. 9

was misleading them. 5. He says to them, "Thus saith the Lord your God" (here I find a commandment), "Sow not among thorns, be circumcised to your Lord." And what does he say? "Circumcise the hardness of your heart, and stiffen not your neck." Take it again: "Behold, saith the Lord, all the heathen are uncircumcised in the foreskin, but this people is uncircumcised in heart."

6. But you will say, surely the people has received circumcision as a seal? Yes, but every Syrian and Arab and all priests of the idols have been circumcised; are then these also within their covenant?—indeed even the Egyptians belong to the circumcision. 7. Learn fully then, children of love, concerning all things, for Abraham, who first circumcised, did so looking forward in the spirit to Jesus, and had received the doctrines of three letters. 8. For it says, "And Abraham circumcised from his household eighteen men and three hundred." 2 What then was the knowledge that was given to him? Notice that he first mentions the eighteen, and after a pause the three hundred. The eighteen is I (=ten) and H (=8)—you have Jesus 3—and because the cross was destined to have grace in the T he says "and three hundred." 4 So he indicates Jesus in the two letters and the cross in the other. 9. He knows this who placed the gift of his teaching in our hearts. No one has heard a more excellent lesson from me, but I know that you are worthy.

1 i.e. of the Jews.
2 In Greek, which expresses numerals by letters, this is ΤΙΗ.
3 Because ΙΗ are in Greek the first letters of the word Jesus.
4 The Greek symbol for 300 is Τ.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

X

Lev. 11:
Deut. 14

1. Ὁτι δὲ Μωϋσῆς εἶπεν. Οὐ φάγεσθε χοίρον οὔτε ἀετὸν οὔτε ὄξυπτερον οὔτε κόρακα οὔτε πάντα ἰχθύν, δές οὐκ ἔχει λεπίδα ἐν ἑαυτῷ, τρία ἔλαβεν ἐν τῇ συνέσει δόγματα. 2. πέρας γέ τοι λέγει αὐτοῖς ἐν τῷ Δευτερονόμῳ. Καὶ διαθήσομαι πρὸς τὸν λαὸν τούτον τὰ δικαιώματά μου. ἀρα οὖν οὐκ ἔστιν ἐντολή θεοῦ τὸ μὴ τρώγειν, Μωϋσῆς δὲ ἐν πνεύματι ἐλάλησεν. 3. τὸ οὖν χοιρίον πρὸς τούτο εἶπεν· οὐ κολληθήσῃ, φησίν, ἀνθρώποις τοιούτοις, οἵτινες εἰςν ὅμοιοι χοίρων
1 τοινύστιν ὅταν σπαταλῶσιν, ἐπιλαμβάνονται τοῦ κυρίου, ὅταν δὲ υἱοῦται, ἐπιγυνακοῦσιν τῶν κυρίων, ὡς καὶ ὁ χοῖρος ὅταν τρώγει τῶν κύριων οὐκ οἶδεν, ὅταν δὲ πεινᾷ κρανγάζει, καὶ λαβῶν πάλιν σιωπᾶ. 4. Οὐδὲ φαγῇ τὸν ἀετὸν οὐδὲ τὸν ὄξυπτερον οὐδὲ τὸν ἱερὰν οὐδὲ τὸν κόρακα· οὐ μή, φησίν, κολληθῆσῃ οὐδὲ ὁμοιωθῆσῃ ἀνθρώποις τοιούτοις, οἵτινες οὐκ οἴδασιν διὰ κόσμου καὶ ἰδρύτων πορίζειν ἑαυτοῖς τὴν τροφὴν, ἀλλὰ ἄρπάζουσιν τὰ ἀλλότρια ἐν ἀνομία αὐτῶν καὶ ἐπιτηροῦσιν ὡς ἐν ἀκεραιοσύνῃ περιπατοῦντες καὶ περιβλέπονται, τίνα ἐκδύσωσιν διὰ τὴν πλεονέξιαν, ὡς καὶ τὰ ὄρνη ταῦτα μόνα ἑαυτοῖς οὐ προίζει τὴν τροφὴν, ἀλλὰ ἄργα καθήμενα ἐκζητεῖ, πῶς ἀλλοτρίας σάρκας καταφάγη, ὡς δ' λοιμὰ τῇ πυρείᾳ αὐτῶν. 5. Καὶ οὐ φάγῃ, φησίν, σμύψωσιν οὐδὲ πολύτοτον οὐδὲ σηπιαν· οὐ μή, φησίν, ὁμοιωθήσῃ κολλώμενος 2 ἀνθρώποις τοιούτοις, οἵτινες εἰς τέλος

1 χοίρων ἡ, χοίροις οὗ, 2 κολλώμενος GL, om. ἡ C.
X

1. Now, in that Moses said, "Ye shall not eat swine, nor an eagle, nor a hawk, nor a crow, nor any fish which has no scales on itself," he included three doctrines in his understanding. Moreover he says to them in Deuteronomy, "And I will make a covenant of my ordinances with this people." So then the ordinance of God is not abstinence from eating, but Moses spoke in the spirit. 3. He mentioned the swine for this reason: you shall not consort, he means, with men who are like swine, that is to say, when they have plenty they forget the Lord, but when they are in want they recognise the Lord, just as the swine when it eats does not know its master, but when it is hungry it cries out, and after receiving food is again silent. 4. "Neither shalt thou eat the eagle nor the hawk nor the kite nor the crow." Thou shalt not, he means, join thyself or make thyself like to such men, as do not know how to gain their food by their labour and sweat, but plunder other people's property in their iniquity, and lay wait for it, though they seem to walk in innocence, and look round to see whom they may plunder in their covetousness, just as these birds alone provide no food for themselves, but sit idle, and seek how they may devour the flesh of others, and become pestilent in their iniquity. 5. "Thou shalt not eat," he says, "the lamprey nor the polypus nor the cuttlefish." Thou shalt not, he means, consort with or become like such men who are utterly ungodly and who are already condemned
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

eἰσίν ἁσβεῖς καὶ κεκριμένοι ἡδὴ τῷ θανάτῳ, ὡς καὶ ταῦτα τὰ ἱχθύdia μόνα ἐπικατάρατα ἐν τῷ βυθῷ νῆχεται, μή κολυμβῶντα ὡς τὰ λοιπὰ, ἀλλ' ἐν τῇ γῇ κάτω τοῦ βυθοῦ κατοικεῖ. 6. ἀλλὰ καὶ τὸν δασύποδα οὐ φάγης. πρὸς τί; οὐ μή γένης, φησίν, παιδοθάρορος οὐδὲ ὁμοιωθησθῇ τοῖς τοιούτοις, ὅτι ὁ λαγὼς κατ' ἐνιαυτὸν πλεονεκτεῖ τὴν ἀφόδευσιν· ὅσα γὰρ ἔτη ζῇ, τοσαῦτας ἔχει τρύπας. 7. ἀλλὰ οὖδὲ τὴν φαναν φάγῃς οὐ μή, φησίν, γένη μοιχὸς οὖν ἐφορεύς οὖν ὁμοιωθῆσῃ τοῖς τοιούτοις. πρὸς τί; ὅτι τὸ χρόνον τούτο παρ' ἐνιαυτὸν ἀλλάσσει τὴν φύσιν καὶ ποτὲ μὲν ἄρρεν, ποτὲ δὲ θηλυ γίνεται. 8. ἀλλὰ καὶ τὴν γαλήνην ἐμίσησεν καλῶς. οὐ μή, φησίν, γεννηθῇς τοιούτος, οἶνος ἀκούομεν ἀνομίαν ποιοῦντας ἐν τῷ στόματι δι' ἀκαθαρσίαν, οὐδὲ κολληθῆσῃ ταῖς ἀκαθάρτοις ταῖς τὴν ἀνομίαν ποιοῦσαι ἐν τῷ στόματι. τὸ γὰρ χρόνον τούτο τῷ στόματι κύει. 9. περὶ μὲν τῶν βρωμάτων λαβὼν Μωϋσῆς τρί τοῦγματα οὕτως ἐν πνεύματι ἐλάλησεν· οἱ δὲ κατ' ἐπιθυμίαν τῆς σαρκὸς ως περὶ βρώσεως προσεδέχαντο. 10. λαμβάνει δὲ τῶν αὐτῶν τριῶν δογμάτων γνώσιν Δανείδ καὶ λέγει· Μακάριος ἄνήρ, δε οὐκ ἐπορεύθη ἐν βουλή ἁσβεῶν, καθὼς καὶ οἱ ἱχθύες πορευόνται ἐν σκότει εἰς τὰ βάθη· καὶ ἐν ὅδροι ἀμαρτώλων οὐκ ἔστη, καθὼς οἱ δοκοῦντες φοβεῖ- σθαι τὸν κύριον ἀμαρτάνουσιν ὡς ὁ χοῖρος, καὶ ἐπὶ καθέδραν λοιμῶν οὐκ ἐκάθισεν, καθὼς τὰ πετεινὰ καθήμενα εἰς ἁρπαγήν. ἔχετε τελείως

376
THE EPISTLE OF BARNABAS, x. 5–x. 10

to death, just as these fish alone are accursed, and float in the deep water, not swimming like the others but living on the ground at the bottom of the sea. 6. Sed nec “leporem manducabis.” Non eris, inquit, corruptor puerorum nec similabis talibus. Quia lepus singulis annis facit ad adsellandum singula foramina; et quotquot annis vivit, totidem foramina facit. 7. Sed “nec beluam, inquit, manducabis”; hoc est non eris moecus aut adulter, nec corruptor, nec similabis talibus. Quia haec bestia alternis annis mutat naturam et fit modo masculus, modo femina. 8. Sed et quod dicit mustelam odibis. Non eris, inquit, talis, qui audit iniquitatem et loquitur immunditiam. Non inquit adhaerebis immundis qui iniquitatem faciunt ore suo. 9. Moses received three doctrines concerning food and thus spoke of them in the Spirit; but they received them as really referring to food, owing to the lust of their flesh. 10. But David received knowledge concerning the same three doctrines, and says: “Blessed is the man who has not gone in the counsel of the ungodly” as the fishes go in darkness in the deep waters, “and has not stood in the way of sinners” like those who seem to fear the Lord, but sin like the swine, “and has not sat in the seat of the scorners” like the birds who sit and wait for their prey. Grasp fully

1 The Latin here given is that of the Old Latin version, and does not in all places correspond quite accurately to the Greek.

2 This prohibition is not in the O.T.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

καὶ περὶ τῆς βρώσεως. 11. πάλιν λέγει Μωϋσῆς:
Φάγεσθε πάν τι διχηλοῦν καὶ μαρυκώμενον. τι λέγει;
ὅτι τὴν τροφὴν λαμβάνων οἶδεν τὸν τρέφοντα αὐτὸν καὶ ἐπὶ αὐτῷ ἀναπαυόμενος εὐφραίνεσθαι δοκεῖ.
καλὸς εἶπεν βλέπων τὴν ἐντολήν. τί οὖν λέγει;
κολλάσθε μετὰ τῶν φοβομένων τὸν κύριον, μετὰ τῶν μελετῶν τὸ ἔλαβον διάσταλμα ῥήματος ἐν τῇ καρδίᾳ, μετὰ τῶν λαλούντων τὰ διδασκόματα κυρίου καὶ τηρούντων, μετὰ τῶν εἰδότων, ὅτι ἡ μελέτη ἐστὶν ἔργον εὐφροσύνης, καὶ ἀναμαρυκώμενον τὸν λόγον κυρίου. τί δὲ τὸ διχηλοῦν; ὅτι ὁ δίκαιος καὶ ἐν τούτῳ τῷ κόσμῳ περιπατεῖ καὶ τὸν ἄγιον αἰῶνα ἐκδέχεται. βλέπετε, πῶς ἐνομοθετήσειν Μωϋσῆς καλῶς. 12. ἀλλὰ πόθεν ἐκεῖνοι ταῦτα νοήσαντες ταῦτα νοήσαντες τὰς ἐντολὰς λαλοῦμεν, ὡς ἤθελησαν ὁ κύριος. διὰ τούτου περιέτεμεν τὰς ἀκοὰς ἡμῶν καὶ τὰς καρδίας, ἵνα συνιῶμεν ταῦτα.

XI

1. Ζητήσωμεν δὲ, εἰ ἐμέλησεν τῷ κυρίῳ προ-
φανερώσαι περὶ τοῦ ὦδατος καὶ περὶ τοῦ σταυροῦ.
περὶ μὲν τοῦ ὦδατος γέγραπται ἐπὶ τῶν ᾿Ισραήλ,
pῶς τὸ βάπτισμα τὸ φέρον ἄφεσιν ἀμαρτίων οὐ
μὴ προσδέχονται, ἀλλ’ ἐαυτοῖς οἰκοδομήσουσιν.
2. λέγει γὰρ ὁ προφήτης: Ἐκστήθη οὐρανὲς, καὶ ἐπὶ τούτῳ πλεῖον φρεῖται ἡ γῆ, ὧτι δύο καὶ
ποιηρά ἐποίησεν ὁ λαὸς οὗτος: ἐμὲ ἐγκατέλιπον,

378
the doctrines concerning food. 11. Moses says again, "Eat of every animal that is cloven hoofed and ruminant." What does he mean? That he who receives food knows him who feeds him, and rests on him and seems to rejoice. Well did he speak with regard to the commandment. What then does he mean? Consort with those who fear the Lord, with those who meditate in their heart on the meaning of the word which they have received, with those who speak of and observe the ordinances of the Lord, with those who know that meditation is a work of gladness, and who ruminate on the word of the Lord. But what does "the cloven hoofed" mean? That the righteous both walks in this world and looks forward to the holy age. See how well Moses legislated. 12. But how was it possible for them to understand or comprehend these things? But we having a righteous understanding of them announce the commandments as the Lord wished. For this cause he circumcised our hearing and our hearts that we should comprehend these things.

XI

1. But let us enquire if the Lord took pains to Baptism foretell the water of baptism and the cross. Concerning the water it has been written with regard to Israel that they will not receive the baptism that brings the remission of sins, but will build for themselves. 2. For the Prophet says, "Be astonished O heaven, and let the earth tremble the more at this, that this people hath committed two evils: they have deserted me, the spring of life, and they have
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

πηγήν ζωῆς, καὶ ἑαυτοῖς ὄρυξαν βόθρον θανάτου.

3. Μὴ πέτρα ἔρημός ἐστιν τὸ ὄρος τὸ ἁγιόν μου
Σινᾶ; ἔσεσθε γὰρ ὡς πετεινοῦ νοσσού ἀνυπτάμενοι
νοσσιάς ἀφηρημένοι. 4. καὶ πάλιν λέγει ὁ προ-
φῆτης: Ἑγὼ πορεύομαι ἐμπροσθεν σου καὶ ὄρη
όμαλῳ καὶ πύλαις χαλκᾶς συντριφώ καὶ μοχλοὺς
σιδηροὺς συγκλάσω, καὶ δώσω σοι θησαυροὺς
σκοτεινοὺς, ἀποκρύφους, ἀφότους, ἵνα γνῶσιν

5. καὶ Κατοικήσεις ἐν ὑψηλῷ στηλαίῳ πέτρας ἰσχυρᾶς,
καὶ τὸ ὕδωρ αὐτοῦ πιστῶν. βασιλέα μετὰ δόξης ὄψεσθε,
καὶ ἡ ψυχὴ ὑμῶν μελετήσει φόβον κυρίου. 6. καὶ
πάλιν ἐν ἄλλῳ προφῆτῃ λέγειν. Καὶ ἔσται ὁ
tαύτα ποιῶν ὅσ τὸ ἕξυλον τὸ περιτεμένου παρὰ
tὰς διεξόδους τῶν ὑδάτων, ὁ τὸν καρπὸν αὐτοῦ
dώσει ἐν καιρῷ αὐτοῦ, καὶ τὸ φύλλον αὐτοῦ ὄλλον
ἀπορνήσεται, καὶ πάντα, ὡσα ἵνα ποιήσῃ κατευνα-
thήσεται. 7. οὐχ οὕτως οἱ ἀσεβεῖς, οὐχ οὕτως,
ἀλλ ἢ ὡς ὁ χιοῦς, ὃν ἐκρίπτει ὁ ἀνεμὸς ἀπὸ προσώπου
tῆς γῆς. διὰ τούτο οὐκ ἀναστήσονται ἀσεβεῖς ἐν
κρίσει οὔθε ἀμαρτωλοὶ ἐν βουκῇ δικαίων, ὅτι
γυνώσκει κύριος ὄνων δικαίων, καὶ ὄνως ἀσεβῶν
ἀπολεῖται. 8. αἰσθάνεσθε, πῶς τὸ ὕδωρ καὶ τὸν
σταυρὸν ἐπὶ τὸ αὐτὸ ὄροσεν. τοῦτο γὰρ λέγει
μακάριοι, οἱ ἐπὶ τὸν σταυρὸν ἐλπίζοντες κατέ-
βησαν εἰς τὸ ὕδωρ, ὅτι τὸν μὲν μισθὸν λέγει ἐν
καιρῷ αὐτοῦ· τότε, φησίν, ἀποδώσω. νῦν δὲ ὁ
λέγει· τὰ φύλλα οὐκ ἀπορνήσεται, τοῦτο λέγει·
ὅτι πᾶν ῥῆμα, ὅ ἐὰν ἐξελεύσεται ἐξ ὑμῶν διὰ τοῦ
στόματος ὑμῶν ἐν πίστει καὶ ἀγάπῃ, ἔσται εἰς
ἐπιστροφὴν καὶ ἐλπίδα πολλοῖς. 9. καὶ πάλιν
ἐτερος προφήτης λέγει. Καὶ ἦν ἡ γῆ τοῦ Ἰσακώβ

380
THE EPISTLE OF BARNABAS, xi. 2–xi. 9

dug for themselves a cistern of death. 3. Is my holy mountain Sinai a desert rock? For ye shall be as the fledgling birds, fluttering about when they are taken away from the nest." 4. And again the Prophet says, "I will go before you and I will make mountains level, and I will break gates of brass, and I will shatter bars of iron, and I will give thee treasures of darkness, secret, invisible, that they may know that I am the Lord God." 5. And, "Thou shalt dwell in a lofty cave of a strong rock." And, "His water is sure, ye shall see the King in his glory, and your soul shall meditate on the fear of the Lord." 6. And again he says in another Prophet, "And he who does these things shall be as the tree, which is planted at the partings of the waters, which shall give its fruit in its season, and its leaf shall not fade, and all things, whatsoever he doeth, shall prosper. 7. It is not so with the wicked, it is not so; but they are even as the chaff which the wind driveth away from the face of the earth. Therefore the wicked shall not rise up in judgment, nor sinners in the counsel of the righteous, for the Lord knoweth the way of the righteous, and the way of the ungodly shall perish." 8. Mark how he described the water and the cross together. For he means this: blessed are those who hoped on the cross, and descended into the water. For he speaks of their reward "in his season"; at that time, he says, I will repay. But now when he says, "Their leaves shall not fade," he means that every word which shall come forth from your mouth in faith and love, shall be for conversion and hope for many. 9. And again another Prophet says, "And the land of Jacob was praised
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

ἐπαινουμένη παρὰ πᾶσαν τὴν γῆν. τούτο λέγει·

Cf. Wisd. 8, 19
tο σκεύος τοῦ πνεύματος αὐτοῦ δοξάζει. 10. είται
tί λέγει; Καὶ ἂν ποταμὸς ἔλκων ἐκ δεξιῶν, καὶ
ἀνέβαινεν ἐξ αὐτοῦ δένδρα ὀραία· καὶ ἄν φάγῃ
ἐξ αὐτῶν, ἥσσεται εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα. 11. τοῦτο λέγει
ὅτι ἡμεῖς μὲν καταβαίνομεν εἰς τὸ ὕδωρ γέμοντες
ἀμαρτίων καὶ ῥύπου, καὶ ἀναβαίνομεν καρποφο-
ροῦντες ἐν τῇ καρδίᾳ τοῦ φόβου καὶ τῇ ἐλπίδα
eἰς τὸν Ἰσραήλ ἐν τῷ πνεύματι ἔχοντες. Καὶ ἄν
φάγῃ ἀπὸ τούτων, ἥσσεται εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα,
tοῦτο λέγει· ὃς ἂν, φησίν, ἀκούσῃ τούτων λαλο-
μένων καὶ πιστεύσῃ, ἥσσεται εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα.

XII

1. Ὠμοίως πάλιν περὶ τοῦ σταυροῦ ὄριζεν
ev ἄλλῳ προφήτῃ λέγοντι· Καὶ πότε ταύτα συν-
tελεσθήσεται; λέγει κύριος· ὅταν ἐξὸλον κληθῇ
καὶ ἀναστῇ, καὶ ὅταν ἐκ ἐξὸλου αἷμα στάξῃ.
ἄρεις πάλιν περὶ τοῦ σταυροῦ καὶ τοῦ σταυροῦ-
σθαι μέλλοντος. 2. λέγει δὲ πάλιν τῷ Μωϋσῇ,¹
πολεμομένου τοῦ Ἰσραήλ ὑπὸ τῶν ἄλλων ἀνθρώ-
πών, καὶ ἂν ὑπομνήσῃ αὐτούς πολεμομένους, ὅτι ἔδει
τὰς ἀμαρτίας αὐτῶν παρεδόθησαν εἰς θάνατον;
λέγει εἰς τὴν καρδίαν Μωϋσέως τὸ πνεῦμα, ἢν
ποιήσῃ τόπου σταυροῦ καὶ τοῦ μέλλοντος πᾶσ-
χειν, ὅτι, ἔδει μή, φησίν, ἐλπίδωσιν ἐπ' αὐτῷ, εἰς
tὸν αἰῶνα πολεμηθῆσονται. τίθησιν οὖν Μωϋσῆς
ἐν ἐφ' ἐν ὁπλον ἐν μέσῳ τῆς πυγμῆς, καὶ ὕψηλο-
tερος σταθεὶς πάντων ἐξετείνεν τὰς χεῖρας, καὶ

¹ τῷ Μωϋσῇ καὶ ἐν τῷ Μωϋσῇ GL "in Moses" i.e. in the
"Pentateuch" which was spoken of as "Moses."

382
THE EPISTLE OF BARNABAS, xi. 9–xii. 2

above every land.” He means to say that he is glorifying the vessel of his Spirit. 10. What does he say next? “And there was a river flowing on the right hand, and beautiful trees grew out of it, and whosoever shall eat of them shall live for ever.”

11. He means to say that we go down into the water full of sins and foulness, and we come up bearing the fruit of fear in our hearts, and having hope on Jesus in the Spirit. “And whosoever shall eat of them shall live for ever.” He means that whosoever hears and believes these things spoken shall live for ever.

XII

1. Similarly, again, he describes the cross in The Cross another Prophet, who says, “And when shall all these things be accomplished? saith the Lord. When the tree shall fall and rise, and when blood shall flow from the tree.” Here again you have a reference to the cross, and to him who should be crucified. 2. And he says again to Moses, when Israel was warred upon by strangers, and in order to remind those who were warred upon that they were delivered unto death by reason of their sins—the Spirit speaks to the heart of Moses to make a representation of the cross, and of him who should suffer, because, he says, unless they put their trust in him, they shall suffer war for ever. Moses therefore placed one shield upon another in the midst of the fight, and standing there raised above them all kept stretching
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

οὔτως πάλιν ἕνικα ὁ Ἰσραήλ. εἶτα, ὅπόταν καθεὐλεν, θανατοῦντο. 3. πρὸς τι; ἦν γνῶσιν ὅτι οὐ δύνανται σωθῆναι, ἐὰν μὴ ἐπ' αὐτῷ ἐλπίσωσιν. 4. καὶ πάλιν ἐν ἑτέρῳ προφήτῃ λέγειν "Ὅλην τὴν ἡμέραν ἐξεπέτασα τὰς χεῖράς μου πρὸς λαὸν ἀπειθής καὶ ἀντιλέγοντα ὅδῷ δικαία μου. 5. πάλιν Μωύσῆς ποιεῖ τύπον τοῦ Ἰησοῦ, ὅτι δει αὐτὸν παθεῖν, καὶ αὐτὸς ἤρπονδεῖσε, ὅτι ὁ δόξουσιν ἀπολογέωνται, ἐν σημείῳ πῖπτοντος τοῦ Ἰσραήλ,

Num. 21, ff. (ἐποίησεν γὰρ κύριος πάντα ὅφιν δάκνειν αὐτούς, καὶ ἀπέθνησεν ἡ ἐπειδὴ ἡ παράβασις διὰ τοῦ ὁφεώς ἐν Ἕδῳ ἐγενέτο), ἦν ἐλεήμονας αὐτούς, ὅτι διὰ τὴν παράβασιν αὐτῶν εἰς θλίψιν θανάτου παραδοθήσονται. 6. πέρας γέ τοι αὐτὸς Μωύσῆς ἐντειλάμενος. Οὐκ ἔσται ὁμοῖος ὑμᾶς συνενυτὸν ὑπὲρ γλυπτὸν εἰς θεὸν ὑμῶν, αὐτὸς ποιεῖ, ἦν τύπον τοῦ Ἰησοῦ δείξῃ. ποιεῖ ὅτι Μωύσῆς χαλκοῦ ὁφιν καὶ τίθησιν εὐνοῦς καὶ κηρύγματι καλεῖ τὸν λαὸν. 7. ἑλθόντες δὲν ἔπτι τὸ αὐτὸ ἐδέοντο Μωῦσέως, ἦν περὶ αὐτῶν ἀνενέγκη δέσσιν, περὶ τῆς ἱάσεως αὐτῶν, εἰπεὶ δὲν πρὸς αὐτούς Μωῦσῆς·

Dext. 27, 15

Num. 21, 8, 9 "Ὅταν, φησίν, δεηθῇ τις ὑμῶν, ἐλθέτω ἐπὶ τὸν ὅφιν τὸν ἐπὶ τοῦ ἐξολου ἐπικείμενον καὶ ἐπεισάτω πιστεύσας, ὅτι αὐτὸς ὅν νεκρὸς δύναται ἔρπονδεῖσα, καὶ παραχρῆμα σωθῆσεται. καὶ οὕτως ἐποίουν. ἐχεις πάλιν καὶ ἦν τούτους τὴν δόξαν τοῦ Ἰησοῦ, ὅτι ἦν αὐτῷ πάντα καὶ εἰς αὐτόν.

Num. 19, 17 8. τι λέγει πάλιν Μωύσῆς Ἰησοῦ, νῦν Ναυή, ἐπιθετὶς αὐτῷ τοῦτο τὸ ὄνομα, ὅτι προφήτης, ἦν μόνων ἀκούσῃ πᾶς ὁ λαὸς; ὅτι πάντα ὁ πατὴρ

1 ἀπειθής Ν, ἀπειθοῦντα Cg (LXX).
out his hands, and so Israel again began to be victorious: then, whenever he let them drop they began to perish. 3. Why? That they may know that they cannot be saved if they do not hope on him. 4. And again he says in another Prophet, "I stretched out my hands the whole day to a disobedient people and one that refuses my righteous way." 5. Again Moses makes a representation of Jesus, showing that he must suffer, and shall himself give life, though they will believe that he has been put to death, by the sign given when Israel was falling (for the Lord made every serpent bite them, and they were perishing, for the fall\(^1\) took place in Eve through the serpent), in order to convince them that they will be delivered over to the affliction of death because of their transgression. 6. Moreover, though Moses commanded them:—"You shall have neither graven nor molten image for your God," yet he makes one himself to show a type of Jesus. Moses therefore makes a graven serpent, and places it in honour and calls the people by a proclamation. 7. So they came together and besought Moses that he would offer prayer on their behalf for their healing. But Moses said to them, "Whenever one of you," he said, "be bitten, let him come to the serpent that is placed upon the tree, and let him hope, in faith that it though dead is able to give life, and he shall straightway be saved." And they did so. In this also you have again the glory of Jesus, for all things are in him and for him. 8. Again, why does Joshua Moses say to Jesus, the son of Naue,\(^2\) when he gives him, prophet as he is, this name, that the whole

\(^1\) Literally the "transgression."  
\(^2\) i.e. Joshua the son of Nun, of which names Jesus and Naue are the Greek forms.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

φανεροὶ περὶ τοῦ νίου Ἰησοῦ. 9. λέγει οὖν Ἄμαλήκ ὁ νίος τοῦ θεου ἔπεξέ τοῖς ἡμερῶν. Ἀλάβε βιβλίων εἰς τὰς χειρὰς σου καὶ γράψων, ἄλλα νίοις τοῦ θεοῦ, τύπῳ δὲ ἐν σαρκὶ φανερωθείς. ὑπὲρ οὖν μέλλουσιν λέγειν, ὅτι Χριστὸς νῖος Δαυεὶδ ἐστιν, ἀυτὸς προφητεύει Δαυεὶδ, φοβούμενος καὶ συνίων τὴν πλάνην τῶν ἀμαρτωλῶν. Ἴπεν κύριος τῷ κυρίῳ μου. Κάθοι ἐκ δέξιών μου, ἐως ἂν θῷ τοὺς ἑξήκοντα σου ὑποτάξων τῶν ποδῶν σου.

11. καὶ πάλιν λέγει οὗτος Ἡσαῖας. Ἴπεν κύριος τῷ Χριστῷ μου κυρίῳ, οὐ ἐκράτησα τῆς δεξιᾶς αὐτοῦ, ἐπακούσας ἐμπροσθεν αὐτοῦ ἔθνη, καὶ ἱσχύς βασιλέως διαρρήξω. ἤδε, πῶς Δαυεὶδ λέγει αὐτοῦ κύριον, καὶ νῖον οὐ λέγει.

XIII

1. Ἰδωμεν δὲ εἰ οὗτος ὁ λαὸς κληρονομεῖ ἢ ὁ πρῶτος, καὶ εἰ ἡ διαθήκη εἰς ἡμᾶς ἢ εἰς ἑκείνους. 2. ἀκούσατε οὖν περὶ τοῦ λαοῦ τῇ λέγει ἡ γραφή. Ἐδείτο δὲ Ἰσαὰκ περὶ Ῥεβέκκας τῆς γυναικὸς αὐτοῦ, ὅτι στείρα ἦν καὶ συνέλαβεν. εἶτα ἤξιλθεν Ῥεβέκκα πυθέσθαι παρὰ κυρίου, καὶ εἶπεν κύριος πρὸς αὐτὴν. Δύο ἔθνη ἐν τῇ γαστρί σου καὶ δύο λαοὶ ἐν τῇ κοιλίᾳ σου, καὶ Ἰδωμεν δὲ εἰ οὗτος Δαυεὶδ ἐστιν, ὁ Χριστὸς νῖος Δαυεὶδ ἐστιν. 1

CG.

386
THE EPISTLE OF BARNABAS, xii. 8–xiii. 2

people should listen to him alone? Because the Father was revealing everything concerning his Son Jesus. 9. Moses therefore says to Jesus the son of Naue, after giving him this name, when he sent him to spy out the land, “Take a book in thy hands and write what the Lord saith, that the Son of God shall in the last day tear up by the roots the whole house of Amalek.” 10. See again Jesus, not as son of man, but as Son of God, but manifested in a type in the flesh. Since therefore they are going to say that the Christ is David’s son, David himself prophesies, fearing and understanding the error of the sinners, “The Lord said to my Lord sit thou on my right hand until I make thy enemies thy footstool.” 11. And again Isaiah speaks thus, “The Lord said to Christ my Lord, whose right hand I held, that the nations should obey before him, and I will shatter the strength of Kings.” See how “David calls him Lord” and does not say Son.

XIII

1. Now let us see whether this people or the former people is the heir, and whether the covenant is for us or for them. 2. Hear then what the Scripture says concerning the people: “And Isaac prayed concerning Rebecca his wife, because she was barren, and she conceived. Then Rebecca went forth to enquire of the Lord and the Lord said to her: two nations are in thy womb, and two peoples in thy belly, and one people shall

387
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

υπερέχει λαὸς λαοῦ καὶ ὁ μεῖζων δουλεύει τῷ ἐλάσσονι. 3. αἰσθάνεσθαι ὁφείλεται, τίς ὁ Ἰσαὰκ καὶ τίς ἡ Ἐρεβέκκα, καὶ ἐπὶ τίνων δέδειχεν, ὅτι μεῖζων ὁ λαὸς οὕτως ἡ ἐκείνως. 4. καὶ ἐν ἀλλῃ προφητείᾳ λέγει φανερώτερον ὁ Ἰακὼβ πρὸς Ἰωσήφ τὸν υἱὸν αὐτοῦ, λέγων Ἰδοὺ, οὐκ ἐστηρησεν με κύριος τοῦ προσώπου σου προσάγαγέ μοι τοὺς υἱοὺς σου, ἵνα εὐλογήσω αὐτοὺς. 5. καὶ προσήγαγεν Ἐφραίμ καὶ Μανασσή, τὸν Μανασσή θέλων ἵνα εὐλογηθῇ, ὅτι πρεσβύτερος ἦν ὁ γὰρ Ἰωσήφ προσήγαγεν εἰς τὴν δεξιὰν χεῖρα τοῦ πατρὸς Ἰακὼβ. εἶδεν δὲ Ἰακὼβ τύπον τῷ πνεύματι τοῦ λαοῦ τοῦ μεταξύ· καὶ τῇ λέγει; Καὶ ἐποίησεν Ἰακὼβ ἐναλλὰς τὰς χειρὰς αὐτοῦ καὶ ἐπέθηκεν τῇ δεξιᾷ ἐπὶ τὴν κεφαλὴν Ἐφραίμ, τοῦ δευτέρου καὶ νεότερου, καὶ εὐλόγησεν αὐτοῖς καὶ εἶπεν Ἰωσήφ πρὸς Ἰακὼβ· Μετάθεσις σου τὴν δεξιὰν ἐπὶ τὴν κεφαλὴν Μανασσῆ, ὅτι πρωτότοκός μου υἱὸς ἔστιν. καὶ εἶπεν Ἰακὼβ πρὸς Ἰωσήφ. Οἶδα, τέκνον, οἶδα· ἀλλ' ὁ μεῖζων δουλεύει τῷ ἐλάσσονι, καὶ οὕτως δὲ εὐλογηθῆσεται. 6. βλέπετε, ἐπὶ τίνων τέθεικεν, τῶν λαῶν τούτων εἶναι πρῶτον καὶ τῆς διαθήκης κληρονόμου. 7. εἰ οὖν ἔτι καὶ διὰ τοῦ Ἀβραὰμ ἐμνήσθη, ἀπέχομεν τὸ τελεῖον τῆς γνώσεως ἡμῶν. τί οὖν λέγει τῷ Ἀβραὰμ, ὅτε μόνος πιστεύσας ἐτέθη εἰς δικαιοσύνην; Ἰδοὺ, τέθεικά σε, Ἀβραὰμ, πατέρα ἐθνῶν τῶν πιστεύσων δι' ἀκροβυστίας τῷ θεῷ.
overcome a people, and the greater shall serve the less." 3. You ought to understand who is Isaac and who is Rebecca, and of whom he has shown that this people is greater than that people. 4. And in another prophecy Jacob speaks more plainly to Joseph his son, saying, "Behold the Lord hath not deprived me of thy presence; bring me thy sons, that I may bless them." 5. And he brought Ephraim and Manasses, and wished that Manasses should be blessed, because he was the elder; for Joseph brought him to the right hand of his father Jacob. But Jacob saw in the spirit a type of the people of the future. And what does he say? "And Jacob crossed his hands, and placed his right hand on the head of Ephraim, the second and younger son, and blessed him; and Joseph said to Jacob, Change thy right hand on to the head of Manasses, for he is my first-born son. And Jacob said to Joseph, I know it, my child, I know it; but the greater shall serve the less, and this one shall indeed be blessed." 6. See who it is of whom he ordained that this people is the first and heir of the covenant. 7. If then besides this he remembered it also in the case of Abraham, we reach the perfection of our knowledge. What then does he say to Abraham, when he alone was faithful, and it was counted him for righteousness? "Behold I have made thee, Abraham, the father of the Gentiles who believe in God in uncircumcision."
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

XIV

1. Ναί, ἄλλα ἰδοὺς, εἰ ἡ διαθήκη, ἢν ὁμοσεν τοῖς πατράσιν δούναι τῷ λαῷ, εἰ δέδωκεν.1 δέδωκεν αὐτὸι δὲ οὐκ ἐγένοντο ἄξιοι λαβεῖν διὰ τὰς ἀμαρτίας αὐτῶν. 2. λέγει γὰρ ὁ προφήτης:

Kαὶ ἦν Μωϋσῆς νηστεύων ἐν ὅρει Σινᾶ, τοῦ λαβεῖν τὴν διαθήκην κυρίου πρὸς τὸν λαόν, ἡμέρας τεσσεράκοντα καὶ νύκτας τεσσεράκοντα. καὶ ἔλαβεν Μωϋσῆς παρὰ κυρίου τὰς δύο πλάκας τὰς γεγραμμένας τῷ δακτύλῳ τῆς χειρὸς κυρίου ἐν πνεύματι καὶ λαβὼν Μωϋσῆς κατέφερεν πρὸς τὸν λαὸν δούναι. 3. καὶ εἶπεν κύριος πρὸς Μωϋσῆν. Μωϋσῆ Μωϋσῆ, κατάβηθι τὸ τάχος, ὅτι ὁ λαὸς σου, ὃν ἔξηγαγες ἐκ γῆς Αἰγύπτου, ἐνόμησεν. καὶ συνήκεν Μωϋσῆς, ὅτι ἐποίησαν εαυτοῖς πάλιν χωνεύματα, καὶ ἔρριψεν ἐκ τῶν χειρῶν,2 καὶ συνετρίβησαν αἱ πλάκαι τῆς διαθήκης κυρίου. 4. Μωϋσῆς μὲν ἔλαβεν, αὐτὸι δὲ οὐκ ἐγένοντο ἄξιοι. πῶς δὲ ἡμεῖς ἐλάβομεν, μάθετε. Μωϋσῆς θεράπων ὃν ἔλαβεν, αὐτὸς δὲ κύριος ἦμιν ἐδωκεν εἰς λαὸν κληρονομίας, δι' ἡμᾶς ὑπομείνας. 5. ἐφανερώθη δὲ, ἵνα κάκειν τελειωθῶσιν τοὺς ἀμαρτήμασιν, καὶ ἡμεῖς διὰ τοῦ κληρονομοῦντος διαθήκην κυρίου Ἰησοῦ λάβωμεν, δι' εἰς τούτο ἡτοιμάσθη, ἵνα αὐτὸς φανεῖς, τὰς ἤδη δεδαπανημένας ἡμῶν καρ-

1 el dēdowkeν η, el dēdowkeν qētōmeν C(GL); the grammar of
the sentence is emended by G to ἄλλα τῇ διαθήκῃ, ἦν . .
λαφ, el dēdowkeν qētōme

2 χειρῶν ἰC, χειρῶν τὰς πλάκας GL.
THE EPISTLE OF BARNABAS, xiv. 1–xiv. 5

XIV

1. So it is. But let us see whether the covenant which he swore to the fathers to give to the people—whether he has given it. He has given it. But they were not worthy to receive it because of their sins. 2. For the Prophet says, "And Moses was fasting on Mount Sinai, to receive the covenant of the Lord for the people, forty days and forty nights. And Moses received from the Lord the two tables, written by the finger of the hand of the Lord in the Spirit"; and Moses took them, and carried them down to give them to the people. 3. And the Lord said to Moses, "Moses, Moses, go down quickly, for thy people whom thou didst bring out of the land of Egypt have broken the Law. And Moses perceived that they had made themselves again molten images, and he cast them out of his hands, and the tables of the covenant of the Lord were broken." 4. Moses received it, but they were not worthy. But learn how we received it. Moses received it when he was a servant, but the Lord himself gave it to us, as the people of the inheritance, by suffering for our sakes. 5. And it was made manifest both that the tale of their sins should be completed in their sins, and that we through Jesus, the Lord who inherits the covenant, should receive it, for he was prepared for this purpose, that when he appeared he might redeem from darkness
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

días τῆς θανάτου καὶ παραδεδομένας τῇ τῆς πλάνης ἀνομίας λυτρωσάμενοι εκ τοῦ σκότους, διάθηται ἐν ἦμιν διαθήκην λόγῳ. 6. γέγραπται γάρ, πῶς αὐτῷ ὁ πατὴρ ἐντελεῖται, λυτρωσάμενοι ἡμᾶς εκ τοῦ σκότους ἐτοιμάσατε ἐαυτῷ λαὸν ἄγιον. 7. λέγει οὖν ὁ προφήτης: 'Ἐγὼ κύριος, ὁ θεὸς σου, ἐκάλεσά σε ἐν δικαιοσύνῃ καὶ κρατήσω τὴς χειρὸς σου καὶ ἐνισχύσω σε, καὶ ἐδώκα σε εἰς διαθήκην γένους, εἰς φῶς ἑθνῶν ἀνοίξαι ὀφθαλμοὺς τυφλῶν καὶ ἑξαγαγεῖν ἐκ δεσμῶν πεπεδημένους καὶ ἐξ οὐκου φυλακῆς καθήμενος ἐν σκότει. γινώσκομεν οὖν, πόθεν ἐλυτρώθημεν.

8. πάλιν ὁ προφήτης λέγει: 'Ιδοὺ, τέθεικα σε εἰς φῶς ἑθνῶν, τοῦ εἰναί σε εἰς σωτηρίαν ἑώς ἐσχάτου τῆς γῆς, οὕτως λέγει κύριος ὁ λυτρωσάμενος σε θεός.

9. καὶ πάλιν ὁ προφήτης λέγει: Πνεῦμα κυρίου ἐπ’ ἐμέ, οὐ εἰνεκεν ἐχρισέν με εὐαγγελίσασθαι ταπεινοῖς χάριν, ἀπέσταλκέν με ἰάσασθαι τοὺς συντετριμμένους τὴν καρδίαν, κηρύξαι αἰχμαλώτους ἄφεσιν καὶ τυφλοῖς ἀνάβλεψιν, καλέσαι ἐνιαυτὸν κυρίου δεκτὸν καὶ ἡμέραν ἀνταποδόσεως, παρακαλέσαι πάντας τοὺς πενθοῦντας.

XV

1. Ἐντι οὖν καὶ περὶ τοῦ σαββάτου γέγραπται ἐν τοῖς δέκα λόγοις, ἐν οἷς ἐξάλησεν ἐν τῷ ὄρει

σινὰ πρὸς Ἡμῶν κατὰ πρόσωπον· Καὶ ἀγιάσατε τὸ σάββατον κυρίου χερσιν καθαρίας καὶ καρδίας καθαρᾶ.

2. καὶ ἐν ἐτέρῳ λέγει: Ἐὰν

1 ταπεινοῖς χάριν G, ταπεινοῖς L, πτωχοῖς Ν (LXX) om. Q.
our hearts which were already paid over to death, and given over to the iniquity of error, and by his word might make a covenant with us. 6. For it is written that the Father enjoins on him that he should redeem us from darkness and prepare a holy people for himself. 7. The Prophet therefore says, "I the Lord thy God did call thee in righteousness, and I will hold thy hands, and I will give thee strength, and I have given thee for a covenant of the people, for a light to the Gentiles, to open the eyes of the blind, and to bring forth from their fetters those that are bound and those that sit in darkness out of the prison house." We know then whence we have been redeemed. 8. Again the Prophet says, "Lo, I have made thee a light for the Gentiles, to be for salvation unto the ends of the earth, thus saith the Lord the God who did redeem thee." 9. And again the Prophet saith, "The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he anointed me to preach the Gospel of grace to the humble, he sent me to heal the brokenhearted, to proclaim delivery to the captives, and sight to the blind, to announce a year acceptable to the Lord, and a day of recompense, to comfort all who mourn."

XV

1. Furthermore it was written concerning the Sabbath in the ten words which he spake on Mount Sinai face to face to Moses. "Sanctify also the Sabbath of the Lord with pure hands and a pure heart." 2. And in another place he says, "If my
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

Jer. 17. 24. 25, cf. Ex. 81, 13-17
Gen. 2, 2

Gen. 2, 2

Ps. 90, 4; 11 Pet. 3, 8

Ex. 20, 8

Is. 1, 18

φυλάξωσιν οἱ νῦν μου τὸ σάββατον, τότε ἐπιθῆσον τὸ ἔλεος μου ἐπ' αὐτούς. 3. τὸ σάββατον λέγει ἐν ἀρχῇ τῆς κτίσεως. Καὶ ἐποίησεν ὁ θεὸς ἐν ἔξ ἡμέραις τὰ ἔργα τῶν χειρῶν αὐτοῦ, καὶ συνετέλεσεν ἐν τῇ ἡμέρᾳ τῇ ἔβδομῇ καὶ κατάπαυσεν ἐν αὐτῇ καὶ ἤγιασεν αὐτήν. 4. προσέχετε, τέκνα, τί λέγει τὸ συνετέλεσεν ἐν ἔξ ἡμέραις. τούτῳ λέγει, ὅτι ἐν ἐξαικεισθεὶσι ἔτεσιν συνετελέσει κύριος τὰ σύμπαντα. ἡ γὰρ ἡμέρα παρ' αὐτῷ σημαίνει χίλια ἡμέρα. αὐτὸς δὲ μοι μαρτυρεῖ λέγων: Ἱδοὺ, ἡμέρα κυρίου ἔσται ως χίλια ἡμέρα. οὐκοῦν, τέκνα, ἐν ἔξ ἡμέραις, ἐν τοῖς ἐξαικεισθεῖσι ἔτεσιν συνετελεσθήσεται τὰ σύμπαντα. 5. Καὶ κατάπαυσεν τῇ ἡμέρᾳ τῇ ἔβδομῇ. τούτῳ λέγει: ὅταν ἐλθὼν ὁ νῦς αὐτοῦ καταργήσει τὸν καιρὸν τοῦ ἀνόμου καὶ κρινεῖ τοὺς ἁσβείς καὶ ἄλλαξε τὸν ἡλικια καὶ τὴν σελήνην καὶ τοὺς ἀστέρας, τότε καλῶς καταπαύσεται ἐν τῇ ἡμέρᾳ τῇ ἔβδομῇ. 6. πέρας γε τοι λέγει: Ἀγιάσεις αὐτὴν χερσὶν καθαρὰς καὶ καρδία καθαρὰ. εἰ οὖν ἂν ὁ θεὸς ἤγιασεν γνώσειν τῶν δύναται ἀγιάσαι καθαρὸς ὡς τῇ καρδίᾳ, εἰ πάσιν πεπλανήμεθα. 7. ἢδε ὅτι ἄρα τότε καλῶς καταπαύσουμεν ἄγιασομεν αὐτὴν, ὅτε δυνησόμεθα αὐτὸ δικαιωθέντες καὶ ἀπολαβόμεντες τὴν ἐπαγγελίαν, μηκέτε ὦσης τῆς ἀνομίας, καινῶν δὲ γεγονότων πάντων ὑπὸ κυρίου· τότε δυνησόμεθα αὐτὴν ἀγιάσαι, αὐτὸ δὲ ἀγιασθέντες πρῶτον. 8. πέρας γε τοι λέγει αὐτοῖς: Τὰς νεομηνίας ὑμῶν καὶ τὰ σάββατα οὐκ ἀνέχομαι. ὁρᾶτε, πῶς λέγει; οὐ τὰ νῦν σάββατα ἐμοὶ δεκτά, ἀλλὰ δὲ πεποίηκα, εἰ δὲ καταπαύσας τὰ πάντα ἀρχὴν ἡμέρας ὑγόνης.
sons keep the Sabbath, then will I bestow my mercy upon them.” 3. He speaks of the Sabbath at the beginning of the Creation, “And God made in six days the works of his hands and on the seventh day he made an end, and rested in it and sanctified it.”

4. Notice, children, what is the meaning of “He made an end in six days”? He means this: that the Lord will make an end of everything in six thousand years, for a day with him means a thousand years. And he himself is my witness when he says, “Lo, the day of the Lord shall be as a thousand years.” So then, children, in six days, that is in six thousand years, everything will be completed. 5. “And he rested on the seventh day.” This means, when his Son comes he will destroy the time of the wicked one, and will judge the godless, and will change the sun and the moon and the stars, and then he will truly rest on the seventh day. 6. Furthermore he says, “Thou shalt sanctify it with clean hands and a pure heart.” If, then, anyone has at present the power to keep holy the day which God made holy, by being pure in heart, we are altogether deceived. 7. See that we shall indeed keep it holy at that time, when we enjoy true rest, when we shall be able to do so because we have been made righteous ourselves and have received the promise, when there is no more sin, but all things have been made new by the Lord: then we shall be able to keep it holy because we ourselves have first been made holy. 8. Furthermore he says to them, “Your new moons and the sabbaths I cannot away with.” Do you see what he means? The present sabbaths are not acceptable to me, but that which I have made, in which I will give rest to all things and make the beginning of an
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

ποιήσω, δ’ ἐστιν ἀλλού κόσμου ἀρχήν. 9. διὸ καὶ ἀγομεν τὴν ἡμέραν τὴν ὀγδόην εἰς εὐφροσύνην, ἐν ᾧ καὶ ὁ Ἰησοῦς ἀνέστη ἐκ νεκρῶν καὶ φανερώθη εἰς οὐρανούς.

XVI

1. Ἐτι δὲ καὶ περὶ τοῦ ναοῦ ἔρω ὑμῖν, ὡς πλανώμενοι οἱ ταλαίπωροι εἰς τὴν οἰκοδομὴν ἠλπίσαν, καὶ οὐκ ἐπὶ τὸν θεὸν αὐτῶν τὸν ποιησαντα αὐτοὺς, ὡς ὅτα οἶκον θεοῦ. 2. σχεδὸν γὰρ ὡς τὰ ἔθνη ἀφιέρωσαν αὐτῶν ἐν τῷ ναῷ. ἀλλὰ πῶς λέγει κύριος καταργῶν αὐτῶν, μάθετε. Τίς ἐμέτρησεν τὸν οὐρανὸν σπιθαμῆ ἡ τῆς γῆς δρακά; οὐκ ἐγώ; λέγει κύριος. Ὁ οὐρανὸς μοι θρόνος, ἡ δὲ ξῆ ὑποτόδιον τῶν ποδῶν μου ποὺ οἶκον οἰκοδομήσετε μοι, ἡ τῖς τόπος τῆς καταπαύσεως μοι; ἐγνώκατε, ὅτι ματαία ἡ ἐλπὶς αὐτῶν. 3. πέρας γέ τοι πάλιν λέγει· Ἰδοὺ, οἱ καθελόντες τὸν ναὸν τοῦτον αὐτοῦ αὐτῶν οἰκοδομήσουν. 4. γίνεται. διὰ γὰρ τὸ πολεμεῖν αὐτοὺς καθηρέθη ὑπὸ τῶν ἔχθρῶν νῦν καὶ αὐτὸι οἱ τῶν ἔχθρῶν ὑπηρέται οἰκοδομήσουν αὐτῶν. 5. πάλιν ὡς ἔμελλεν ἡ πόλις καὶ ὁ ναὸς καὶ ὁ λαὸς Ἰσραήλ παραδίδοσθαι, ἔφανερώθη. λέγει γάρ ἡ γραφὴ· Καὶ ἐσται ἐπὶ ἐσχάτων τῶν ἡμερῶν, καὶ παραδώσει κύριος τα προβατα τῆς νυμῆς καὶ τῆν μάνδραν καὶ τὸν πύργον αὐτῶν εἰς καταθοράν. καὶ ἐγένετο καθ’ ἡ ἐλάλησεν κύριος. 6. ζητήσωμεν δέ, εἰ ἐστιν ναὸς θεοῦ. ἐστιν, ὅτι αὐτὸς λέγει ποιεῖν καὶ καταρτίζειν. γέγραπται γάρ· Καὶ

396
eighth day, that is the beginning of another world. 9. Wherefore we also celebrate with gladness the eighth day in which Jesus also rose from the dead, and was made manifest, and ascended into Heaven.

XVI

1. I will also speak with you concerning the Temple, and show how the wretched men erred by putting their hope on the building, and not on the God who made them, and is the true house of God. 2. For they consecrated him in the Temple almost like the heathen. But learn how the Lord speaks, in bringing it to naught, "Who has measured the heaven with a span, or the earth with his outstretched hand? Have not I? saith the Lord. Heaven is my throne, and the earth is my footstool, what house will ye build for me, or what is the place of my rest?" You know that their hope was vain. 3. Furthermore he says again, "Lo, they who destroyed this temple shall themselves build it." 4. That is happening now. For owing to the war it was destroyed by the enemy; at present even the servants of the enemy will build it up again. 5. Again, it was made manifest that the city and the temple and the people of Israel were to be delivered up. For the Scripture says, "And it shall come to pass in the last day's that the Lord shall deliver the sheep of his pasture, and the sheep-fold, and their tower to destruction." And it took place according to what the Lord said. 6. But let us inquire if a temple of God exists. Yes, it exists, where he himself said that he makes and perfects it. For it is written, "And it shall come to
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

έσται, τῆς ἐβδομάδος συντελουμένης οἰκοδομηθή-καὶ νὰς θεοῦ ἐνδόξως ἐπὶ τῷ ὅνοματι κυρίου. 7. εὐρίσκω οὖν, ὅτι ἔστιν νὰς. πῶς οὖν οἰκοδο-
μηθήκας ἐπὶ τῷ ὅνοματι κυρίου, μᾶθε. πρὸ
tοῦ ἡμᾶς πιστεύσαι τῷ θεῷ ἢν ἡμῶν τῷ κατοικη-
tήριον τῆς καρδίας φθαρτόν καὶ ἄσθενές, ὡς
ἀληθῶς οἰκοδομητὸς νὰς διὰ χειρός, ὅτι ἡ πλήρης
μὲν εἰδωλολατρείας καὶ ἢν οἶκος δαιμονίων διὰ τὸ
ποιεῖν, ὥσα ἦν ἐναντία τῷ θεῷ. 8. Οἰκοδομηθή-
καὶ δὲ ἐπὶ τῷ ὅνοματι κυρίου. προσέχετε δὲ,
ἵνα νὰς τοῦ κυρίου ἐνδόξως οἰκοδομηθῇ. πῶς,
μᾶθε. λαβόντες τὴν ἀφεσιν τῶν ἀμαρτίῶν καὶ
ἐπίσαντες ἐπὶ τὸ ὄνομα ἑγενόμεθα καινοὶ, πάλιν
ἐξ ἀρχῆς κτιζόμενοι· διὸ ἐν τῷ κατοικητηρίῳ ἡμῶν
ἀληθῶς ὁ θεὸς κατοικεῖ ἐν ἡμῖν. 9. πῶς; ὁ λόγος
αὐτοῦ τῆς πίστεως, ἡ κλήσις αὐτοῦ τῆς ἐπαγγε-
λίας, ἡ σοφία τῶν δικαιωμάτων, αἱ ἐντολαὶ τῆς
didachῆς, αὐτῶς ἐν ἡμῖν προφητεύων, αὐτῶς ἐν ἡμῖν
κατοικόν, τοὺς τῷ θανάτῳ δεδουλωμένους. ἡμῖν
τὴν θύραν τοῦ ναοῦ, ἡ ἐστὶν στόμα, μετάνοιαν
didou ἡμῖν, εἰσάγετε εἰς τὸν ἀφθαρτὸν ναὸν. 10. ὁ
γὰρ ποθῶν σωθῆναι βλέπει οὐκ εἰς τὸν ἀνθρωπὸν,
ἀλλ' εἰς τὸν ἐν αὐτῷ κατοικοῦντα καὶ λαλοῦντα, ἐπ'
αὐτῷ ἐκπλησσόμενος, ἐπὶ τῷ μηδέποτε μήτε τοῦ
λέγοντος τὰ ρήματα ἁκηκοέναι ἐκ τοῦ στόματος
μήτε αὐτὸς ποτε ἑπιτεθυμηκέναι ἀκούειν, τοῦτο
ἐστὶν πνευματικὸς νὰς ὁ ὁδοδομούμενος τῷ κυρίῳ.

1 τοὺς . . . δεδουλωμένους CGL, τοῖς δεδουλωμένοις N (probably
a correction of the unexpected accusative).

398
THE EPISTLE OF BARNABAS, xvi. 6–xvi. 10

pass when the week is ended that a temple of God shall be built gloriously in the name of the Lord." 7. I find then that a temple exists. Learn then how it will be built in the name of the Lord. Before we believed in God the habitation of our heart was corrupt and weak, like a temple really built with hands, because it was full of idolatry, and was the house of demons through doing things which were contrary to God. 8. "But it shall be built in the name of the Lord." Now give heed, in order that the temple of the Lord may be built gloriously. Learn in what way. When we received the remission of sins, and put our hope on the Name, we became new, being created again from the beginning; wherefore God truly dwells in us, in the habitation which we are. 9. How? His word of faith, the calling of his promise, the wisdom of the ordinances, the commands of the teaching, himself prophesying in us, himself dwelling in us, by opening the door of the temple (that is the mouth) to us, giving repentance to us, and thus he leads us, who have been enslaved to death into the incorruptible temple. 10. For he who desires to be saved looks not at the man, but at him who dwells and speaks in him, and is amazed at him, for he has never either heard him speak such words with his mouth, nor has he himself ever desired to hear them. This is a spiritual temple being built for the Lord.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

XVII

1. Ἐφ' δόσον ἡν ἐν δύναται καὶ ἀπλότητι δηλώσαι υμῖν, ἐλπίζει μοι ἡ ψυχὴ τῇ ἐπιθυμίᾳ μου μὴ παραλελοιπέναι1 τι τῶν ἀνηκόντων εἰς σωτηρίαν.
2. ἐὰν γὰρ περὶ τῶν ἐνεστῶτων ἢ μελλόντων γράφω υμῖν, οὐ μὴ νοήσητε διὰ τὸ ἐν παραβολαῖς κείσθαι. ταῦτα μὲν οὐτως.2

XVIII

1. Μεταβώμεν δὲ καὶ ἐπὶ ἔτερας γνώσεις καὶ διδαχῆν. Ὑδοὶ δύο εἰσίν διδαχῆς καὶ ἐξουσίας, ἡ τοῦ φωτὸς καὶ ἡ τοῦ σκότους. διαφορὰ δὲ πολλὴ τῶν δύο ὅδων. ἐφ' ἂν μὲν γὰρ εἰσὶν τεταγμένοι φωταγωγοὶ ἄγγελοι τοῦ θεοῦ, ἐφ' ἂν δὲ ἄγγελοι τοῦ σατανᾶ. 2. καὶ ὁ μὲν ἐστὶν κύριος ἀπὸ αἰώνων καὶ εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας, ὁ δὲ ἄρχων καιροῦ τοῦ νῦν τῆς ἀνομίας.

XIX

1. Ἡ οὖν ὅδος τοῦ φωτὸς ἐστὶν αὐτὴ· εάν τις θέλων ὅδον ὀδεύειν ἐπὶ τῶν ὁμοσμένων τόπων, σπεύσῃ τοῖς ἑργοῖς αὐτοῦ. ἐστιν οὖν ἡ δοθείσα ἡμῖν γνώσις τοῦ περιπατεῖν ἐν αὐτῇ τοιαύτῃ. 2. ἀγαπήσεις τὸν ποιήσαντά σε, φοβηθήσῃ τὸν σε πλά-

1 τῇ ἐπιθυμίᾳ μοι μὴ παραλελοιπέναι τι τῶν ἀνηκόντων εἰς σωτηρίαν Ν网通, μὴ παραλελοιπέναι τι Ν*共产.
2 With the addition of the doxology the Latin version comes here to an end.
THE EPISTLE OF BARNABAS, xvii. 1–xix. 2

XVII

1. So far as possibility and simplicity allow an explanation to be given to you my soul hopes that none of the things which are necessary for salvation have been omitted, according to my desire. 2. For if I write to you concerning things present or things to come, you will not understand because they are hid in parables. This then suffices.

XVIII

1. Now let us pass on to another lesson and teaching. There are two Ways of teaching and power, one of Light and one of Darkness. And there is a great difference between the two Ways. For over the one are set light-bringing angels of God, but over the other angels of Satan. 2. And the one is Lord from eternity and to eternity, and the other is the ruler of the present time of iniquity.

XIX

1. The Way of Light is this: if any man desire to journey to the appointed place, let him be zealous in his works. Therefore the knowledge given to us of this kind that we may walk in it is as follows:—

2. Thou shalt love thy maker, thou shalt fear

1 Here begins the section taken from the "Two Ways," cf. p. 309.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

σαντα, δοξάσεις τὸν σε λυτρωσάμενον ἐκ θανάτου· ἐσή ἀπλούς τῇ καρδίᾳ καὶ πλούσιος τῷ πνεύματι· οὐ κολληθήσῃ μετὰ τῶν πορευομένων ἐν ὄδῷ θανάτου, μυσῆσεις πάν, ὅ ὦκ ἔστιν ἄρεστὸν τῷ θεῷ, μυσῆσεις πᾶσαν ὑπόκρισιν· οὐ μὴ ἐγκαταλίπῃς εἰνολᾶς κυρίου. 3. ὁυχ ὕψοσεις σεαυτὸν, ἐσῇ δὲ ταπεινόφρων κατὰ πάντα· οὐκ ἄρεις ἐπὶ σεαυτὸν δόξαιν. οὐ λήμψῃ βουλὴν πονηρὰν κατὰ τὸν πλησίον σου, οὐ δώσεις τῇ ψυχῇ σου θράσος.

4. οὐ πορεύσεις, οὐ μοιχεύσεις, οὐ παιδοφθορήσεις. οὐ μὴ σου ὁ λόγος τοῦ θεοῦ ἐξέλθῃ ἐν ἀκαθαρσίᾳ τινῶν. οὐ λήμψῃ πρόσωπων ἐλέγξαι τιμὰ ἐπὶ παραπτώματι. ἐσῇ πραύς, ἐσῇ ἡσύχιος, ἐσῇ τρέμων τοὺς λόγους σου ἢκοισας. οὐ μνησικακήσεις τῷ ἀδελφῷ σου. 5. οὐ μὴ διψυχήσης, πότερον ἔσται ἡ σου. οὐ μὴ λάβῃς ἐπὶ ματαῖο τὸ ὄνομα κυρίου. ἀγαπήσεις τὸν πλησίον σου ὑπὲρ τῆς ψυχῆς σου. οὐ φονεύσεις τέκνων ἐν φθορᾷ, οὐδὲ πάλιν γευμὴν ἀποκτενεῖς. οὐ μὴ ἄρης τὴν χεῖρά σου ἀπὸ τοῦ νιῶν σου ἢ ἀπὸ τῆς θυγατρός σου, ἀλλὰ ἀπὸ νεότητος διδάξεις φόβον θεοῦ. 6. οὐ μὴ γένῃ ἐπιθυμημόν τὰ τοῦ πλησίον σου, οὐ μὴ γένῃ πλεονέκτης. οὐδὲ κολληθήσῃ ἐκ ψυχῆς σου μετὰ ψυχῆς, ἀλλὰ μετὰ ταπεινῶν καὶ δικαίων ἀναστραφῆσῃ. τὰ συμβαίνοντα σοι ἐνεργήματα ως ἀγαθά προσδέξῃ, εἰδῶς, ὅτι ἀνεῦ θεοῦ οὐδὲν γίνεται. 7. οὐκ ἔσῃ δυνάμων οὐδὲ γλωσσώδης,1

1 γλωσσώδης Ν, διγλωσσός CG; G also adds ταχὺς γὰρ θανάτου ἐστιν ἡ διγλωσσία (from Apost. Comst.) “for to be double-tongued is the snare of death.”

402
thy Creator, thou shalt glorify Him who redeemed thee from death, thou shalt be simple in heart, and rich in spirit; thou shalt not join thyself to those who walk in the way of death, thou shalt hate all that is not pleasing to God, thou shalt hate all hypocrisy; thou shalt not desert the commandments of the Lord. 3. Thou shalt not exalt thyself, but shall be humble-minded in all things; thou shalt not take glory to thyself. Thou shalt form no evil plan against thy neighbour, thou shalt not let thy soul be froward. 4. Thou shalt not commit fornication, thou shalt not commit adultery, thou shalt not commit sodomy. Thou shalt not let the word of God depart from thee among the impurity of any men. Thou shalt not respect persons in the reproving of transgression. Thou shalt be meek, thou shalt be quiet, thou shalt fear the words which thou hast heard. Thou shalt not bear malice against thy brother. 5. Thou shalt not be in two minds whether it shall be or not. "Thou shalt not take the name of the Lord in vain." Thou shalt love thy neighbour more than thy own life. Thou shalt not procure abortion, thou shalt not commit infanticide. Thou shalt not withhold thy hand from thy son or from thy daughter, but shalt teach them the fear of God from their youth up. 6. Thou shalt not covet thy neighbour’s goods, thou shalt not be avaricious. Thou shalt not be joined in soul with the haughty but shalt converse with humble and righteous men. Thou shalt receive the trials that befall thee as good, knowing that nothing happens without God. 7. Thou shalt not be double-minded or talkative. Thou
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

ὑπογαγήσῃ κυρίοις ὡς τῶν θεοῦ ἐν αἰσχύνῃ καὶ φόβῳ. οὐ μὴ ἐπιτύμβης δούλῳ σου ἡ παιδίσκη ἐν πικρίᾳ, τοῖς ἐπὶ τῶν αὐτὸν θεὸν ἐλπίζουσιν, μὴ ποτὲ οὐ μὴ φοβηθῆσουνται τὸν ἐπὶ ἄμφοτέροις θεὸν· ὃτι οὐκ ἦλθεν κατὰ πρόσωπον καλέσαι, ἀλλ' ἐφ' όυς τὸ πνεῦμα ἥτοιμασεν. 8. κοινωνίσεις ἐν πᾶσιν τῷ πλησίον σου καὶ οὐκ ἔρεις ἵδια εἰναί· ἐι γὰρ ἐν τῷ ἀφθάρτῳ κοινωνοὶ ἐστε, πόσοι μᾶλλον ἐν τοῖς φθαρτοῖς; οὐκ ἔσῃ πρόγλωσσος· παγίς γὰρ τὸ στόμα θανάτου. ὃς οὖν δύνασαι, ὑπὲρ τῆς ψυχῆς σου ἀγνεύσεις. 9. μὴ γίνου πρὸς μὲν τὸ λαβεῖν ἐκτείνων τὰς χεῖρας, πρὸς δὲ τὸ δούναι

Deut. 82, 10; Ps. 17, 8, Prov. 7, 2

10. μην ἁρπάζῃ ἡμέραν κρίσεως νυκτὸς καὶ ἡμέρας, καὶ ἀκριβεῖς καθ' ἐκάστην ἡμέραν τὰ πρόσωπα τῶν ἁγίων, ἢ διὰ λόγου κοπιῶν καὶ πορευόμενος εἰς τὸ παρακάλεσαι καὶ μελετῶν εἰς τὸ σῶσαι ψυχὴν τῷ λόγῳ, ἢ διὰ τῶν χειρῶν σου ἐργάσῃ εἰς λύτρωσιν ἀμαρτίων σου. 11. οὐ διστάσεις δοῦναι οὐδὲ ἀδικοὺς γογγυσθεῖς· γνώσῃ δὲ, τίς ὁ τοῦ μισθοῦ καλῶς ἀνταποδότης. φυλάξῃς καὶ παρέλαβες, μὴ τρεπέσθεις μὴτε ἀφαιρῶν. εἰς τέλος

Deut. 12, 32


Deut. 1, 16; Prov. 81, 9

404
shalt obey thy masters as a type of God in modesty and fear; thou shalt not command in bitterness thy slave or handmaid who hope on the same God, lest they cease to fear the God who is over you both; for he came not to call men with respect of persons, but those whom the Spirit prepared. 8. Thou shalt share all things with thy neighbour and shall not say that they are thy own property; for if you are sharers in that which is incorruptible, how much more in that which is corruptible? Thou shalt not be forward to speak, for the mouth is a snare of death. So far as thou canst, thou shalt keep thy soul pure. 9. Be not one who stretches out the hands to take, and shuts them when it comes to giving. Thou shalt love "as the apple of thine eye" all who speak to thee the word of the Lord. 10. Thou shalt remember the day of judgment day and night, and thou shalt seek each day the society of the saints, either labouring by speech, and going out to exhort, and striving to save souls by the word, or working with thine hands for the ransom of thy sins. 11. Thou shalt not hesitate to give, and when thou givest thou shalt not grumble, but thou shalt know who is the good paymaster of the reward. "Thou shalt keep the precepts" which thou hast received, "adding nothing and taking nothing away." Thou shalt utterly hate evil. "Thou shalt give righteous judgment." 12. Thou shalt not cause quarrels, but shalt bring together and reconcile those that strive. Thou shalt confess thy sins. Thou shalt not betake thyself to prayer with an evil conscience. This is the Way of Light.
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

XX

1. ‘H de tou melanos odois estin skolida kai katara mesa. Odois gar estin thana tov aiwiniou metà tìmoria, en h estin ta apolluntà tìn yuchin auton eido plolatricia, thrasutìs, ypsos dunamewos, upokrisis, diplokardia, moicheia, phonos, arpaghi, uperphania, para basis, dolos, kakia, avthadeia, farrakeia, magia, pleonekia, afobia theou. 2. diwka tòw agathòn, miosoìntes alhtheian, agapontes yeidhos, ou gynoskontes mésdon dikaiosunh, ou kollwmenoi agathoi, ou krisei dikaià, chrà kaal orfanfo ou prosèkontes, agnvntoìntes ouk eis phóbos theou,allo enti tò pneumon, oun makran kai próro proáthi kai upomoni, agapontes màtaia, diwkontes antiapódoma, ouk eléwontes ptochon, ou ponoùntes enti kataponoymenòv, evchereis en katakalía, ou gynoskontes tôn poihsanta auton, founéis têknon, thoreis plasmatois theou, apostrophoìmenoi tôn envedemuron, kataponoùntes tôn thei bo- menon, pluviosis parakleton, pevítton anomoi krithai, panta mártetai.

XXI

1. Kalon ouvous estin mabhunta ta dikaiomata tou kuriou, osa gégraptaie, en toutous periptateiv. ou gar taúta poiówn en tì basileia tou theou doxasthsetai: où ekéina eklegomevos metà tôn érgow autou suneapoleita. did tou tous anástasias,
THE EPISTLE OF BARNABAS, xx. 1–xxi. 1

XX

1. But the Way of the Black One is crooked and full of cursing, for it is the way of death eternal with punishment, and in it are the things that destroy their soul: idolatry, frowardness, arrogance of power, hypocrisy, double-heartedness, adultery, murder, robbery, pride, transgression, fraud, malice, self-sufficiency, enchantments, magic, covetousness, the lack of the fear of God; 2. persecutors of the good, haters of the truth, lovers of lies, knowing not the reward of righteousness, who "cleave not to the good," nor to righteous judgment, who attend not to the cause of the widow and orphan, spending wakeful nights not in the fear of God, but in the pursuit of vice, from whom meekness and patience are far and distant, "loving vanity, seeking rewards," without pity for the poor, working not for him who is oppressed with toil, prone to evil speaking, without knowledge of their Maker, murderers of children, corrupters of God's creation, turning away the needy, oppressing the afflicted, advocates of the rich, unjust judges of the poor, altogether sinful.

XXI

1. It is good therefore that he who has learned the ordinances of the Lord as many as have been written should walk in them. For he who does these things shall be glorified in the kingdom of God, and he who chooses the others shall perish with his works. For this reason there is a resurrec-
THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS

διὰ τοῦτο ἀνταπόδομα. 2. ἐρωτῶ τοὺς ὑπέρεχοντας, εἰ τινὰ μονὴν γνώμην ἄγαθής λαμβάνετε συμβουλίαν ἔχετε μεθ' ἑαυτῶν εἰς οὓς ἐργάσησθε τὸ καλὸν· μὴ ἐλλείπητε. 3. ἐγγύς ἡ ἡμέρα ἐν ᾗ συναπολεῖται πάντα τῷ πονηρῷ· ἐγγὺς ὁ κύριος καὶ ὁ μισθὸς αὐτοῦ. 4. ἔτι καὶ ἔτι ἐρωτῶ ὑμᾶς· ἑαυτῶν γίνεσθε νομοθέται ἅγαθοί, ἑαυτῶν μένετε σύμβουλοι πιστοί, ἀρατε ἔξ ὑμῶν πᾶσαν ὑπόκρισιν. 5. ὁ δὲ θεὸς, ὁ τοῦ παντὸς κόσμου κυριεύων, δόῃ ὑμῖν σοφίαν, σύνεσιν, ἐπιστήμην, γνῶσιν τῶν δικαιώματων αὐτοῦ, ὑπομονήν. 6. γίνεσθε δὲ θεοδίδακτοι, ἐκχητοῦντες τῇ ζητεῖ κύριος ἄφ' ὑμῶν, καὶ ποιεῖτε ἑνα ἐυρεθήτε ἐν ἡμέρᾳ κρίσεως. 7. εἰ δὲ τίς ἐστιν ἅγαθον μνεία; μνημονεύετε μονὴ μελετῶντες ταῦτα, ἵνα καὶ ἡ ἐπιθυμία καὶ ἡ ἁγρυπνία εἰς τι ἅγαθον χορῆσῃ. ἐρωτῶ ὑμᾶς, χάριν αἰτούμενος. 8. ἔως ἐτι τὸ καλὸν σκεύος ἐστιν μεθ' ὑμῶν, μὴ ἐλλείπητε μηδενὶ ἑαυτῶν, ἀλλὰ συνεχῶς ἐκχητεῖτε ταῦτα καὶ ἀναπληροῦτε πᾶσαν ἐντολὴν· ἐστιν γὰρ ἄξια. 9. διὸ μᾶλλον ἐσπούδασα γράψαι ἄφ' ὧν ἡδυνήθην, εἰς τὸ εὐφρανται ὑμᾶς. σώζεσθε, ἁγάπης τέχνῃ καὶ εἰρήνῃς. ὁ κύριος τῆς δόξης καὶ πάσης χάριτος μετὰ τοῦ πνεύματος ὑμῶν.

Ἐπιστολὴ Βαρνάβα.

1 αὐτῶν GL, ἑαυτῶν ΝC.
tion, for this reason there is a recompense. 2. I beseech those who are in high positions, if you will receive any counsel of my goodwill, have among yourselves those to whom you may do good; fail not. 3. The day is at hand when all things shall perish with the Evil one; “The Lord and his reward is at hand.” 4. I beseech you again and again be good lawgivers to each other, remain faithful counsellors of each other, remove from yourselves all hypocrisy. 5. Now may God, who is the Lord over all the world, give you wisdom, understanding, prudence, knowledge of his ordinances, patience. 6. And be taught of God, seeking out what the Lord requires from you, and see that ye be found faithful in the day of Judgment. 7. If there is any memory of good, meditate on these things and remember me, that my desire and my watchfulness may find some good end. I beseech you asking it of your favour. 8. While the fair vessel is with you fail not in any of them, but seek these things diligently, and fulfil every commandment; for these things are worthy. 9. Wherefore I was the more zealous to write to you of my ability, to give you gladness. May you gain salvation, children of love and peace. The Lord of glory and of all grace be with your spirit.

The Epistle of Barnabas.

1 i.e. while you are in the body.